

To Topple the Patriarch

Darmon

Chapter 1

What does it mean to be unwanted or unneeded by the people you thought were your family?

I am hoping that you who read this account later, could make up you own mind.

My name is Darmon Masters, I was born into a wealthy family and was the youngest child of my father, Edward Masters and my mother, Evelyn Masters. I had three other older siblings all female. My eldest sister, Marcy Masters, my middle sister, Emily Masters and my other sister, Natasha Masters.

From my earliest memories, my father has point blankly avoid me. I got no love or affection from him what-so-ever. My father was stocky man, 5ft 11, and had receding hairline at age 45, brown in color with piercing blue eyes. He was born with a silver spoon, he didn't need to work since my paternal grandfather has invested well and set up his family for life. My grandfather, may his soul rest in peace, would roll in his grave if he knew what I know now and that is the basis of this story that I document. My father, wasn't fit by any means, but having wealth and power meant he ruled his roost with an iron first.

My mother was a knockout even at 43 years old. She had light blonde hair and figure that would even put some super models to shame. My mother was 5ft 6 and I later found out she was 36-24-36, with C cup breasts. The perfect hourglass figure. At least my mother gave me attention and affection until that stopped for some reason. This also will be covered later.

My eldest sister, Marcy, was almost a carbon copy of our mother, only younger, she was 22 years old, 5ft 7 and had slightly larger breasts than our mom. I would say she was probably a D cup. If you put our mother and sister side by side then I would have to say that my sister was a little slimmer.

My sister Emily, was a little bit more plump and slightly shorter than our mother at 5ft 4 and he breasts were smaller, probably a B cup. She was 21 years old and pretty even if she didn't think she was. At least I felt that way about her.

My sister Natasha, was the runt of the group at only 5ft 2 and was 20 years old. She along with her size had the smallest frame of the females and her measurements, which I also found this out much later, were 32-22-34 with A cup breasts.

As for me, I had a little bit of a growth spurt when I hit 16 years old, and was even taller than my father at 6ft 1. At the time of this tale, I had just turned 18 years old and just on the verge of turning 19. The next part of this tale will be told as if viewed by a third party, as I can easier relate what I learned within this document.

Darmon used to have a great relationship with his mom and sisters. His dad would ignore him, but he didn't mind that so much as long as he could have fun with his mother and sisters. Each of the sisters doted on their little brother and he was invited to so many tea-parties in one or more of his sister's bedrooms. Darmon loved this time in his life and thought it would last forever. While the family were wealthy, each of them still had school to attend to and skills to learn, even if they never needed to work.

Many a time, Darmon's eldest sister would defend him at school, and shower her little brother was so much love it would make him embarrassed. Things changed when Marcy turned 18. Suddenly, for some odd reason, she didn't want to play or acknowledge she had a little brother and it was also at this time that Darmon's mother started to avoid him. Darmon was 15 years old at the time and wasn't sure what he did to either Marcy or his mother, and all attempt to get answers where meet with being told to get lost by Marcy and his mother would just look at him and shake her head. After attempting to get answers a few time without success, Darmon just gave up. He still had fun with Emily and Natasha.

That is until Emily also turned 18, and then suddenly she also avoided her brother and any attempt to understand were meet with Emily just walking away from her brother. This really confused Darmon and just put it down to Emily like Marcy had become young women and didn't think playing or doting on their brother was what young women should do.

Darmon wasn't even surprised when Natasha also turned 18, she too stopped wanting to be with her brother. Darmon was at a loss for why everyone was doing this, neither his mother or sisters will tell him. His father didn't even acknowledge he existed. So he was left to find his own things to do.

Darmon waited until his was a senior in high school, and just had his 18th birthday. He thought now that he was also classified as an adult, he could start to bond with his mother and sisters again. Sadly, this wasn't the case and when his sisters would pass him in the corridors of their home, they would look at him angrily. Darmon had no idea what the heck he did to make them all do this.

Darmon put this all behind him and would go out with friends from school, where he meet a beautiful girl and she agreed to date him. Darmon was so happy with finding a girlfriend that he had invited her to his home many times to meet his family. He hoped that they could see he was mature enough now and would want to bond with him again. He had been dating this girl for about a month, and had arranged a date in a couple of days time, when his father asked to see him. To Darmon this was a pretty rare thing and he thought that since he was 18 now, then his father might want to bond, as adults instead of a father and underage child.

Darmon knocked on his father's study door and awaiting for his father to invite him in. "Enter," his father said loudly.

"Dad, you wanted to see me?" Darmon asked as he entered and stood before his father's desk.

"Yes, Darmon. I'm going to send you on an errand. I have some important documents that need to be delivered by hand and I going to send you to deliver them," Edward told Darmon.

"Of course, dad. When and where?" Darmon asked.

"I have arranged tickets for a flight to take you to Florida, and you are to wait there a few days to get the reply back from the documents I send with you. I will need you to leave immediately, your mother has already packed a small suitcase for your travels," Edward said.

"Oh, uhmm. I have a date with Claire the day after next, will I be back before then?" Darmon asked.

"Probably not. I will have your mother or one of your sisters contact her to let her know. I think you will be gone for about 5 days. You may leave now, your mother is waiting and car is out front," Edward replied.

Darmon was dismissed and as he left the study his mother was waiting for him outside with a suitcase in hand. Darmon looked his mother and she had a pained sad look and he just put it down to him going away from a few days.

Darmon delivered the documents and waited in the hotel for 5 days before returning back with another set of documents to hand to his father. When Darmon returned he tried to call Claire to let her know he was back and when can they reschedule their date. Claire didn't accept his call, but did send a text message back tell Darmon that she was breaking up with him and when he asked why via

text, she replied back that she didn't think it would work out between them. Darmon honestly thought she was pissed at him for missing their original date and after he tried to apologize, she didn't respond back and in fact blocked his number.

Darmon just put it down to bad luck on his part, and soon found another girlfriend. He had been dating this one for a couple of months and his dad sent him to spring camp to build his team building and leadership skills. Darmon told his girlfriend what was going on and she was happy with this and would miss him. During the spring camp, Darmon and his girlfriend would call and text each other for the first 3 days then afterwards for some reason he never got any replies to his text or calls. When Darmon got back home, he got another text message saying she didn't believe there was any chance their relationship would work out. Darmon really didn't understand what happened and Darmon's, now, ex-girlfriend also blocked his number.

This happened 2 other times with different girlfriends, and would always be after he got back from some errand or leadership skills course that his father sent him on. Darmon seriously didn't understand women and every time this happened his mother would look at him with pity. Darmon brushed this off yet again and soon found another very beautiful girlfriend and once again his father would send him to summer camp this time.

Darmon was getting suspicious and decided to return from camp early.

Darmon quietly let himself into their home and heard sounds of moaning and slapping sound, he went to investigate. Darmon found the sounds coming from his parents bedroom. The door was ajar and what he saw made him want to vomit. His father was balls deep in his current girlfriend, whilst she was licking his mother's pussy. His sister's were in a daisy-chain licking each others pussies. His father's back was to him, but his mother did see her son had returned home early, and had found out their secret.

Darmon was sick with what he was seeing and backed away quickly and ran out of the house.

Darmon didn't know what to do and how the fuck was he going to face his family now that he knew their dark secret. It also probably accounted for why each of his sisters started to avoid him after they turned 18, and why his mother would always avoid him. Darmon thought this must be why each of his girlfriends had dumped him, since they couldn't face him after fucking his father.

It had been a few hours, with Darmon sitting in the park alone when his phone rang. The caller id was his mother. Darmon didn't take the call and let it go to voice mail. He did this a few times with his mother just calling again and again. In the end Darmon picked up the call.

"Honey, please don't hang up," Evelyn quickly said to her son.

"What do you want?" Darmon answered with clear sadness in his voice.

"Where are you honey? I'll come to you so we can talk," Evelyn asked.

"Mom, I don't think you would like to talk to me right now. I'm not in the mood for any more shit today," Darmon responded to his mother.

"I know, honey, but we have to talk. It's really important," Evelyn said, who could clearly hear the anger and sadness in her son's voice, there was a long pause before his mother asked again, "Honey, please."

Darmon hung up the call with his mother after he answered with a single word, "Park."

Darmon's tears dropped from his eyes and he sobbed and wept.

Evelyn found her son on one of the park benches, with his head in his hands sobbing. Evelyn was overcome with maternal instincts and went to comfort her son. Darmon saw someone approach and when he looked up he saw his mother about to embrace him. He shot up from the bench and put some distance between him and his mother, "Don't touch me."

Evelyn sighed and sat down on the bench, "I'm sorry you had to see that, honey."

Darmon remained silent and his mother continued, "It's not what it looks like, honey."

Darmon was fuming, "REALLY, BECAUSE IT CERTAINLY LOOKS LIKE MY FAMILY WERE FUCKING EACH OTHER AND DAD WAS FUCKING MY GIRLFRIEND. TELL ME HOW THAT ISN'T WHAT IT LOOKS LIKE?"

Evelyn was miffed and knew this was going to happen sooner rather than later, and things were going to get complicated, especially for her son. She tried so hard to get her husband to change, but he wouldn't listen. She sighed again, "Honey, I know your angry, but please there is no need to raise your voice."

"I see now why dad's always avoided me, maybe he even hates me. I wasn't born a woman, so he could fuck me too," Darmon stated with venom in his voice. Darmon was about to walk off but his mother made a plea, "Honey, will you at least let me explain? Will you sit besides me as I do?"

Darmon heard the hurt in his mother's plea and decided he would sit down on the bench, but kept a wide distance between them.

Evelyn took a deep breath and looking straight ahead and not directly at her son, then started, "You're the reason why your father is doing what he is doing."

"What?"

"Yes its true. You know I love you and your sisters love you. You father used you against me to get me to do things that I didn't want to do. He would say that he would disown you and make it so that your very existence would be difficult if not impossible. You know he has the wealth to do it also," Evelyn continued her tale.

"He had already been using me for whatever sexual fantasy he could come up with, and when Marcy turned 18 he got me to try and convince her to allow him to claim her also. She refused, and wouldn't let your father touch her. Your father told her that he would punish you and disown you, even making sure you never found happiness ever again. Your sister loves you and would do anything for you. In the end he blackmailed her into having his way with her. She hates that her father took her virginity and more so because she had to do it for you. That is why she resents you and would avoid you and I'm sorry to say that I saw how much pain she was in also, so I stopped showing my affection towards you also."

Evelyn paused to let everything she had said to her son sink in before continuing, "Your father saw he could get one of his daughter then why not the others, so did the exact same thing to Emily when she turned 18. He did that to Natasha also when she turned 18. This was also when each of your sisters started to resent you and wouldn't even acknowledge you. Your father would get us all to do things that we really didn't want to."

"You're right, your father does hate you. You weren't supposed to be born. He wanted to stop having anymore children after Natasha was born and a failed birth control pill caused you to be conceived. Your father promptly had a vasectomy after that, so can't get your sisters or me pregnant now. You're also right, had you be born a girl then maybe none of

this would have happened. I wouldn't have to do things and neither of the girls would have had to suffer as they do. This is another reason why your sisters resent you. Trust me, they do love you, as do I, it's just that because of you they have to put up with their father."

"As for your girlfriends, your father would wait until they became attached to you and because of his hatred of you, would either seduce them with lots of money or get one of us to seduce them before catching us in bed together, so he could blackmail them. Your current girlfriend, probably ex-girlfriend now, he got me to seduce her, which was why she was eating me out. It's also the reason why each of them broke up with you afterwards due to the guilt of betraying you."

"But why does he hate me so much, mom?" Darmon asked.

Evelyn sighed, "Even if he didn't use you to blackmail us, I suspect he would have found a way to take his daughters anyway. I think he knew that if he had any chance of getting them then he didn't need the competition. He see's you as a threat to his dominance over us. You're younger, taller, stronger and more handsome than he is. Whatever you have he wants to take it away from you"

"Trust me, your sisters and I do love you. Your father just uses us to get his pleasure and never about our pleasure or acceptance. He is rough with each of us and had made us do such disgusting things, like making us have golden showers and even making us lick his cock after it's been in our bowels covered in excrement", Evelyn stated as she shuddered.

"It's a good thing that it was me alone that spotted you and I doubt the other's have seen you", Evelyn commented.

"How is that a good thing, mom? I saw something that I shouldn't ever have to witness and my own girlfriend getting fucked by dad", Darmon asked, really wanting to know how this was a good thing.

"That is not what I mean, honey. I know seeing that isn't a good thing, but knowing he didn't see you, so that you would be spared any punishment or even any punishment against your sisters and I", Evelyn pointed out.

"What happens now, mom? I've seen what's happening and how should I act knowing all this?" Darmon questioned his mother.

Evelyn looked towards her son this time with genuine pain in her expression, "It's not going to be easy, honey. You can't come back home since you are still supposed to be away at camp. When I leave, you need to go to a motel or hotel and come back when you're supposed to."

"Honey, can I ask you a personal question?" Evelyn asked and probably already knew the answer but needed to make sure. Darmon looked at his mother and nodded.

"Are you a virgin?" Evelyn point blankly asked, this stunned her son and shock was clearly showing on his face, "Honey, it's important that I know."

Darmon was silent for many minutes and then very quietly answered, "Yes."

Evelyn sighed again, "I thought so. I am sorry to say that each of your girlfriends were virgins also before your father defiled them."

Darmon shot up off the bench with his fists clenched, 'Why should that bastard have them all?,' he thought and was almost ready to leave and confront his father. Evelyn saw this and quickly got up and embraced her son, "Honey, I am sorry that I had to tell you this. Please sit down there is more to tell."

Evelyn held onto her son's hand and they both sat down again on the bench. Darmon's world was crumbling before his eyes.

"Your father is an evil man and the wealth that your grandfather made is what makes him arrogant, and makes him believe he can have whatever he wants. Your father has made plans to take his own mother and his sisters also. He wants either me or your sisters to seduce them like he does your girlfriends so he can claim them," Evelyn continued.

"Your sisters and I, don't want to be with him anymore, and don't want others to be subjected to his schemes. Your father has no love in his heart for anything other than his greed and making sure of his dominance over the females in the the family and other's he can take from you. We just can't stop this because of you, honey."

"Mom, I don't want you or my sisters like this, I don't care if I am penniless and living in dark alleys. I don't want to see you or anyone else that I care about debase themselves," Darmon wept.

Evelyn pulled her son into her embrace and kissed him on the forehead, "I knew you would say that and I even told your sisters that this would be your response. Your sisters and I don't want to see you like that, honey."

Darmon continued to sob against his mother's breast. "This summer you will turn 19 and I have a plan that could derail your father. After your birthday, I want you to publicly ask as a gift if you can spend your summer with your grandmother and aunts."

"Why?" Darmon asked.

"Firstly, if you are there then he can't move on his plan to get us to seduce his mother and sisters. Secondly, I want you to claim them as your own," Evelyn asked.

"WHAT???" Darmon asked loudly.

Evelyn sighed, "Yes, honey, I want you to seduce them and make them yours. If they are attached to you then your father cannot get them. Your grandmother actually hold the purse strings to the wealth that your father is flaunting. You get your grandmother, then he can't use that against your sisters or me, so we can then be free and actually be with the one we truly want to be with."

Darmon was afraid to ask who his mother wanted to be with and suspected that she wanted to find another man, who would love her, not like his father. As for his sisters, Darmon thought they wanted to find proper boyfriends, that they can form a relationship with.

"I don't expect this task will be easy, honey. Once, you have managed to seduce your grandmother, tell her everything and don't lie to her. I suspect that she will then help you seduce your aunts," Evelyn said with a chuckle, "I know I am asking a lot of you, honey. I just want to be free of your father as do your sisters."

"I don't want to alarm you, but while you are at your grandmothers, your father will continue to subject us to his dominance, and we will hate every minute of it. Your sisters and I want to make sure you are secure before we break things with him."

"Mom, how the fuck am I supposed to seduce my grandmother? This plan is crazy," Darmon was seriously confused how his mother even came up with this plan.

"Do as you did or would do to get yourself a girlfriend. Spend time with your grandmother, hug her, kiss her on the cheek before getting more intimate, a slow seduction is the only thing that will work here. When you lose your virginity to your grandmother, cry if you must and let her know why. She loves you already and you're already

half-way there, honey."

Darmon was so confused and said quietly, "I don't know if I can, mom."

Evelyn made her son look at her face and gently placed a kiss on his lips before looking deep into his eyes, "Honey, you have to if you want any chance at saving me and your sisters."

Evelyn got up from the park bench and looked at her son, "Honey, I have to get back. Your father is probably wondering where I have run off to. Remember, try to act normal when you get back home and let's put this plan into action. Your sisters and I need to be with the one that would love us and understand our needs, instead of being with a selfish prick."

Darmon sat at the park bench for a few more hours, pondering what the fuck just happened. He got up and found a motel to rest up in for the next few days.

Darmon returned his home and acted as normal as he could. He got a text from his girlfriend breaking up with him, which resulted in him sulking and staying in his room for most of the time.

When they did have a family dinner, without Darmon's father present which was the norm ever since he could remember, he got pity looks from his sister's who knew that he had been dumped again due to their father.

Darmon didn't bother finding another girlfriend and this somehow annoyed his father who was looking forward to taking her from him.

A month later it was Darmon's 19th birthday and on this rare occasion his mother had made his father attend, she basically forced him to attend by telling him that if he didn't attend then she and her daughters will not be available to him.

Darmon celebrated his birthday and even his sisters and mother showered him with affection and would hug and kiss him, which made his father angry.

Evelyn, smiling asked, "So honey, what birthday gift can we give you that would make you happy?"

Darmon knew this was the trigger for the plan to move into action. Darmon pondered for awhile the replied, "You know, every time I get a girlfriend they break up with me. I don't feel like spending summer trying to find another one, for the same thing to happen again. So, maybe, I could spend this summer at grandmother's place and have a relaxing time with her and my aunt's. It's been awhile since we've done that."

Evelyn smiled as this was exactly what she wanted, "Oh that is wonderful. I bet your grandmother and aunts would be thrilled for you to see them and spend quality time together, before thinking about collage."

Edward was pissed and was about to put his foot down when he reconsidered as it meant that with his son not here he would be able to fuck his wife and daughters whenever he wanted and accepted it, "Yes, that is fine."

Darmon left two days later to spend the summer with his grandmother and aunts.

Chapter 2

Darmon had informed his grandmother that he was coming and drove the 4 hour journey to the villa that was owned by his grandparents. It was just his grandmother now alongside his two aunts that reside in this property. His grandfather has passed away when Darmon was 14 years old due to prostate cancer that wasn't caught quick enough.

The news had devastated his grandmother and aunts. In fact, the news had also affected Darmon, as he had a wonderful relationship with his grandfather. Darmon did wonder if his own father also felt the affects of losing his father, but due to his own father being distant from him, he was never able to determine that.

Darmon drove the car up to the gates and pressed the intercom button to the side of the large gates, there was a clicking sound and a ring tone. "Yes, can I help you?" answered a female voice that Darmon instantly recognized as his grandmother.

"Grandma, it's me Darmon."

"Oh, baby!" Darmon's grandmother answered and he heard a buzzing sound as the gates opened.

Darmon drove his car in and parked alongside the double garage. He got out of the car and got his suitcase out of the back.

Darmon was walking towards the front door when it opened and out stepped this grandmother, June. She was 63 years old and still stunningly beautiful. Yes, there were wrinkles around her eyes that showed the stress of age and of her losing her best friend and partner.

Darmon dropped the suitcase and rushed over to his grandmother, lifting her up into the air with her feet off the ground, crushing her against his chest. June giggled and laughed as her grandson effortlessly picked her up as he kissed her cheek.

"Gods, I missed you, grandma," Darmon said as he smiled at his grandmother. "Thanks for letting me stay for the summer."

"Nonsense, sweetie. It is I who should be thanking you for visiting an old lady like me," June responded.

"Really, old lady. Where? I don't see any old lady, grandma. I'm going to love staying here. Where are my aunts Mary and Amber?" Darmon asked.

"Oh, sweetie. They're inside. I didn't tell them you were coming. So this is going to be a big surprise for them." June giggled.

Darmon put his grandmother down and kissed her on the cheek again before retrieving his suitcase. He followed his grandmother into her villa.

Darmon looked over at his grandmother. "It's a glorious day and your aunts are probably around the pool. Go to your bedroom and change into swimwear then come out to the pool", June said.

Darmon went to his dedicated bedroom, this was his bedroom from when he would visit more often, when his grandfather was still alive. He didn't bother to unpack yet, but just put his suitcase on his bed, opened it and got out his swimming trunks. Darmon stripped and changed, ready for the pool.

Before Darmon exited via the side entrance facing the pool, he spotted his aunts on floats relaxing on the pool. Mary is 40 years old, brunette with a slightly rounded body, not fat or overweight, just a little big more plump is all. Amber is 38 years old, dirty blonde hair with a slim body. Both of his aunts weren't married and Darmon couldn't figure out why. He would have married either of them in a heartbeat and wouldn't kick his grandmother out of bed either.

These thoughts had an effect on Darmon, especially, after his mother's revelations and task she wanted him to complete. The task assigned to him was getting all the more real, now that it was always playing on his mind. He knew he had to do this if he had any chance to save his mother and sisters.

June watched her grandson, quietly open the side door and creep forward and at the last minute rushed to perform a cannonball into the pool. The big splash threw water up and drenched his aunts, who shrieked. June burst into laughter. When Darmon resurfaced, his aunts spotted him, dropped off the floats and both went to attack their nephew.

Darmon was tickled and dunked, there was a lot of laughter before hugs and kisses on the cheeks.

"Darmon, your here. Mom, didn't tell us you were coming," Mary said as she held onto her nephew.

"Yeah, I think grandma wanted to surprise you both." Darmon chuckled.

"Well, it's certainly a surprise and a welcome one, honey," Amber said as she grabbed onto her nephew's other side.

Still laughing, aunts and nephew exited the water to sit on the sun loungers. Both of his aunts wore skimpy bikini's and Darmon could feel his cock start to harden. Darmon looked over at his grandmother and saw she also was wearing a bikini and he admired her body.

Mary lent close to her nephew and whispered, "Wow, mom's wearing a bikini instead of the usual one piece she usually wears. She's probably showing off or teasing you, honey."

Darmon was stunned, wasn't he supposed to seduce his grandmother at the request of his mom? Instead, what was his grandmother doing, he had to ask himself. Darmon didn't know it at the time, but his grandmother was starving for the attentions of a man. She reasoned a little teasing wasn't going to hurt.

Darmon watched as his aunts dried off with towels, as he did the same. His grandmother and aunts then picked up a bottle of suntan lotion to apply to their skins. They managed to do their front, sides, legs, arms and feet but were unable to do their backs themselves.

"Mary, darling. Would you be a dear and help your old mother to apply lotion to her back please?" June asked her daughter.

Mary giggled and lent close to her sister to whisper something to her before looking up with a quirky smile, "Mom, can you ask Darmon to help? Amber has asked me to help her with that task. Honey, you're okay to do that right?"

Darmon jumped for the chance inwardly, but had to play this cool. "Uhhh... Sure, if grandma is okay with that."

"Yes, I would love that sweetie," June answered.

Darmon got up and moved to his grandmother's lounge. June got on her stomach with her arms raised above her head as her grandson approached.

Darmon was nervous as he got alongside his grandmother and applied the lotion to his hands before starting in the middle of her back working outwards. Darmon looked over at his aunts and watched Mary straddle Amber's ass and squirted a dollop of lotion on her back that almost made it look like cum blasts on her back. Both Mary and Amber giggled.

Darmon's attention was drawn back to his grandmother when she asked, "Sweetie, don't forget about me."

Darmon's cock was rising as he tried to concentrate on his grandmother.

"Sweetie, you might find it easier if you straddle my butt like Mary is doing to Amber," June said looking over at her daughters and then to her grandson. Darmon groaned, but did as asked.

Darmon was seriously confused, who was seducing who now. Darmon had already learned of his families secret and was now wondering how far this rabbit hole went.

Darmon applied more lotion to his grandmother and started to apply to her neck and shoulders which made his grandmother moan and his cock to harden even more. He looked over at his aunts and watched as Mary ran her hand over the side of her sister's boobs and lean down to whisper into her sisters ears. Amber turned her head to look at her nephew and wink at him. Mary still close to her sisters head kissed her neck and then cheek very close to her lips.

Darmon lost the battle with his cock and it hardened to full rock hard strength. He moaned and shot up, running to his bedroom. He heard his aunt's laugh loudly and his grandmother scolding them.

Darmon remained in his bedroom until it was time for dinner and when he entered the dinning room, his aunts had smiled on their faces and giggled. His grandmother looked at them sternly as they sat to eat.

Darmon remained quiet and didn't look at his grandmother and aunts unless he needed to, instead his focus was on his food.

A few looks past between mother and daughters throughout dinner unbeknownst to Darmon who didn't look up. June was scared that her grandson would leave, with Mary and Amber scared that their teasing had gone to far.

After dinner Darmon excused himself.

"Sweetie, where are you doing? I thought we could spend sometime together, maybe watch a movie, or something," June asked.

Darmon looked at his grandmother and replied, "That's a wonderful idea, grandma, but with the long drive and I still have to unpack. I'll go unpack and get some rest."

"Okay, then sweetie. Tomorrow then?" June asked.

Darmon didn't answer and left to his bedroom.

In the living room, mother and daughter's sat talking.

"Sorry, mom. I think Mary and I went a little too far with the teasing," Amber said. June sighed and really didn't want her grandson to leave. Neither did Mary and Amber want their nephew to leave.

"Let's see what tomorrow bring, darlings," June said with a sigh.

"Mom, do you think he's a virgin?" Mary asked.

"I think so, darlings. Please don't tease him too much, okay?" June asked her daughters.

Darmon was in his room and was on auto-pilot as he unpacked and when finished he, just fell onto his bed, exhausted from the stress of what his mother asked and what he witnessed today. He slept until morning and wasn't rested at all as his sleep was fitful at best.

He decided to text his mom:

Darmon: "Mom, I can't do this. Can I come home please?"

Evelyn: "Honey, what's wrong?"

Darmon: "I can't stay here. I can't do what you asked. I just can't."

Evelyn: "Honey, Why?"

Darmon didn't reply back even when his mother sent multiple text messages and even tried to call him, which Darmon didn't answer.

Darmon missed breakfast and lunch and when called for either he would always claim he wasn't hungry even though he was.

Darmon did go eat dinner and wouldn't engage or even look at anyone and just focused on his dinner, then he would always excuse himself to return to his bedroom.

This was the same pattern for the next few days. His mother would send texts or try to call him, which Darmon would ignore.

June was seriously pissed.

Mother and daughters were once again sat in the living room.

"Mom, what the fuck is going on with Darmon," Amber asked.

June sighed, "He's between a rock and a hard place, darling."

"What do you mean?" Mary asked.

"Evelyn called me since Darmon isn't answering her text messages and not taking her calls. I think there is some sort of problem at home which Evelyn isn't tell me about. Darmon being here was to isolate him from that problem. He doesn't know how to act around us and

the teasing we did on the first day might be making him feel uncomfortable. He can't go back and he doesn't want to stay either," June told her daughters.

"FUCK!" Mary stated. "We didn't know any of this, mom!"

"I know, darling. I need to talk to my grandson," June said whilst letting out a big sigh.

Darmon was in his room, close to weeping again, when there was a knock at his door. He ignored it. There was another knock and he was about to tell them to leave him alone when the door opened and in walked his grandmother.

June walked over to her grandson and sat beside him and laid a hand on his back to rub gently, "Sweetie, your mom's worried about you and so am I. What seems to be the problem?"

Darmon didn't respond straight away and there must have been a pause of a few minutes.

"Grandma, am I an unwanted child?" Darmon asked.

June was shocked, she wasn't sure if her grandson was referring to him being here or something else. She feared the teasing on the first day was driving him away.

"What do you mean, sweetie?" June asked with some concern in her voice.

Darmon put his head back down to the bed and said muffled, "Mom, said dad didn't want me. I was an unwanted child."

"WHAT?" June exploded.

June lifted her grandson from the bed and embraced him tightly. "You are not unwanted, sweetie. Your mom adores you, your sisters adore you. I adore you as do your aunts." Darmon wept as did June.

When both had calmed down, June asked her grandson, "So sweetie, is this what is troubling you and it's not something that either I or your aunts did?"

Darmon paused again which gave June the answer she feared, the teasing did affect her grandson. June, also knew there was more to this and it was probably linked to what was going on back home.

"Sweetie, you can tell me anything. I will listen and offer advice. You know I care for and love you!" June gently prompted her grandson.

Darmon looked at his grandmother and saw she did care.

"Grandma, dad is forcing mom and my sisters to do things."

"What things, sweetie?"

"Dad is fucking them and making them fuck each other and he's fucked all my girlfriends too..."
Darmon quickly blurted out.

"WHAT THE FUCK?" June shouted.

"Mom, say's I'm the reason why dad is doing this and getting away with it," Darmon confessed.

June was about to say something else, but Darmon held up his hand.

"According to mom, dad got mom to do whatever sexual fantasy he wanted because he would blackmail her with disowning me and kicking me to the gutter. He forced mum to get Marcy when she turned 18. She refused until he used me to blackmail her also. Emily and Natasha were added the same way when they turned 18."

"Each of my sisters after dad forced them would no longer acknowledge me and mom stopped showing me any affection, when dad forced each of my sisters. When I turned 18, I thought I could reestablish my relationship with mom and my sisters but that never happened."

"It was then that I got myself a girlfriend. I introduced her to everyone. I was with her a few months, when dad sent me away on an errand. We had a date, scheduled a few days after dad sent me away. He told me he would get mom or one of my sisters to tell my date. When I got back home, my girlfriend dumped me for no reason that made sense."

"I put that behind me and got another girlfriend, as I built up our relationship, Dad would send me away again on some leadership training or some other camp. I told my girlfriend this time and she was happy to wait until I returned, we even talked and texted whilst I was away for the first 3 days then nothing at all. When I got back again, she had dumped me. This happened a couple of more times with the same result. With my last girlfriend, dad once again sent me to camp, but I returned early."

"I walked into the house and saw dad was fucking my girlfriend whilst she was licking mom's pussy and my sisters were in a circle of sorts licking each other's pussies."

"I ran away from home and went to the park. Mom had seen me and went to find and talk to me. She told me everything. Dad hates me and doesn't want me, grandma. Mom told me that each of my girlfriends dad either seduced with lots of money or got her or one of my sisters to seduce them, so he could catch them and then blackmail them. Each of my girlfriends were virgins, according to mom. Why the fuck does dad get to fuck my girlfriends, grandma?"

"Mom, said that dad doesn't treat her or my sisters well and is rough with them and only seeks his own pleasure, not theirs. Mom told me he gets them to do disgusting things like golden showers and also makes them lick his cock when it could be covered in excrement after he fucks them in the ass."

"Mom told me my sister's resent me, because they have to do what they do due to me. Mom, told me they want to be free of dad and she asked me to do something."

Darmon paused and wondered if he should tell his grandmother about his mother's crazy plan, but then also remembered his mother telling him to tell her everything and not to lie.

June waited for Darmon to continue and after several minutes of silence, "Sweetie, what did your mother ask you?"

Darmon looked down and not at his grandmother, "She asked me to seduce you and my aunts to make you mine, since Dad had a plan to add you and my aunts to his collection."

"WHAT THE FUCK?" June shouted again. Darmon wasn't sure if it was due to the crazy plan of his mothers or because his father was trying to add her and her daughters to his collection.

June was fuming, "Sweetie, do you have proof of this?"

Darmon shock his head, but did pick up his phone from the bedside table. Darmon called his mother and put the phone on speaker.

When it was answered, there was clearly sobbing from the voice on the other side, "Honey? *SOB*"

Darmon motioned for his grandmother to stay silent, "Mom, I talked with grandma. She is angry and demands proof that what I told her is true." June heard sobs from the other side and some typing sounds could be heard. Darmon's phone pinged with a message with an attachment

"Honey, if you can't do it, come home, show your grandmother that video, if you want. We can find another way." His mother's broken voice was heard over the speaker phone.

"Mom, are you sure about this plan. I'm not sure I can follow it!" Darmon told his mother.

"Honey, it doesn't matter. I love you and you mean more to me than my freedom. If you can't seduce your grandmother and aunts to ensure your father cannot claim them, I don't care if he continues to use you against us. We will find another way. Come home, honey." Evelyn could be heard sobbing as she told this to her son.

"No, mom. I will free you and my sisters, I promise. Love you mom."

The phone call ended with his mother clearly crying. Darmon looked at the attachment and gave his phone to his grandmother so that she could view the video. June took the phone from her grandson and played the videos.

The videos showed Evelyn and her daughters all on their backs with their father brutally pushing large items into his wife and daughters, whilst he took turns putting his cock into each of their asses. She heard the sounds and the pleading for their father to stop and heard how

he told them Darmon would be dead within the first weeks after he disowns him, penniless and will have people ensure he got beat up regularly until he died.

June was stunned and shocked. She knew her own family had secrets, but this was beyond what she expected. June was angry, not at Darmon, Evelyn or her daughters but at Edward. June had no problem with family love, but what Edward was doing was raping each of them.

"Sweetie, why does your mom believe that seducing me would help her and your sisters?" June asked trying to keep a calm even voice which was difficult to do.

"Mom, told me that you control what dad is using to ensure they do his bidding," Darmon responded.

"So he would use the wealth that your grandfather made against his own family!" June sighed.
"Sweetie, get some rest. I will need time to think on this and we can talk again in the morning."

Darmon watched as his grandmother pressed a few buttons on his phone, before her own phone pinged.

Darmon remained silent as he watched his grandmother walk to his bedroom door, open it and exit before closing it again.

Back in the living room, Mary and Amber saw their mother very angry.

"The talk with Darmon didn't go as expected, mom?" Mary asked.

"That's the fucking understatement of the year," June responded angrily.

"Was it because of us, mom? We're sorry! Is Darmon leaving?" Amber asked.

"No darling it wasn't because of us. It's about your brother and his family," June responded.

June spent the next few minutes relaying everything that happened in her grandson's bedroom and related the whole story to her daughters. At the end she played the video she had sent from her grandson's phone to her, for her daughters to understand the mess Edward had made.

There was silence in the room. They could see how their teasing of Darmon had him conflicted especially with what was happening to his own family.

"Mom, are you going to do it?" Mary asked.

"Do what, darling?" June answered a question with a question.

"Are you going to seduce Darmon and bed him as per his mother's request? Or will you allow him to seduce you? I mean you were going to do it anyway, right?" Mary responded to her mother's question.

"I don't know, darling. This has gotten a lot more complicated. Before, it was just for fun, the teasing that is. It would have probably lead to sex with him, before both of you got to him. If Darmon's mother is only asking to secure his position, so his father can't use him against his

family then it could be done without bedding my grandson."

"But where's the fun in that, mom? Don't you want to teach Edward a lesson?" Amber asked.

"Darling, to Darmon if he does what his mother wants, then to him he would believe he claimed us as his own to use against his father. If all we want is to have fun then we can't do it, as it would break him further. You know full well that when we would have asked Edward to fill in as the

head of the house, then Darmon wouldn't be able to have us anymore," June replied to her daughter.

"Mom, family love isn't something new for us. We love each other and I certainly love my sister. You already know the hangup my sister and I have regarding relationships," Mary said.

"If Edward was in a loving family relationship then none of us would have batted an eye, but from what we saw this isn't the case. I think we need to punish Edward," Amber continued from what Mary started.

"Darling, if I or we do this then it has to always take into consideration Darmon. He has learned his family secret and will have to learn ours also. It could break him if we are free with our love with others, his girlfriends have all been taken by his father and he may fear other's taking us

also," June sighed. "This is what makes his so difficult. I don't think it will affect you both since you wouldn't have sex with any other male anyway with the exception of your nephew and certainly not your brother, after what we just learned."

"It's more of an issue for me, my son was supposed to fill the hole in our hearts and I can't do it with what I know now. Do, I forsake my son for my grandson?"

"I say do it mom. Darmon could be the head of the family like dad was. Certainly Edward doesn't have the temperament for that position, considering how he got his family. We could mold Darmon into that position and he can be our stud and bull like dad was." Mary stated.

June had a lot to think about that night.

Darmon felt a big weight had lifted off his shoulders and even come to breakfast the next morning, happy.

June sat smiling at her grandson as did Mary and Amber smiled at their nephew.

June had been thinking hard about yesterday's event. June had never dated after the death of her husband, instead channeled her love into loving her daughters instead. Her family had enjoyed 'family love' and was hoping that Edward would've filled in the holes left in their hearts. June needed to feel the love of a man and not just any man would do. She needed to find a man that can live with the quirk surrounding her daughters and it wasn't something big and in fact most males would jump at the chance. It was more of an issue as her daughters were very picky in who they would be willing to share as part of the 'family love.'

June's original plan was to just have some fun with her grandson, since she believed Edward who was going to be the head of the family and as such would serve the family. June believed that Darmon had some experience with sex and would just see this as fun and would have accepted that they would then belong to Edward after her son took up the mantle of that role and any intimate encounters would stop. The revelation from yesterday showed her that her son wasn't fit to hold this position. Could she in effect disown her own son and make her grandson the heir to everything? June needed to talk with her grandson.

"Sweetie, can we talk in your bedroom after breakfast," June asked her grandson.

"Uhhh, sure!" Darmon answered not sure how much of what was discussed is known to his aunts if any at all.

After breakfast, June lead her grandson back to his bedroom. She closed his bedroom door and asked him to sit besides her in his bed.

"Sweetie, your mother is right. I do hold the wealth of our family until a rightful heir is appointed. Your father, Edward, believes as he is my son it is his right and flaunts it. He has used that wealth to blackmail your family into doing his bidding because he knows that your mom and sisters would do anything for you." June stated as she opened up about her understanding of this.

"I need to tell you a big secret that when told, what happened to your family, didn't surprise me as much as it should, have during your recount of events. I was more angry at how your father went about it. Your grandfather, Martin, invested wisely and made lots of money that will set his family up for life and has a team to ensure that money will never be an issue for us. He was the head of this family. Your grandfather, was in a relationship with me and your aunts. He was our man, our stud and bull. Your father wasn't aware of this as he had married your mother and we thought it best to let him live his own life with his family."

"With the death of your grandfather, I was going to approach Edward to fill in the role your grandfather left, but it seems that will never happen now, especially, after the way he got your family."

"This family doesn't have a problem with 'family love' and if your father was in a loving relationship with your mother and sisters, then nothing would have needed to be done. Having said that, what your father has been doing to you is unacceptable. We have a fast and firm rule, if one of us is in a relationship with someone from the outside then they will not be included or taken, unless invited to do so. Your father, even if he didn't know about our history, has broken that rule. He has forced what was yours against their will."

Darmon was stunned and shocked at further revelations about his family and was speechless.

"I know this is a lot to take in. The first day you were here, I and your aunts were teasing you for fun with the hopes that you would join in later and you were only to be only included as fun. Your father was going to have it all when he came onboard and you would have been asked to stand down from any further love from us. This is no longer going to happen as your

father is unfit for that role. We, myself and your aunts, feel that you should fill that role now. You would be what your grandfather was to us."

June chuckled, "It's funny really. I was going to seduce you and you were sent to seduce me. Your aunts have a certain hangup when it comes to relationship that I'm sure they would tell you in time."

"So what do you say, sweetie. Will you accept this position, so that we can free your mother and sisters and punish your father?" June asked looking at her grandson and holding his hand in hers.

Darmon was silent for awhile before responding, "If I don't accept the position can I still free mom and my sisters?"

"Of course, sweetie. I would much prefer if you accept the position offered as it would benefit us all, you are after all the heir now. You don't have to give me an answer right now, think about it and tell us your answer," June answered.

"Okay, grandma. Will you let me think on it and talk to mom about it also?" Darmon answered and asked.

"Of course, sweetie. Let me show you our commitment to this, if you would allow me!" June asked. Darmon nodded for acceptance.

June got up and moved her head closer to her grandson and gave him a tender kiss that lingered longer than it should have before breaking away and leaving a stunned young man speechless in his bedroom.

June returned to the living room and found her daughters waiting.

"I told him about our history and asked him to be head of the family since Edward isn't fit for that role," June explained.

"Do you think he will accept it, mom?" Mary asked.

"I don't know sweetie. He will probably have a talk with his mother then give us a reply. I just hope he accepts. Edward needs to be punished for what he has done, and his family needs to be claimed by Darmon if he accepts," June continued.

"Did you tell him about my sister's and my issue, mom?" Amber asked.

"No darling, that is something you need to discuss with him. Although, I don't think it will be a problem," June answered.

Darmon was shell shocked from everything he has learned so far. He could never have thought his family were like this and he needed to talk to his mother.

Darmon called his mother and when she answered, he could clearly hear slapping sounds and multiple moans.

"Honey, can I call you back. I'm a little busy right now!" Evelyn answered before disconnecting the call.

Darmon was livid as he knew what his mother was being subjected to and he could clearly hear multiple moans.

It was nearly 2 hours later that Evelyn returned the phone call.

"Honey? You okay?" Evelyn asked, she needed to confirm her son was fine and when she should expect him home.

"Yeah, mom. You okay, right? He didn't hurt you, right?" Darmon asked.

"No honey, with you not around he has been taking more liberties and we hate it," Evelyn assured her son.

"Where is dad, now?" Darmon inquired.

"He left to go drink with his buddies. When are you coming home, honey?" Evelyn asked.

"Don't know mom, are my sisters around? Do they know why I am here?" Darmon wanted to know.

"Your sisters, know, honey. They are in their rooms upset at the treatment from your father."

"Mom, can you call them and put me on speaker phone," Darmon asked.

"Sure, honey. Why?" Evelyn was concerned something went wrong and their chances of escape went down big time.

There was a pause, whilst Evelyn gathered her daughters into Marcy's bedroom.

"Okay, honey. We're all here. What seems to be the problem?" Evelyn asked her son when everyone was gathered.

There was another pause where Darmon didn't respond which prompted his mother to ask, "Honey?"

"Sorry, I was trying to gather my thoughts. Mom, did you know about our families 'family love'?" Darmon replied over the phone.

"What are you talking about honey? If you're referring to what your father is doing that is not 'family love', he is forcing us to do these things," Evelyn responded.

"No mom. It seems that grandpa had what grandma called 'family love' with her and their daughters, my aunts." Darmon started with his explanation. Darmon heard gasps from his sisters and mother.

"Yeah, it seems that after dad married you mom, he wasn't included in any 'family love' or even told about it, even then dad wouldn't be able to take what was grandpa's. Dad had started a family with you. With grandpa's death, grandma was going to approach him to be head of the family but that's changed due to how he went about getting you and my sisters. While he didn't know of the rules for this 'family love' he has already broken so many rules and grandma feels he is unfit to be in that role," Darmon continued.

"Grandma wouldn't have done anything, if dad and conquered you and my sisters with love, but the video you sent proved this wasn't the case. Grandma, feels that I would better serve as head of the family. If I accept it would mean that I get what you asked me here to complete. Grandma and my aunts will be mine. It will ensure that that dad won't be able to use me against any of you."

"Grandma, said she would still help you even if I don't accept, but is hoping that since I am an heir of the family that I would accept."

"I don't know what to do. If I accept it might mean something more, as you all would be under bounds of what grandma calls family," Darmon concluded.

There followed a quiet discussion between the girls and it was Marcy who told Darmon, "Accept the deal. Secure your future and ours little brother."

"Mom?" Darmon asked.

"Honey, I think we all understand what that means, and I know you would be far better, kinder and loving than your father could ever be," Evelyn assured her son.

"Okay, I will accept grandma's deal. Marcy, Emily and Natasha, you can refuse dad now. Nothing will happen to me. He might still try to force you and I can't protect you whilst I am here. I will get grandma to arrange for each of you to come here. Mom, you're his wife and he will force you to attend to him. You can refuse anything disgusting you don't like, I suppose. I will save you too mom, I promise."

Darmon actually heard weeping over the telephone.

"Mom?" Darmon asked.

"Honey, we're all okay. Let's end this call and you go have this talk with your grandma," Evelyn said and hung up the phone.

Darmon found his grandmother in the living room with his aunts.

"Uhhh, grandma. Ohh, ummm, can we talk?" Darmon asked as he was looking at his aunts, not sure if they knew anything.

"Of course, sweetie. We can talk in front of your aunts as they know everything anyway," June responded.

"Oh, umm... Okay. I talked with mom and my sisters and I will accept the role, but I need something in return," Darmon asked.

Mary and Amber, squealed in delight and then awaited their nephews condition or conditions.

"Grandma, For starters, I want to take down my father and do to him what he wanted to do to me. Secondly, I would like to ask you to arrange for Marcy, Emily and Natasha to come here for the summer. I don't want my father to get access to them," Darmon started to list his conditions.

"Thirdly, It would be too suspicious if I get mom here, right now, I told mom that since she is his wife then my father would still likely force her to do things, but I still promised to save her."

June listened to her grandson's requests and simply said, "Done!"

"You know honey, when you accepted the position, you could have asked anything of us and we would do it if it meant it benefited our family," Mary chuckled.

"The fact that you thought of your family and how to protect them serves to show us we made the right choice," Amber added.

June took command, "Mary and Amber, pack your suitcases within the hour and leave for your brother's house. Get your nieces and bring them back here. You can spend a couple of days there if you want whilst I get my grandson up to speed with his new role. Your brother might try something to claim

you but you're Darmon's now, remember that."

Both Mary and Amber giggled, got up and moved over to Darmon and kissed him on the lips. Darmon was stunned which caused June, Mary and Amber to laugh.

"Get used to that and more, darling. They're just happy," June chuckled.

"Darling?" Darmon asked.

"Yes, darling. Once you consummate our union then you would be head of this house and the respect it deserves," June said smiling

Mary and Amber, packed and left within the hour, they didn't need to pack a whole lot, as at best they would only need to spend a couple of days there. Mary and Amber, French kissed their mother and closed mouth kissed their nephew. Darmon was a little disappointed that they didn't French kiss him also.

June saw the disappointment and assured her grandson, "Once, you have been initiated into the role properly they will kiss you like that also. Just be patient, darling. Are you ready to learn about the position?"

Darmon's mouth went dry and just nodded. June lead her grandson to couch in the living room.

"The first rule, is that if your women want you to service them then you are obligated to doing so. In exchange they will do whatever you ask of them. If two or more women ask for your attention then you can either have them all together or ask them to setup a schedule and they should choose the order themselves," June started to list some rules.

"The second rule, is that you can also propose to have one of your women attend to you, but the first rule takes precedence."

"The third rule, is that all your women will do what you ask, with the exception when rule one would be violated. This is to prevent you from excluding someone if they have already asked as part of rule one."

"The forth rule, is that some of your women may want to be with your other women, it is up to you to decide if you allow this or not. It should be noted that your women will not go behind your back but you will find there will be some exceptions to this rule. You will learn of this later."

"The fifth rule, is a 'No' means no both ways. You can say no and also your women can say no to any requests you may make, with the exception when rule one would be violated."

"The sixth rule, is that if someone isn't initiated into 'family love' then they are excluded from all activities and may not be claimed by someone who is in the 'family love' circle. An example of this would be, if your daughter dated another girl before she is initiated then gets initiated you cannot claim your daughters girlfriend unless

your daughter invites her to join. You have the right to veto any invites."

"The seventh rule, is that no other male may claim what is yours within the 'family love' circle. An example of this would be your son, who is invited in the 'family love', cannot claim any of your women unless it has been previously agreed upon."

"There are some other rules, but I don't want to overload you right now, darling," June concluded.

"Okay, I think I understand," Darmon responded.

June chuckled, "Trust me, darling. To date, only one male has ever been part of the 'family love'. Until your grandpa death, he alone was our man and as such your father would never have been invited as he was next inline for that role. As you are in that role now, we are yours and you are ours. Just know that you have the right to include or exclude your family members into the 'family love'. Here I am referring to your mother and sisters. I alongside your aunts are already yours."

"Any bed that you chose to sleep in with whomever you chose is yours for that night. So with that said, can I lead you to my bedroom or should I say your bedroom for the next few days, so I can teach my grandson, my man the art of love?" June asked with a giggle.

June did lead her grandson to her bedroom and then sat on her bed, patting the bed besides her, "Darling, come sit besides me." Darmon moved to sit besides his grandmother.

"I saw your disappointment with how my daughters kissed me and none of us did that with you. I suspect you have kissed your girlfriends before and know what to do, but I can guarantee when you kiss family its on a whole different level. We're going to kiss, and as passions rise just go with the flow, okay, darling?" June said.

"Just remember, that anything we do today isn't wrong. I believe you're a virgin, so don't expect to be the best lover for now. What is important is that you enjoy it and make me yours, darling. You will learn to be a better lover for us overtime. We have probably 2 days before your aunts and sisters come back. I expect to be on my back or knees for most of those days," June stated.

"Grandma, are you sure about this?" Darmon asked.

"Very much so, darling. Your seed must go into the matriarch of the house, me, to claim your position. You should have no worries about getting me pregnant, darling, as I am past the child bearing stage. Your grandfather had a vasectomy and couldn't get your aunts pregnant. You on the other hand could well get them pregnant as well as your mother and sisters, should you want to include them in this. To claim a woman into the 'family love' you must let out your seed into their wombs. I hope you're ready for that, darling." June revealed another rule.

"Anyway, enough about that, kiss me, darling," June prompted her grandson.

Darmon moved his head closer to his grandmother's head. June waited to see how her grandson would initiate this intimate contact and was surprised that instead of going straight for the lips, he instead went to kiss her neck and behind her earlobe. June moaned. Darmon gently bit and sucked on her neck and June was sure that her grandson was going to leave a hickey. June was hot and instead of letting her grandson lead, she pulled his head from her neck, looked deep into her grandson's eyes before she brought her lips to his.

The kiss was tender and somehow conveyed the love she had always felt for him, only now it was with the knowledge that this love was so much more deeper. As the kiss became more passionate, she opened her mouth and licked her grandson's lips, seeking entry. Darmon moaned this time and opened his mouth.

June wasted no time at all and drove her tongue into her grandson's mouth to find his and a duel began. June felt an overriding lust, she has been intimate with her daughters and there was a lot of love there, but this was the first man she had had in a long time that was a member of her family. June was feeling hot, flushed and her pussy was wet, very wet. As she continued to kiss her grandson, June started to remove her night wear. June pulled her shorts down and off her legs, but had to break the kiss to remove her top.

June was looking into her grandson's eyes as her breasts become visible. Darmon was shocked and gasped as he saw his grandmothers breasts and scanned his eyes down to see a clean shaven pubic mound. Darmon's own shorts were tented and it was June's turn to look down and gasp. June wanted to see her man's cock and tugged down his shorts to reveals a thick 8 inch penis. June moaned and captured her grandson's lips again and started another deep French kiss as she grabbed his cock in her hand to stroke him.

Grandmother and grandson were moaning and panting heavily, when June fell backwards onto her bed dragging her grandson with her.

June broke the kiss with her grandson briefly to tell him, "Darling, for the first time, don't worry about foreplay or making sure I cum first. Take me, let me make you a man, my man and you claim me as yours."

June went back to kissing her grandson and opened her legs wide, she positioned her grandson between her legs. Took hold of his cock, rubbed it against her pussy a few time before putting him at her entrance. June wrapped her legs around her grandson's backside and pulled him into her. Both grandmother and grandson wailed and screamed in pleasure. Darmon broke the kiss and put his head alongside his grandmothers and cried. June was scared and thought maybe her grandson was regretting their union.

June was soothing her grandson, "Darling, are you okay?"

Darmon continued to cry for a short while longer, with his hard cock fully embedded in his grandmother. He finally replied, "Yes, grandma. I'm sorry, I'm crying because I'm not a virgin anymore."

"Oh, darling. This is only the start. I need you to start fucking me, your seed needs to be inside me to fully be initiated," June prompted her grandson whilst clenching and releasing her pussy around his cock as if she was milking him. Darmon did what came naturally for all males since the dawn of man and pulled out then back into his grandmother.

June honestly thought that she wouldn't likely reach orgasm on their first attempt, but only after a minute of the taboo nature of their union had her nearing the point of release. Darmon was in heaven and his pleasure was mounting which caused him to take longer, deeper thrusts of his cock within his grandmother. Darmon wanted to last longer, but just after 3 minutes, he pushed in deep and jet after jet coating the back of his grandmother's vagina. Darmon moaned and grunted loudly. June felt the first blast of her grandson's seed hit her cervix and this pushed her over the edge. Darmon was scared when his grandmother screamed like a banshee, as she dug her nails into his back and used her heels on his backside to pull him even harder into her.

After June had managed to calm down, she still felt a hard cock within her and chuckled, "God, it's been a long time since, I felt something this hard inside me, darling. You're still hard. Let me ride you now."

June rolled her grandson onto his back and ride him until both climaxed again. In fact, grandmother and grandson fucked 3 times that day. Over the next 2 days, June taught her grandson, no her man,

how to last longer, the art of how to pleasure a woman and how a woman can pleasure a man. She even taught him anal sex.

Chapter 3

Mary was driving the family SUV towards her brother's house. Amber was sitting besides her with her hand clearly up her sister's dress, rubbing her pussy over her panties.

"Amber, you know I love you right? We need to be a little bit careful, now. Mom, reminded us we are Darmon's now," Mary panted as her sister continued to rub her slit over her panties.

"Mary, technically we are, but you know as well as I do that until Darmon has sex with us and claims us we can still have some fun. Besides, he has to accept us as we are. You know there is no man that can or will ever separate us," Amber grinned.

Mary sighed, "Yeah, I know. I agree with you, but still I feel a bit guilty."

It was Amber's turn to sigh, "I know, we really should have talked to Darmon before we left. The rescue of his sisters comes first I suppose."

"How do you think mom did with our nephew's initiation?" Amber inquired.

Mary laughed, "The poor nephew wouldn't or didn't stand a chance when mom wants something. I suspect that mom will have him in every hole for the next few days until we return."

Amber giggled, "Yeah, mom will devour him. What has me worried is when we get there, Edward will try to force us or get Evelyn or our nieces to try and seduce us. That was his original plan to get us. It's not so much as us succumbing to our brother, which will never happen, it more do we allow ourselves to be seduced? You know since, we are supposed to be Darmon's and potentially his mother and sisters will be his also."

Mary had a quick look at her sister then back to the road. "As you said Amber, until he fully claims us and his family, we could still use the loophole of it just being fun until we and they are claimed. Still I do feel guilty and don't want to betray our man."

"Yeah, I know what you mean. I suggest that we just go with the flow for now and hope Darmon doesn't take it the wrong way, if something does happen," Amber said.

Amber then pushed her fingers into her sister's panties to play with her labia before finger fucking her sister. Amber continues to edge her sister until they nearly reached their brother's house before letting her sister orgasm.

Mary was flushed and panting trying to get her breath under control as they pulled up outside their brother's home. Amber was giggling as they parked on the driveway and got out to collect their suitcases from the back before ringing the door bell.

Edward was sitting in his study and had a reluctant Emily sucking his cock, while Marcy was sat to one side, fingering her pussy with no enthusiasm in it. Evelyn was forced to eat her youngest daughter for the sick amusement of her husband. His daughters had refused to do anything as their brother had advised, but this only caused their father to get abusive and started to slap their mother around until they succumbed. Edward was enjoying breaking his wife and daughters until the doorbell chimed.

"Who the fuck is coming at this fucking hour," Edward said as his enjoyment was interrupted. "Marcy, go see who it is and get rid of them. Then come back, I going to fuck you as I watch you eat your sister."

Marcy sighed heavily, got dressed in her nightwear and then went to go see who it was.

Marcy heard her father order her sister as she closed the study door. "Keep sucking me, Emily. I want to cum in your mouth before I fuck Marcy. Put more effort into it girl or else your brother will suffer." Edward laughed.

Marcy went to the door and opened it. Marcy's aunt Amber rushed in to embrace her niece followed in by her aunt Mary. Marcy was shocked and quickly looked over at her father's study then back at her aunts.

Mary saw the glance then went to embrace her niece, she whispered with her mouth close to her niece's ear, "Edward's in there isn't he, raping your mother and sisters, right?"

Marcy was shocked and wondered how much her aunts actual knew. Marcy started to sob and weep as she nodded. Mary and Amber held their niece.

"Your brother sent us. We've come to take you and your sisters to him. He loves you, you know regardless of what has happened. Keep this to yourself for now, honey," Amber whispered as she wiped her niece's tears away and kissed her on the cheek.

"Let's stop my brother's selfish enjoyment, shall we?" Amber giggled.

"Go back in and tell him we are here. It should force him to stop for now," Mary told her niece.

Marcy lead her aunts to the living room and left them to go back to her father's study.

Marcy opened the door, looking towards the living room before closing the door. Edward saw his daughter and noticed she wasn't immediately getting undressed, looked up at her. "Get naked now, slut!" Edward ordered his eldest daughter.

"Dad, aunt Mary and aunt Amber have arrived. I couldn't exactly get rid of them. They're waiting for us in the living room," Marcy told her father.

"FUCK!" Edward shouted. Even Mary and Amber heard that and grinned at each other.

Edward reluctantly pulled his cock from Emily's mouth. Evelyn and Natasha were glad also since this would mean their own ordeal would be laid to rest for awhile at least. Truth be told, mother and daughters actually enjoyed being intimate with each other, it was just that they hated to be forced to do it for Edward's sick pleasure.

Everyone got dressed with Edward muttering, "Fuck! Fuck! Why fucking now?"

Evelyn and her daughters had smiles at the corners of their mouths seeing Edward flustered and blue balled.

The study door opened and they all marched into the living room. Edward saw his sisters look over at them and didn't even care, how he could explain, how his wife and daughters all piled out of his study in their nightwear.

"Mary, Amber. What a nice surprise. How are my sisters doing?" Edwards said looking over at them.

"Surprise? Oh wait, didn't mom tell you we were coming? Well that just mom for you, huh? She didn't tell us Darmon was coming either. Yeah, so that was a surprise for us also," Mary chuckled.

Amber giggled, "You can say it runs in the family." Amber looked over at her sister-in-law, Evelyn, then winked, hoping that she caught the double meaning behind those words.

"Well, I can tell you, both Amber and I are well, as is mom. Darmon is a little sad and mentioned something about a girlfriend or two dumping him. Darmon's mopping got a little too much for me and Amber, so decided to take a couple of days away to visit my dear brother and his family," Mary said cheerfully.

Edward chuckled to himself and knew why Darmon's girlfriends dumped him and laughed at the pain he caused his son, which was full pleasure for him twice fold. Darmon laughed inwardly when he recalled the pain he caused his son and the enjoyment he had in breaking in those virgin hussies.

"It's going to be fun, brother," Amber said with glee. "Besides, I want to spend as much time as I can with my nieces over the next couple of days. Why are you all so quiet, come give your old aunt a big hug and kiss."

Marcy, Emily and Natasha had waited to see how their father was going to react and looked over at him before they jumped into their aunt's embrace with kisses on foreheads delivered by Amber to her nieces.

Amber laughed and loudly said, "Pajama party. Sleepover fun!"

With that Mary and Amber, lead their nieces to Marcy's bedroom along with their suitcases to get changed into nightwear. Aunts and nieces talking and joked for most of the night.

Edward was left to go to bed with his wife. Evelyn refused to get intimate with Edward because she didn't want her sister-in-laws to hear her moans and shouts. Edward was forced to beat one out in the bathroom that night and it pissed him off.

In the morning, Edward woke Evelyn up and order her, "Slut, you're going to seduce Mary or Amber tonight. I'm going to catch you and you will convince whomever you're with to let me take them."

Evelyn knew it was fruitless to object and just nodded.

Everyone got up and had breakfast. Edward tried hard to get one of his daughters alone to service him, but was always cock-blocked by either Mary or Amber. Edward was frustrated and getting antsy.

Mary and Amber, while they were cock-blocking their brother on purpose were also having a text message conversation:

Mary: "Haha, I'm enjoying cock-blocking Edward."

Amber: "Haha, so am I."

Mary: "I think he is going to get Evelyn to make a move on one of us, tonight. He hasn't been able to get any of his daughters alone to setup any plan."

Amber: "Yeah, You want to be the one seduced or should I?"

Mary: "I will do it. When I give you the signal, tell our nieces you have to use the bathroom and catch him trying his luck with me."

Amber: "Okay!"

During the day, Evelyn dragged Mary away from everyone.

"Mary, we haven't caught up in awhile, maybe tonight I can come to the guest bedroom and we can talk. We can talk about how my son is settling in," Evelyn asked her sister-in-law loudly enough so that Edward could hear.

"Sure, I would love that," Mary responded.

The cock-blocking continued until it was time for bed. Amber, went off with her nieces to Marcy's bedroom, with Mary and Evelyn heading off to the guest bedroom. Mary had a message ready to send to Amber with a single press of a button.

The sister-in-laws at first just talked about meaningless things and then talked about Darmon. Mary noted the spark in Evelyn's eyes and voice when she talked about him. Throughout the exchange, Evelyn would giggle, laugh, chuckle whilst touching Mary's arms or bare legs.

Evelyn knew she had to do it as Edward wanted, as he would be getting annoyed at the delay. Evelyn leaned over to her sister-in-law and whispered into her ear, "I'm sorry, Mary, but I have to do this." Evelyn kissed Mary's neck, cheek and kissed her sister-in-law's lips.

Mary broke the kiss and made it look like she was going to kiss Evelyn on the neck then whispered, "I'm sorry, Evelyn, I won't be able to have sex with you, unless my man approves. The best I can do is make it look like you are seducing me. So we can kiss and fondle, only."

Evelyn nodded and then pulled Mary to her lips again before they locked lips into a French kiss. Evelyn did wonder what her sister-in-law meant about her man's approval. Edward decided it was time for his entrance then.

"What the FUCK is going on here?" Edward said angrily. Both Mary and Evelyn made it look like they were startled as Mary sent the message to Amber.

"Edward, darling. It's not what it looks like," Evelyn started to plead as per normal when she was forced to seduce her son's girlfriends.

"Brother calm down. Evelyn is right, this is just a misunderstanding," Mary replied.

"Like hell it isn't. It seems that my own sister is trying to 'cuck' me. Well, I'm not going to settle for that, Mary. Stand up both of you," Edward ordered.

Both stood up and Edward stripped his clothes off, then moved over to what looked like a frightened Mary before he grabbed her and tried to forcefully kiss his sister. Mary shrieked.

It was then that Amber entered the bedroom and saw Edward lay hands on her sister and lost it. Amber pulled back her leg and kicked her brother hard in the nuts. Edward screamed and collapsed to the floor.

Amber moved down next to her brother and said loudly enough for Mary and Evelyn to hear, "What the fuck are you doing, brother? You don't have the right to lay your hands on my sister. There is only one man that has that right and it certainly isn't you."

Evelyn was in shock, this didn't go in anyway as she expected it would. She had expected that Mary would now be laying under her brother with his cock buried deep inside her. Evelyn looked over at her sister-in-law, who had a smug look on her face.

Mary leaned down also and slapped her brother hard across the face, before telling him, "I told you it was a misunderstanding, right? Only the misunderstanding was on your side, if you thought I would allow you to have me."

Mary and Amber left to return to Marcy's bedroom.

Evelyn was left to pick up her husband, who shock her off and groaned in pain as he tried to stand up, but collapsed again due the throbbing pain between his legs. Edward reluctantly accepted Evelyn's help to lead him back to their bedroom. Edward was forced to ask Evelyn for an ice-pack.

As Evelyn went to fetch the ice-pack she had the biggest smile she had in a long time plastered all over her face.

Then next morning at breakfast, Amber told her nieces, "Marcy, Emily and Natasha, got pack a suitcase each. We're going on a little family holiday, back to mom's. You can spend summer break with us."

The girls all looked at their father who tried to put a stop to it, "No that isn't possible. They have lots of family obligations and chores this summer."

The reference to 'family obligations' wasn't lost to any of them and they fully knew what that meant.

"Brother, you don't have the right to stop us taking them, especially, after last night. What do you think MOM will think when I tell her that she can't see her granddaughters," Mary told her brother in a calm voice that promised more would happen as she emphasized the word 'mom.'

Edward knew that June, his mother, held sway to the wealth that he was accustomed to and knew if his mother got wind of what he tried then she could cut him off. "Fuck, fine take them, see if I care!" Edward replied angrily before getting up and stomping to his study.

Marcy, Emily and Natasha shrieked in glee and quickly rushed off to pack a suitcase or two each. Amber, followed them.

Mary was left with Evelyn. They moved over to the couch in the living room. Mary sat her sister-in-law down besides her.

"Darmon sent us. He tasked us with getting his sisters and taking them away from Edward. Mom, told us of Edward's plan to claim mom and us. Trust me, I would have loved to have sex with you last night, but I couldn't, not until I had approval," Mary was explaining what was going on.

"It's my son isn't it. The man that Amber spoke of last night," Evelyn said as she started to sob and cry.

"Yes, Evelyn. It is your son. He loves you and it hurts him that he can't save you right now. The best he could achieve for now was to rescue your daughters, his sisters," Mary said to try and sooth her sister-in-law.

"No, No. I understand. My son still loves us, loves me, even after what we put him through." Evelyn continued to weep with Mary holding her sister-in-law close.

"Darmon promised to get you out as soon as he can, trust him and in him. Mom will make sure it happens," Mary continued.

"Darmon knows that until he can, you will likely take the brunt of Edward's rage. Use mom as a shield if you have to, Edward cares more for the wealth he has access to than his own family. This can only help with limited capacity and won't protect you from Edward attacking you. Just be careful, sis, and call Darmon if you feel you have to. Actually, call him regularly as I am sure he would love to hear your voice," Mary advised.

It took just over an hour for the girls to have packed. With Mary staying close to Evelyn, Amber packed her sister's suitcase.

Despite it just being a family holiday there were many tears between Evelyn and her daughters. Deep down, mother and daughters knew this was something big and the girls would be free of their father.

The SUV was loaded and set off to much happier times they hoped.

Amber did give her sister a look and then at her lap before looking back at her sister's face. Mary shook her head to indicate they couldn't play on the way back.

On the way back, it was Amber who looked back over her shoulder at her nieces before telling them, "Girls, your brother sent us. Marcy knew of this on the day we arrived, but we told her to keep it quiet. We know what Edward has been doing to you and your mother. You're all now free of your father's influence. Your brother love you all. He had already secured his freedom from anything his father could throw at him, but he still wanted to save you. He just couldn't save your mother yet, but has promised that he will."

Each of Darmon's sisters were shocked and stunned. Each of them recounting how they resented their little brother and how they ignored him, yet he still went out of his way to save them. Each of them burst into tears as they hugged each other in the back of the SUV, before exhaustion overcame them and all fell asleep.

With each of their nieces asleep, Amber tried a couple of time to finger her sister, but was always stopped by Mary, until Amber gave up knowing that soon she would have her head buried in her sister's cunt, anyway.

Four hours later, Mary drove up to the gates which automatically opened to allow her to drive up to the house. She woke up her nieces and they groggily opened their eyes to see that they had arrived. They exited the SUV into a bright sunny early afternoon day.

Aunts and nieces unloaded the car as the front door opened. Mary and Amber spotted their mother and nephew dangerously close to each other and a smirk passed between the sisters, who knew instantly that Darmon was now officially head of the family.

Each of them walked up to the front door to greet Darmon and June. Mary went up to her nephew and French kissed him, before moving over to her mother to French kiss her also. Amber did the same, with her nephew first as was fitting for he was head of the family now.

Darmon and his sisters were embarrassed and didn't know how to act. June and her daughters just laughed before Darmon's grandmother moved over to her grandson and French kissed him. Marcy, Emily and Natasha were shocked and looked to see if their brother was forcing their grandmother and aunts as their father did. The smiles told the bigger picture and they saw that neither their grandmother or aunts had any signs of being forced.

As each of the sisters approached they didn't know if this was the new greeting within this house or something else. Instead it was their grandmother that took the lead. She hugged and kissed her granddaughters on the forehead before welcoming them home.

Darmon and his sisters didn't know how to act around each other, so Darmon moved away from the door to let them pass. Each of them wanted to hug each other, but was afraid how each would react, as the girls felt that they had ignored their little brother all this time, and with Darmon really wanting to reconnect with them, he feared they still resented him. June saw this interaction and sighed. She knew this was going to take time to sort out and she would make sure the siblings reconnected.

June advised the girls to go to their bedrooms and change for lunch then afterwards they can all relax around the pool. June looked at her daughters and an unspoken command was given to them. Mary and Amber, knew they needed to spend a moment with their nephew.

June and the girls spent time around the pool, just chatting with their grandmother and enjoying the freedom they have been granted via their brother. Their little brother who saved them from their father.

While Darmon's grandmother and sisters were relaxing around the pool, Mary and Amber lead their nephew into their bedroom. Darmon scanned the bedroom and noted that there were pictures on bedside tables and walls of both Mary and Amber together.

"Uhhh, Who's bedroom is this aunt Mary?" Darmon asked.

"It's both of your aunts, honey," Mary answered. Mary and Amber sat on the bed and left space for their nephew between them. Amber patted the bed in-between them and Darmon sat down.

"It's part of what we need to discuss with you, honey," Amber continued.

"Firstly, congratulations for taking on the role as our man and head of the family. You will need to consummate our union to fully claim us," Mary stated.

"You will notice that we have been referring to 'us' a lot. It's our quirk, honey," Mary continued.
"We're a package deal, you cannot have one of us without the other. Which means that if you bed one of us then you have to bed us both at the same time."

"Darmon, honey. My sister and I are lovers as well as sisters. I believe mom mentioned the rules and mentioned that some of your women may want to be with other women and you would or wouldn't allow it. We are the exception, we will always love each other when we are together and this is the one exception you cannot stop. You can stop us from being intimate with any other female, but not between us. As a compromise, we can promise that we will only be intimate with each other when we are with you or have gotten express permission to be intimate with each other when you are not available," Amber confirmed their quick.

"Both my sister and I are only attracted towards females and would never allow a male near us with the exception of the person who is head of the family. Before it was dad only and now it will be you only," Mary explained further.

"Mom, knows that if we are to continue with her then we need to seek your permission to do so. While, mom and us, her daughters, have an ongoing intimate relationship, she understands and accepts that it might come to an end, if you don't like or want it," Amber explained about her mother's inclusion.

Darmon listened and then asked, "So let me get this right, to claim my aunts I have to claim them both together? I cannot stop either of you being intimate with each other, but to stop me from being 'cucked' you will only do it with me present, unless you have gotten explicit permission to be

intimate with each other when I am not available. You have also confirmed you will not be intimate with another female without me present and only when given permission. You have also informed me that you have been intimate with your mother and would like to continue this with my permission. Does that about cover everything?" Darmon stated the facts to understand further.

"Yes, also that we will not allow any other males near us and it will, only, be the one man that is accepted in our 'family love'. You will have noticed that we aren't married or have children. Dad couldn't get us pregnant. We are fully aware that you can and are prepared for that. In essences we both will be married to you, honey." Amber chuckled.

"The discussion about you both being intimate with other females can be shelved for the moment. Do I need to schedule a time to claim you both?" Darmon asked.

"Oh honey, here rule one and two would apply. We want you to service us and I could probably guess that if we didn't then you would have evoked rule two," Mary giggled. "I suppose it best to show our man our bodies and undress you also."

Mary and Amber, got up from the bed to stand in front of their nephew and watched his eyes grow big as Amber that started to undress her sister. Amber would lay gentle kisses to her sister's neck, chest and lips. Once Amber had stripped her sister, it was Mary's turn to do the same to her sister.

Darmon watched his aunts kiss tenderly and undress each other, his cock was very hard and painful in his shorts. His aunt Mary was the older of the two and Darmon could see she had a sexy curvy body, her breasts were firm with nipples that stood proud about 1 inch from the center of dark bumpy areola's. By contract aunt Amber was shorter than her sister and had smaller breasts which fit her slim body, her nipples also stood 1 inch proud of dark areola's that were smaller in size than her sisters. Darmon looked down to see both of his aunts had shaved pubic mounds.

Darmon watched his aunts, giggle, look deep into each others eyes and French kissed. Darmon heard both moan and he moaned himself watching pure love at play. His aunt's stopped kissing, look over at their nephew before facing him again then dragged him to his feet.

Both of Darmon's aunts took turns tenderly and then passionately kissing him, before both got on their knees. Mary and Amber looked at each other, knowing this was the moment when they would see their man's manhood for the first time. They grabbed his shorts from both side and pulled hard to release his cock, which sprang up nearly hitting them in the face. Both moaned and gasped as they laid eyes on their nephew's cock.

Amber giggled, "Sis, our man's a little bit bigger than dad was and dad was impressive. I never got to see our asshole of a brother's penis. Is Darmon bigger?"

Mary laughed, "Yes, sis. He undressed before me and walked over to me with a hard-on. He was tiny compared to our lovely man here. When you kicked him in the balls, it shrunk to nothing."

Darmon felt proud as they talked about his cock like and compared him to others, knowing his aunts were pleased.

Amber tried to wrap her hand around her nephew's cock the giggled, "Sis, I can't even get my whole hand around his cock. Look my fingers won't touch together."

Mary looked then leaned down to kiss her nephew's glans, which prompted Amber to start stroking him. Darmon moaned in pleasure. Amber then leaned down to trap their nephew's cock between their lips as his aunts tried to French kiss each other. Their tongues tried to duel each other with his cock being the barrier. Darmon's cock twitched, which caused his aunts to giggle like schoolgirls.

After they stopped trying to French kiss each other, it was Amber that took her nephew into her mouth and she started to bob her head up and down his shaft as Mary stroked him and took his balls into her mouth. This was too much for Darmon and he moaned, "Fuck," as he unloaded his first load into his aunt Amber's mouth.

Amber pulled off her nephew's cock, with a mouthful of his cum, grabbed her sister's head and mashed their lips together as aunts shared their man's cum between them. Darmon could hear clear sounds of gulping as both swallowed his load. Darmon staggered back to the bed and sat down as both of his aunts moved to the center of their bed. Amber lay on her back as Mary moved to put her head in-between her sisters legs with her ass in the air. Darmon heard the slurping sounds of Mary eating her sister out, wiggling her bum, inviting her nephew to claim what was his.

Darmon recovered quickly and was fully hard again watching his aunts playing. Mary stopped licking her sister long enough to look at her nephew seductively before continuing to feast on her little sister. Mary was surprised to feel that instead of going straight into fucking her as she expected her nephew would do, he instead kissed and nibbled on her inner thighs and around her vagina, before kissing and licking her ass. Mary, made a mental note, to thank her mother later for teaching him right.

Darmon gave a few swipes of his tongue on his aunts rosebud, before feasting on his aunt's pussy. Mary exploded into orgasm, she didn't understand how her nephew had managed that so quickly. Her orgasm caused her to bite Amber's clit, which, in turn, caused Amber to climax also.

The shrieks of Mary and Amber, were heard by all those around the pool. Darmon's sisters were embarrassed and their grandmother laughed out loud.

Mary and Amber collapsed side by side on the bed to catch their breath. Darmon sat back with a raging hard-on to let them recover. Soon both of his aunt recovered enough, so that Mary was now on her back and Amber was going to eat out her sister as she had wanted during the drive back home. This was a repeat of what just happened and it had only taken just over 5 minutes for both Mary and Amber to shriek again.

Back at the pool, Darmon's sisters were all squirming on their loungers, trying to hold a conversation between themselves and their grandmother.

Darmon really wanted to fuck them now and didn't let Mary rest too long before he was on top of his aunt. "Auntie, am I okay to make love to you?" Darmon asked.

Mary placed a gentle hand against her nephew's cheek before answering, "Oh, honey. Thank you for asking, that is a sign of a gentleman. Remember, I am yours I will never deny you, ever."

With permission given, Darmon pushed his cock into his aunt in a single deep thrust. Both aunt and nephew moaned in pleasure. "Oh my god, Oh MY GOD!" Mary was chanting as her nephew pulled and then pushed back in over and over again.

Mary lifted her legs up which helped drive her nephew's cock deeper into her pussy, as the the glans of his cock hit her cervix repeatedly, she shrieked as in passion as an orgasm rocked her body.

Mary looked over at her sister who was masturbating watching aunt and nephew make love, before brokenly telling her sister, "Sis, Our man is converting me and I will never be able to live without his cock in me, I'm sorry, sis, but I've fallen in love with him."

Amber just giggled and straddled her sisters face looking at her nephew continued to make love to her sister. Amber's pussy descended to her sister's waiting mouth. Amber needed to let her sister know that she too loved her sister. Darmon made room for Amber as he continued to make love to Mary.

Mary, built up steam again and Darmon could feel his aunt's pussy was clutching his cock tightly. Darmon started with longer, deeper thrusts. Mary wrapped her legs around her nephew's waist and

dug her nails into his back as an orgasm rocked her body again, this set off Darmon who pushed in deep and blasted her cervix with his sperm. Mary felt jet after jet hit deep inside as she went limp and blacked out.

Darmon was in a panic thinking he had killed his aunt and quickly pulled out to check for a pulse. Amber who hadn't cum yet, laughed, "Honey, your aunt is just so happy that she passed out. You haven't done anything bad."

Darmon relieved, dropped onto his back next to Mary. Amber spied her nephew's semi-hard cock and went down on him licking up the combined juices of her sister and nephew. Darmon watched his aunt give him a blowjob which caused him to become rock hard again. Amber looked over at her recovering sister and straddled her nephew to take him deep inside her. Amber screamed like a banshee as she felt her nephew's cock bottom out in her for the first time.

June and the girls at the pool heard the scream. June laughed. It was Marcy who raised her concerns, "Grandma, doesn't that bother you?"

"What, sweetie?" June asked.

"I mean, what we are hearing. What if my brother is forcing them to be with him, like dad did to us," Marcy asked to try and understand.

"Let me ask all of you something, sweeties," June said. "Whenever your father forced you have sex with him, did you ever cum and was it as loud or passionate as you are hearing?"

Marcy, Emily and Natasha all looked at each other. They had cum, but it very rare when their father was in them. Instead they cum more often when they were forced to lick and eat each other out. They never shrieked as their aunts were doing.

The girls all shook their heads, before Marcy answered, "Rarely! Dad never made us scream like that. We would cum more often and harder when he forced us to do lesbian things."

June looked over at her granddaughters and sighed, "Your father is a selfish man. The screams you are hearing are ones of your aunts freely giving up their womanhood's to your brother. When they

come here later, watch them closely and tell me afterwards if you still think your brother forced them."

June and the girls heard slapping sound, with grunts and moans of pleasure.

Amber rode her nephew hard and fast. Darmon had already cum twice so didn't feel like he needed to blow his load anytime soon. Amber was enjoying being impaled on her nephew's cock and was nearing another hard orgasm, when her nephew leaned up to kiss, nibble and suck on her neck whilst he tweaked her left nipple. This set Amber off and her pussy clamped down hard on her nephew's cock and she shrieked as her orgasm rocked through her body. Her sister's scream had woken up Mary, who looked over at the mating pair with love shining in her eyes.

Mary had only ever loved one other man, her father. He was her rock and made both of his daughters happy and it was a loss to the family on his passing. Mary thought that she and her sister, would have to give themselves to her brother and the thought now repulsed her knowing how petty her brother really was. Mary knew that had Edward seduced his daughters in a loving way then she wouldn't have had her nephew. Mary knew that Darmon, her nephew, her stud and bull, was going to be the next man she would ever, truly, love.

Mary watched Darmon pushed her sister off his cock and out of her warm pussy, which caused Amber to groan and try to keep her nephew deep inside her. Darmon moved Amber into a kneeling position on all fours and then moved behind her to slap his cock against her pussy lips and clit. Amber moaned loudly.

"Auntie, since you already took my cock into you, I can assume you're okay with me entering you, but in case it was just in the heat of the moment, I will ask anyway. Auntie, can I make love to you?" Darmon asked ready at her entrance, to push his cock in deep. Instead of answering, Amber pushed back taking her nephew deep inside her again.

Darmon laughed, "I'll take that as acceptance, auntie."

Darmon set off at a steady pace and when Amber looked over at her sister, she saw Mary dip her finger into the combined cum in her pussy and bring it up to her face, smell it then put her fingers into her mouth, moaning in pleasure. When Mary next did this again, Amber grabbed her hand and brought it to her own face to lick her sister's fingers clean. Amber then motioned for her sister to lay before her. Now Amber was licking the combined juices directly from within her sister's cunt. Soon, all of them went panting heavily.

Mary was the first to orgasm, followed quickly by Darmon which set off Amber into the biggest orgasm she had experienced. Amber felt her head go light as she screamed out her pleasure as she felt her nephew's cum hit the back of her pussy coating her cervix. They stayed joined together for several minutes before Darmon slowly exited from his aunt to fall beside his aunts on 'his' bed, remembering what his grandmother told him.

Mary, Amber and Darmon lay panting to catch their breath back. It was Amber who chuckled to break the silence, "Sis, you're right. Our nephew's cock is the best. I won't be able to live without it either."

Darmon was feeling like he owned the world and drew both of his aunts into his embrace. He saw the hickey on Amber and looked over at Mary. Darmon looked deep into Mary's eyes, "Auntie, it seems that I have marked my aunt Amber, I feel that since you both do everything together then I must even that out."

Darmon then kissed his aunt Mary before, moving to her neck where he nibbled and sucked until he marked her also as his. Mary was giggling as her nephew marked her and moaned starting to get aroused again. Mary stopped her nephew and looked into his eyes as she gave him a big wet French kiss. Darmon chuckled when Amber pulled his head towards her and also gave her nephew a big wet French kiss.

Aunts and nephew rested for a bit before Darmon said, "So, does this mean you're mine?"

Mary chuckled, "Honey, we were already yours. We just needed to consummate our union, to claim us. So, yes, honey. Both Amber and I are yours now. We will not accept anyone else in sharing our love without you present and accepting it. I know you probably think how could you get so lucky, or even how things could progress so quickly. It hasn't, honey. The plan to get Edward onboard had been in the works for awhile now. We just were waiting for the right moment and after we had finished our mourning period."

Amber continued, "Edward blew his chance when he did what he did and I'm actually glad about that. Not the suffering caused to you, your mother and sisters, but that we learned of his nature before mom accepted him as head of the family."

Darmon sighed, "Yeah, he is a shitty father. Anyway, you asked me before we did this about grandma and yourselves. I can't or don't feel I have the right to stop it. I will accept that you will be intimate with each other and your mother, but I would always want to be present to enjoy you all together or at least to witness it if I don't participate."

Mary turned to look at her nephew, "Honey, within this 'family love' you have every right to stop this. Mom knows it and we know it. It is one of our rules that ensures no conflicts could arise from differing views of your women. Your desires in this are absolute."

"Well, don't know about you, but I feel I could use a dip in the pool after that workout," Amber giggled. Soon aunts and nephew were changed into swimwear, where Mary and Amber wore skimpy bikini's.

Darmon and his aunts exited the villa, laughing with both Mary and Amber holding onto each arm, looking up at their nephew with a glow about them.

Marcy, Emily and Natasha, watched as they neared the pool and didn't see any resentment or anything resembling their aunts were forced in anyway. In fact they saw the glows surrounding their aunts and the looks they were directing towards their brother. This shocked the girls as they had only ever witnessed their father forcing them.

Amber looked over at her sister. Mary let go of her nephew to walk over to her mother. Amber grabbed her nephew's hand and dragged him to the pool as she forced him to jump with her into the pool. Amber and Darmon, laughed as they resurfaced before Amber kissed her nephew tenderly. Aunt and nephew broke apart and started to fool around in the pool.

It was Amber who coaxed her nieces to come into the pool to have some fun. Darmon's sisters were reluctant at first and after they got into the pool they all enjoyed themselves. June watched her daughter trying to bring the siblings together and smiled at how her daughter must have also seen what happened this morning, and was doing what she could to help.

As Amber and her nephew and nieces were playing around in the pool, Mary was having a conversation with her mother.

"So how does it feel to be with a man again, darling?" June asked.

"Mom, you already know that we only ever loved dad, and I can safely say that Darmon is now the only, other, man we will love. How much did you teach him?" Mary answered.

June chuckled, "Not as much as you would think. Darmon is quick learner. He must have watched porn to pick up on some techniques. The days you were away, he took me multiple times throughout the day and all I did was refine somethings and taught him how to last longer."

"Mom, Darmon has accepted mine and my sister's quirk concerning relationships. He knows that we will always be together when he services us and accepts that my sister and I are in love. He even accepts you as our partner and told us he didn't feel he had the right to stop us," Mary confessed.

"What?" June stated as she was shocked.

"Yeah, we told him he has every right to stop it, if he didn't want that. He knows he cannot separate me from my sister. From what he said or didn't say, but I could read in-between the lines, is that he doesn't want to be 'cucked.' He will only allow us to be intimate with each other if he is present," Mary continued.

June was deep in thought before responding, "I suppose that is a small price to pay for us to continue as we had before. You and your sisters screams of passion have had an affect on his sisters. They believed he was forcing you both into sex with him as their father did to them."

June laughed, "When you both came with him to the pool, I could see the shock in their expressions. I wonder how soon they will fall for their brother and who would succumb first. Amber's doing an excellent job in getting them to reconnect. Darmon is going to share my bed tonight, darling. It goes without saying that you and your sister, cannot be intimate until some ground rules have been laid. Even, if he accepts you are both in love and in a committed relationship, it is too early to rock the boat."

"I know, mom!" Mary responded.

It was about 30 minutes later when Amber got out of the pool, which prompted Darmon and his sister to exit also. They dried themselves off and then applied sun tan lotion before relaxing to sunbathe.

June and Mary, excused themselves to go prepare dinner and left Amber to be the middle person in getting the siblings to talk again. Amber would giggle as she held her nephew, and this wasn't lost on Darmon's sisters, they could clearly see that no cohesion was evident in their aunt's love for their brother.

"So, I noticed a little distance between you all when we arrived, why?" Amber asked.

There was silence for a bit until Darmon opened up, "I wanted to embrace me sisters, to show them they were safe now and to tell them dad can't hurt them anymore, but I remembered for the last few years how some of you would tell me to 'get lost' or just plain ignore me. I feared that each of you still held a lot of resent towards me. I had no idea what was going on as no one would tell me. I found out when I came home early from camp dad had sent me to, to see him fucking my girlfriend while she ate mom out. I saw my sisters in a circle licking each other. I only found out why you all hated me after mom saw me as I caught you all, and later explained it all to me."

"I just didn't know if you all still hated me," Darmon concluded with tears in his eyes. Amber hugged her nephew as he confessed and tenderly kissed him on the cheek then wipe his tears away. Darmon's sisters were moved by his emotions.

The sisters looked at each other, before Emily was the one that answered, "It's true, we had been ignoring our brother, since we felt he was the cause of our troubles. What we found harder was that dad took all of our first times, including our virginity. We resented Darmon because we couldn't give that to the one we all wanted. Earlier today we also wanted to hug him, but were afraid of how he would react after being ignored for so long. We don't hate our brother, but the pain we felt due to him was well, unbearable."

Amber had already put the pieces together and suspected they had wanted their little brother to have all their firsts, but were afraid to voice it for fear that Darmon would lose it and go attack their father for taking what was his as he had done to his son's girlfriends.

It was Marcy who got up to throw herself at her brother, who raised his hands and arms up to protect himself for fear the hate towards him meant his sister was going to attack him. Marcy in fact drew her little brother into her embrace and openly cried. Emily and Natasha quickly followed suit with Amber moving away to give them room. Darmon also cried as the siblings started the healing process. Amber had a big smile cross her face as Mary come out to tell them dinner was ready. Mary viewed the scene and hugged her sister then went back in to give the siblings time to settle down.

After Darmon and his sisters calmed down it was Marcy that asked a serious question that had been running around in her head, "Oh, umm, little brother, when we arrived the greeting was a little unique. Is that the normal greeting within this household?"

It was Amber who quietly observed all this unfold, laughed loudly, which prompted them all to look at their aunt, "Only, if you want to that is. Mom, Mary and I as his and that is the normal greeting for our love. You can either wait until he accepts you or just for for it now, the choice is up to you. Neither mom, my sister or I would mind."

Darmon felt that he wanted that and his sisters felt their faces burn bright. Before any of the siblings could comment, there was a call for dinner. They all went in washed their hands and had dinner together as a family.

During dinner, June announced, "Darling, for tonight, I would love for you to share my bed."

Marcy, Emily and Natasha were stunned at the simple request with no hesitation from their grandmother. "Of course, grandma. I would love to share the night with you," Darmon responded, knowing full well he was bound to rule one.

That evening, the family watched a movie together, with both aunts holding their nephew between them. The girls would openly stare at them and even felt some jealousy. After the movie, there was some fun with a card game and drinks to welcome the girls.

Soon it was time to head off to bed and the girls watched as their grandmother lead her grandson towards her bedroom. Everyone else went to had a shower, brush their teeth and retire to their rooms.

The girls and the aunts hadn't even gotten into bed before they could hear bed springs creaking, loud slapping sounds of flesh hitting flesh and the banshee screams of June as she climaxed. This went on for the better part of 30 minutes before silence claimed each of them with the gentle embrace of sleep.

During the love making of grandmother to grandson, Amber was really wanting to get real intimate with her sister, but had to settle for masturbating themselves as they listened. Darmon's sister weren't in any better state and were forced to play with their breasts and clits to multiple orgasms.

This concluded chapter 03 of this series, in chapter 04, we will see interactions between Darmon and his sisters as well as continued open fun within the 'family love' circle.

Chapter 4

June awoke with sunlight filtering into her bedroom from the curtained window. She was snuggled up against her man, who also happened to be her grandson. June looked up into the still sleeping face of her grandson, smiled and quietly moaned in knowing she was his, completely. He had not only claimed her as part of her 'family love' history, but had won her heart too.

June chuckled to herself with how she got to this stage. She knew, none of this would have happened if her own son hadn't fucked up. In fact, secretly, she was pleased he had. Edward had always had a mean streak since he hit puberty, his sisters didn't think much of him. Mary and Amber only reluctantly agreed to invite their brother into the 'family love' circle, since the passing of their father left the head of the family position vacant and it was time to fill it. June's daughter didn't need to worry about that anymore and were glad it wasn't going to go to their brother. The mere thought that Edward would touch them made them sick.

While Mary and Amber were away, June had been making love with her grandson every day, which included last night also. June didn't want to deny the pleasure of knowing she was making love to the new head of the family. June admitted to herself that she wanted her grandson to be inside her, everyday. She knew that wouldn't always be possible as the number of women he claims grows. June recalled, how she and his sisters heard Darmon claim his aunts. She had detected some hints of jealousy even if her granddaughters tried to mask it.

Last night was another magical time spent with her grandson, her man. Grandmother and grandson, had showered together, where he kissed his grandmother and lifted her right leg and with her back to the tiled wall was making love to her. June had screamed loudly and was sure the whole villa had heard her as she climaxed. Darmon had helped her dry up and picked her up to walked her to the bed. June was fucked in the missionary position until she had another orgasm and then doggy style where they had both cum together. With grandson seeding his grandmother, yet again, before sleep claimed them.

June looked at her sleeping grandson and knew she would do anything for this young man. June stirred needed to pee and tried to gently leave her grandson's warm embrace, but failed. Darmon was awoken by the movements of his grandmother.

"Good morning, grandma," Darmon whispered.

"Good morning, darling," June responded. "Sorry, if I disturbed you, but I have to answer the call of nature."

Darmon reluctantly let his grandmother go as he chuckled, "Can't have you peeing the bed now can we?"

June got up and went to her en-suite bathroom, she had just sat down on the toilet when Darmon entered. June smirked and then opened her legs to allow her grandson to see her pee, if he wanted to. Darmon saw his grandmother opening her legs and saw the stream start. He was glued to the sight and couldn't look away. June noted this for future reference; her grandson wasn't repulsed at seeing her piss. When the stream finished, June used a bunch of toilet paper to wipe herself. Get up, flush the toilet then wash her hands. When June turned towards her grandson, she saw he now standing to attention.

June giggled, moved to her grandson and kissed him with some passion. June grabbed his cock and stroked him a few times before breaking the kiss and knelt down to take him into her mouth. June bobbed up and down on his shaft. Both grandmother and grandson were moaning, before Darmon grabbed her head and pushed forcibly into her mouth. June gagged and Darmon thought he had hurt his grandmother and pulled back a little as June pushed the tip of her tongue into his piss hole. This set Darmon off as he flooded his grandmother's mouth with his seed.

June swallowed his load then licked his cock clean. Darmon was concerned, "Uhhh... Sorry, grandma. I think I might have been a little too rough. You know I don't like to be forceful, it reminds me too much of my father."

"Darling, you didn't hurt me. I was just surprised is all. You will never be like you father. I don't mind rough sex when we are in the throes of passion. What I won't tolerate is you using violence as a method of control for sexual gratification," June clarified for the benefit of her grandson.

"If your women don't like what you are doing or did then they would evoke rule five, where they will simply tell you 'No' to that action in the future. These rules are there to protect you and your women, darling. Respect them!" June stated.

"Uhm, grandma. Would you like me to return the favor?" Darmon asked.

June giggled, "Oh, so I can get to see you pee now and then you want to eat my pussy?"

June's giggling soon turned into chuckles, "The pussy eating can wait until later, darling. Since you kindly offered, I would love to see you pee."

Darmon was stunned as this wasn't what he referring to, certainly the pussy licking was offered, but hadn't considered his grandmother meant her witnessing him pee as he had done to her. June grabbed his cock and lead him to the toilet bowl and aimed his cock down. Darmon wouldn't release for a few minutes as his grandmother giggled. Darmon had to concentrate on something other than his grandmother's hand holding his cock before he started his stream. All the while, June was holding him and directing the flow. When the flow stopped she shock it a couple of time then used toilet paper to ensure any drops were taken care of. Washed her hands again, brushed her teeth and got her grandson a new toothbrush to use himself.

After brushing their teeth, June French kissed her grandson and after they broke the kiss it was June who said, "I would love for us to return to bed and stay longer, darling, but I need to get breakfast going. We have a houseful of women to ensure we keep happy. Your aunts are probably horny after hearing us last night. I expect your sisters might be in a state also."

"After breakfast, I along with your aunts will take one or two of your sisters shopping. This is their new home now and we'll make sure they have everything they need now. Use the time with whoever remains to grow your bonds and mend broken fences," June told her grandson.

June started to put on her nightwear and dressing gown, looked over at her man, "If something happens, don't fight it, darling. If you want her as your woman then let her know, don't force her and me mindful of her needs. That is all the advice I can give you."

"Grandma, do you want me to do that? I mean add her to our 'family love'," Darmon inquired.

"Yes, darling. Each of your sisters and later you mother, I want added as your women. You will need to show them what true love is and show them another way, other than what your father subjected them to. If you can mend the damage your father inflicted, they, I can guarantee you will willingly join. Just trust me on this, darling."

June left after another quick kiss. Darmon was left to ponder why his grandmother was so sure they would willing join, he was sure that his sisters still resented or hated him for how their father had used him against them. Darmon dressed and then went to the dinning room.

When Darmon arrived to the dinning room, he was alone so sat at the head of the table. Darmon could hear some humming, whispers and giggles from the kitchen. It didn't take long before his sisters came down for breakfast.

Darmon's sisters spotted him and one by one they came up to their brother and hugged him as well as kiss him on the cheek. Darmon was surprised and glad at the same time, knowing his sisters might not hate him as much as he thought they would. Darmon's sisters could see the smile on their brother's face and smiled back at him.

This exchange was witnessed by June and her daughters who looked at each other and smiled. In fact, Mary and Amber actually gave each other a high-five, this was of course only witnessed by their mother.

As Marcy, Emily and Natasha sat down at the table, June and her daughters brought out breakfast. After they placed the food on the table, they each approached Darmon and gave him a deep wet French kiss. June was first, followed by Mary and then Amber. Darmon's sisters witnessed this and could see there was nothing to fear and the thoughts that their brother was forcing their grandmother and aunts were dashed. Amber took it to the next level when she clearly sat in her nephews lap with her legs straddling his lap and made out with him for a good couple of minutes.

It was June that stopped this with a cough to indicate that breakfast should start now. Reluctantly, Amber broke the kiss, got off her nephew's lap and wiped her mouth clean. Amber leaned down to whisper in her man's ear, "Honey, we need to talk later, if that's okay with you!" Darmon just nodded.

During breakfast, it was Mary who offered to take the girls shopping, "Girls, with you now going to live here permanently, we thought it best to go shopping for anything you might need. For this trip, Mom, my sister and I will like to initially take two of you so that we can all travel in one car. I will leave it to you girls to decide who goes and who stays. Darmon will not be going with us and whoever stays will have be here alone with their brother."

June then added, "Have the discussion between yourselves and get ready. We plan to leave in an hour."

Everyone departed after breakfast, with Mary and Amber putting the dishes into the dishwasher then going to get ready. When Marcy, Emily and Natasha had left, June come up to her grandson, "When we leave, you will have about 4 to 5 hours. Don't force whoever stays, just be mindful she might not want to do too much for now. Show her you care and that she is safe now. Show her that you are a better man than your father is. When we get back, your aunts will need to talk to you as will I."

Darmon looked into his grandmother's face, cupped her cheek in his hand, nodded then tenderly kissed her.

Darmon's sisters were in Marcy's bedroom.

Marcy being the eldest opened the discussion, "So who's staying, if neither of you want to stay then I will. Gods, I need to show our brother how sorry I am. He went out of his way to save us from dad." It not surprising when both of her sisters also offered to stay behind.

Emily also offered, "I'll like to stay also. There is much I need to make up for too."

"You have no idea how bad I felt, I was closer to him than you both being nearly the same age. While you all did what you had to do, I kept him company, until I also abandoned him. I need to explain and win his love back," Natasha said.

Marcy sighed, "We're at an impasse then. How do we resolve this?"

"We could use the old childish method of rock, paper, scissors," Emily offered. Both of her sisters looked at her oddly and couldn't find another alternative that would work.

"I suppose, it will have to do for now, although this is a silly way to resolve this," Marcy offered her opinion.

It turns out that Emily won and it was decided that she would stay with her brother.

Marcy and Natasha, feeling a little down they didn't win, got dressed and went to wait in the living room. They saw their brother in his swimming trunks sitting on the couch. Darmon looked up and noted that Emily wasn't dressed and would be the one staying.

June, Mary and Amber arrived before the sisters could sit. It was Mary who came over to her nephew this time and made out with him until June prompted her it was time to leave. Darmon's grandmother and aunt Amber kissed him before gathering the girls to go shopping.

Emily and Darmon were left alone in the living room and an awkward silence descended. Neither of the siblings knew how to break the ice and were afraid to say or do the wrong thing. It was Darmon after more than 5 minutes of silence broke it, "I'm sorry!"

Emily looked up at her little brother and asked, "Sorry?"

Darmon also looked at his sister before responding, "Yeah, I didn't know. Mom or any of my sisters wouldn't tell me what was going on. I didn't understand what I did to any of you that would cause everyone to avoid me. If I had known then maybe, I could have done something to help?"

Emily sighed, "I'm sorry too for the way I treated you after my 18th birthday. You wouldn't have been able to stop our father. He had your future and ours in the palm of his hand. He knew how much mom and we loved you and used that against us."

"That might be so. I, agree that, might not have been able to stop dad, but at least I would've known. Do you know how I felt when I came home early to find my family fucking and dad fucking my girlfriend? I felt betrayed and until mom told me the full story, felt that you all wanted to fuck each other without caring about me. I then understand why dad hated me and why you all avoided me, I wasn't needed, dad always wanted me gone so you could all fuck in peace." Darmon sobbed.

"I just wanted to be happy with mom, my sisters and even dad too," Darmon continued with tears now rolling down his face.

Emily was overcome with emotions and could see, from her brother's point of view, what he witnessed could've been viewed that way. Emily quickly rose up and threw herself at her brother to embrace him as she too started to cry, "You are needed, we all needed you to be safe. Dad forced us and warned us that if you found out then he would have no choice to follow through with his threat. With you gone and us not knowing how you were doing he would then have free access to us all, forever."

Darmon sobbing and in a broken voice, "Where do we go from here?"

"I don't know, little brother, but I do know that is that I want to be near you, and never want to see dad ever again," Emily clung to her brother so that both could comfort the other. The siblings both cried until Darmon overcome with emotions kissed his sister tenderly on the lips. Emily pulled back in shock.

Darmon thought he saw disgust in his sister's face, stammered, "Sorry!". He, quickly, got up to run away again, but was stopped as Emily grabbed his arm to stop him leaving. Emily stood up and leaned up to kiss her brother, tenderly to show him how she felt.

When they broke the kiss a minute later, it was Emily who was further surprised, "Wow, that's felt a lot nicer when not forced."

Darmon actually laughed, "Yeah, everything feels a lot better when love is involved. Sis, go changing into your swimwear, then we can have some fun in the pool," Darmon said whilst he was trying to hide his hard cock from his sister, not wanting to cause her any stress.

Emily giggled and skipped away to go change. Darmon went to the pool and sat on a lounge hoping his cock would go down before Emily returned. Emily came to the pool 5 minutes later, in a revealing bikini and Darmon who had just managed to get his cock under control gave a silent groan. Emily picked the sun lounge next to her brother then asked, "Do you mind if I ask you some questions, little brother?"

"Sure, if I can also be allowed to ask questions in return, not that I have any at the moment, but some might pop into my head."

"Sure, I don't mind." Emily paused to settle her mind before asking, "Mom, already told us that us that you spotted us and her talk with you. We knew mom asked you get grandma and our aunts. What isn't know is how you managed it?"

Darmon laughed, "Mom, didn't know that grandma, grandpa and our aunts also had a secret. Grandma, called it 'family love' and there are rules governing it and before you ask I won't go into the rules, I feel that should come from grandma later depending on a choice we both have to make, later. We covered that a little during the phone call to mom."

"It's funny really, mom sent me here to seduce grandma and our aunts to make sure dad couldn't get them like he got you, mom and our sisters. Mom did this all with a view to saving you all from dad. I couldn't do it, and didn't want to act like dad to force grandma and our aunts. I tried to get mom to allow me back home. It turns out that grandma and our aunts were trying to seduce me from the first day I arrived."

"It should be noted that as part of the 'family love' circle a single male is appointed as head of the family and grandma and our aunts were just going to use me for fun. Dad was going to be approached to be head of the family and as such he would have had his mother and sisters and

didn't need to get mom, you or our sisters to seduce them as per dad original plan. It turns out that dad wasn't fit to be head of the family and grandma made me the heir as fill that role."

"Well, you heard about that, and knew I accepted the deal, so in a twist of fate I did complete mom's request in a roundabout way. Which has secured my place so that dad can't use the wealth he has access to against me or or any of you. It also allowed me to get grandma to rescue my sisters."

"Wow, not sure I could have made up that soap opera drama, even if I could," Emily said laughing. "Little brother, you're not forcing them, right?"

Darmon sighed, "I know why you're asking that considering you whole sexual experience to date has been dad forcing you. Do grandma and our aunts looks like they are being forced?"

"Well, not really. You could still be doing it, and manipulating them somehow or even blackmailing them," Emily responded.

"Sis, I would never force anyone to do something they are against. I will never hurt grandma, aunt Mary, aunt Amber or even any of my sisters. I am not dad and I don't care for the accusation!" Darmon said with some edge in his voice.

Emily looked at her brother to check for any signs of deception and found none. She quickly said to cover, "I'm sorry, Darmon. I had to ask. I didn't believe you were anything like dad, it's just that I can't live like this if you're just another replacement for dad, forcing and taking what you want just because you feel you can or it's your given right to do so."

Darmon toned his voice down as he continued, "Sorry sis, I will never force you or anyone. I will show you love to counter whatever our father has done to each of you. Enough of that, let's swim. Will you join me big sis?"

Emily quickly got and and run towards the pool, shouting, "Last one in has to do whatever the winner asks." Emily then laughs out loud as jumps into the pool. Darmon quickly follow in after his sister.

As Darmon resurfaces, he grabs his sister around the waist, laughing, "Cheater!"

Darmon starts to tickle his sister. Emily is squealing in delight and trying to get away from her brother. There were a few accidental touches, that had Darmon getting hard and Emily getting aroused. During the play fighting brother and sister came together. Their lips touched each other's in a tender kiss that soon progressed to a deep French kiss. Emily could feel her brother's hard cock

press against her as they kissed and when Darmon moved his hand to hold her ass, Emily broke the kiss and pulled away.

Darmon thought he had fucked up until Emily saw the look on his face. Emily spoke to her brother tenderly, "Darmon, it's not you, it's me. I'm not ready for that, yet. I'm sorry if that disappoints you, I just don't want to be used like dad used me."

"No, No, I'm sorry. I already told you I would never force you. My arousal got the better of me. I won't do that again, until you want me to," Darmon said to defend his actions.

Emily giggled, "I know, little brother. Just be patient, it will happen and when it does I hope it will wash away all the bad memories I have of what I had to do. You will you just give me a little more time?"

Darmon just nodded before suggesting, "Why don't we dry off and get some sunbathing in before the other's return?"

"Okay!" Emily replied.

Both Darmon and Emily got out and dried with fresh towels, then applied suntan lotion. Emily applied the lotion to Darmon's back and Darmon in turn Emily's back, with neither doing anything that could cause concern for the other.

"Well, since you lost the game. As my prize, I would like to share your lounge with you and rest my head within your embrace," Emily asked as the winner of the pool game.

Darmon laughed, "Cheater! Since, that is rather tame for what you could have asked me, I will honor the winner's request."

Emily cuddled up next to her brother, who kissed her forehead before both dozed off.

June, her daughters and granddaughters were having a great time shopping. They had purchased quite a few things, which included new clothing.

When they stopped for lunch, June, Mary and Amber saw the concerned looks on Marcy's and Natasha's faces. Amber jokingly asked, "Why the faces, who died?"

June quickly responded with a chuckle, "With any luck, my son Edward."

Both Marcy and Natasha said loudly together, "Grandma!"

June laughed, "Sorry, sorry. I had to try and lighten the mood. Still what seems to be the issue, sweeties?"

Marcy and Natasha looked at each other then back at their grandmother before Marcy spoke, "We're worried about Emily."

June asked, "Why?"

"Well, we're worried about her safety and don't want her hurt," Natasha said.

Marcy's face took on a hard look and she almost shouted, "Emily, really. You only care about your sister, what of your brother? Do you hate your brother that much, was it a mistake for him to rescue you?"

Both Marcy and Natasha looked at their aunt Mary and saw she was angry. Amber laid a hand on her sister's arms and June sighed heavily. This caused, Marcy and Natasha to start to cry.

June sighed again, "If you're asking if your brother will force or do anything to hurt his sister then you don't know the man your brother is. Why would your brother hurt any of you? To get back at you for ignoring him all this time? If he wanted to hurt you, he would have left you with your father. On the day, he accepted the position of head of the family, he tasked me rescue you all. Why would your brother do that since his future was already secure? Darmon has already told you that he loves you all. It saddens me to see you think so lowly of him."

Amber continued, "When we get back later this afternoon. Question your sister and see how they act around each other. My sister loves him, as do mom and I. You have to understand that Darmon is your brother as much as Emily is your sister. Do you honestly think that it is only you and your sisters that have suffered? No, Darmon has had everything he cared for taken away from him. His mother,

his sisters and every single girlfriend he had. Mom, Mary and I are doing everything we can to heal him. If you still hold resentment for him, then mom will help you relocate someplace else, it is better you break his heart now than down the line if you can't get past that resentment."

Marcy and Natasha were shocked and had never consider things from their brothers point of view. Their grandmother and aunts had clearly seen everything. Marcy and Natasha cried and in a shaky voice it was Marcy that answered, "No, we don't want to leave."

After the girls and Mary had calmed down they ordered lunch and called it a day as everyone was clearly not feeling up to continue shopping. They drove back home around 2pm.

The drive back was in silence as everyone had somethings to figure out. The entered the house and dropped the purchases on the couches in the living room. Mary who was still pissed went off to make drinks for everyone.

June, Amber, Marcy and Natasha went to the pool where they spotted Emily in the embrace of her brother. Emily had an leg and arm over her brother. She had a smile on her face as she slept. Darmon had a protective arm around his sisters shoulder drawing her close.

Amber looked over at her nieces, "Tell me does that look like your brother forced her or hurt her? Please don't judge or tar your brother with the same brush as your father. Get to know him and you will see for yourselves."

June looked at the pair sleeping then moved down to kiss both her grandchildren's forehead's before saying, "What you see here is the healing process that Darmon and Emily needed."

Before, Marcy or Natasha could respond, Darmon stirred awake as he felt the kiss on his forehead. Darmon's stirring, awoke a groggy Emily, who didn't know other's were present to lean up and tenderly kiss her brother. Both Darmon and Emily heard the gasps before Emily shot up off her brother to look at who was there. June laughed and Amber chuckled.

"Welcome back. So how did the shopping trip go? What time is it?" Darmon inquired, not phased with what they had just witnessed. Emily had a deep blush though, who quickly got off the lounge and moved away from her brother. Marcy and Natasha dragged their sister away and Emily wasn't sure if they were cross with her.

Darmon was left with his grandmother and aunt. It was Amber who chuckled, "Damn, honey, you certainly work fast." Darmon chuckled and shrugged his shoulder and before he could say anything Mary arrived with drinks.

Mary had a edge to her voice as she asked, "Where are my nieces?"

Darmon sensed something was off and got up took the tray of drinks from her, passed them to Amber then kissed his aunt. Mary melted in his arms and her anger slipped away. "Look, I don't know what's happened and you can fill me on that later. Since, my sisters aren't around, maybe we can talk like you all wanted."

"Yes, that might be good. First starters, we all heard mom and you having sex last night. My sister and I were, both, horny hearing you. Before, if my sister or I got horny we would make love ourselves. It was a little hard last night because the rules govern us and my sister and I couldn't help each other like we would have previously. We have already told you that my sister and I are in love and this loves doesn't supersede the love we have for you. You will always be first for both of us. What my sister and I are asking for is permission to continue being lovers even if you aren't available."

June watched her grandson as her daughter asked for permission. She knew that Darmon could stop this, but was hoping he would allow it. Amber was also waiting for her nephew's response.

Darmon took a deep breath before answering, "I had already told you that I didn't want to stop this, but I still don't like that I won't be included. I have no problem any of my women showing love in the form of kissing and maybe light fondling. Tell you what, if I am with another or not, and you both feel horny then come to me. Even, if I don't do anything with you I at least will witness your love making and won't feel you are doing this behind my back. I've had enough of dad doing things behind my back, he stole my family and my girlfriends. I don't want to lose or be betrayed again." Darmon was clearly upset at the memories of his betrayal.

Mary and Amber, looked at each other and hadn't considered that approach and nodded. June was smiling. Mary simply responded, "Agreed!"

Amber now voiced the next topic, "Since, that has now been resolved, and if we had known last night about coming to see you anyway, then we could have seen you making love to mom. This now brings us you mom. Both Mary and I would like to continue having a sexual relationship with mom."

Darmon looked over at his grandmother then back to Amber, before responded, "Like I said to you both. I don't want to stop your relationship with your mom. The same would apply here, I would like to be a part of it and ask that you don't do this behind my back. If and when I take on more women and you want to be intimate with them then please ask me first and always include me. I don't think I'm asking a lot from you all. I will try to be as understanding as I can."

All three women said simultaneously, "Agreed!"

To seal the agreement, Darmon gave each a deep French kiss. Darmon realized he hadn't eaten lunch and asked, "Uhhh, any chance for a snake or something, Emily and I haven't eaten lunch."

Mary laughed, "Anything for my man." Mary then went off to make something for her nephew and niece. June and Amber also left to go put on swimwear to spend time around the pool. Darmon was left to ponder why his sisters dragged Emily away.

The sisters lead Emily to her room.

"What the fuck did we just witness?" Marcy asked.

"Sis, did he force you?" Natasha also asked.

Emily looked at both of her sisters as if both had grown an extra head. Emily was angry now, "DARMON'S NOT LIKE DAD!"

In a more calmer voice, Emily continued, "Did you know that when he came home early from camp he saw us all fucking and dad fucking his girlfriend while she was eating mom. Do you know what he told me? He felt betrayed and that we didn't care about him. He felt unwanted just as dad always made him feel. He thought dad was always sending him away so that his family could fuck without him and not caring about him. He told me after he caught us that was why we hated him because when he was around it stopped the fucking family fun."

Emily broke down and cried, "All he ever wanted was his family, he wanted mom to love him and us to see him, if we didn't hold any love for him." Emily knew the last bit was more her reading between the lines.

Emily continued to sob, "He kissed me with so much love, it wasn't aggressive like dad, it was tender. I got scared and pulled back. The fool thought he had fucked up and went to leave. He never once tried forcing himself on me. I stopped him myself and kissed him back."

"When we got to the pool, I accused him of blackmailing or manipulating grandma and our aunts. He was appalled at the accusation and told me about grandma's 'family love'. He said he would never hurt or force any of us, that included grandma and our aunts."

"Did you know that dad was going to be offered the position of head of the family, and then he would have had mom, us, grandma and our aunts like he always wanted. When grandma found out about his nature and how he corrupted his family, grandma made our brother head of the family."

Emily continued to sob, "He's not like dad. He told me to view grandma and our aunts to see if we think he has forced them." Marcy and Natasha recalled the conversation at lunch today and knew that their brother didn't force them.

Emily collapsed to the floor and held her head in her hands, "How can you think our brother is like that? He is kind and caring. I felt loved and protected in his embrace. Both of you can fucking believe whatever you want, all I know is that I'm not leaving his side. Here this out, if you want to still think he just like dad, during playing around in the pool, we kissed again and it turned more passionate. He tried to touch my ass and I pulled back telling him I'm not ready for that. He said sorry and promised to not do it again until I was ready myself. If that was dad, he would have forced himself upon us."

"What you witnessed was me being content, safe and protected. I slept alongside him and not once did he try to take advantage. You saw me kiss him, did I look like I was forced to do that?" Emily said as she wept.

Marcy and Natasha decided to comfort their sister. Both were wondering, was their brother really different than their father. They honestly believed that Darmon only rescued them so he could have them like their father does.

Whilst they were comforting their sister, Mary came to get Emily, so she could eat. Mary saw how upset Emily was and went over to her niece.

"Honey, your brother told me that neither of you had eaten yet. Your brother hoping you would join him for lunch. Will you go to him and enjoy being with him?" Mary asked. Emily got up, wiped her face and went to see her brother to eat lunch with him.

Mary turned on her nieces, "So this is how you care about your sister? You make her cry because she's happy for a change. We're going to be at the pool, change into swimwear if you want to join or not, I just don't fucking care anymore. I'm going to ask mom to find a different place for you both."

Marcy and Natasha burst into tears, as their aunt just left them to go change.

Darmon was lay on a sun lounger with a contented Emily cuddled up with him. June, Mary and Amber were also on their own sun loungers, and were all looking towards the siblings, smiling at how close they were getting.

It was a good 40 minutes later that Marcy and Natasha joined them. Darmon looked over at his sisters and saw the dark circles around their eyes and could easily tell they had been crying. Emily looked over and saw this also.

Darmon got up quickly and went over to his sisters and drew both into his embrace. With their heads against each side of their brother's neck the girls cried and their tears fell onto his neck and chest. Darmon just comforted them, not knowing what was happening.

When the sobbing got less, Natasha sobbed, "Please don't send us away." Darmon was puzzled, and was asking himself why would he send them away, when he only just got them back. He looked over at his grandmother and aunts. June and Amber had upset looks and Mary was clearly angry.

Darmon pulled back a little and moved his sisters so he could looking at both their faces at the same time, "Why would you think I would send you away?"

Marcy looked at her aunt Mary and then back at her brother before saying, "Aunt Mary, said she was going to get grandma to send me and Natasha away."

Darmon broke the hold he had on his sisters to spin around and look at aunt Mary clearly getting angry, "Why?"

Mary chuckled, "To teach them a lesson, honey."

Darmon was seriously pissed, "WHAT?"

Amber quickly got up and held her nephew to stop him from doing something silly or saying something everyone will regret later. Mary instead turned her attention back to Marcy and Natasha, "Do you see how your brother is angry at me? He loves me, yet he clearly care for his sisters. Do you now see how much you mean to your brother? If he didn't care for you he wouldn't be this angry."

June then added, "Sweeties, my daughter made herself out to be the bad woman in this, so you could learn a lesson. Your brother isn't like you father, he cares for your well being. Had this been your father, I suspect, he wouldn't care and still take what he wanted, anyway."

Mary then got up and went to embrace her nieces, "I'm sorry, I had to do that. Your brother loves you, we all love you. You needed to know and see how your brother would get angry with someone he loves over you."

Darmon was still puzzled and asked, "What's going on?"

There followed a discussion on the conversation at lunch during the shopping trip and then between the sisters back in Emily's room. Darmon then sort of understood.

He went over to his aunt Mary, leaned down to kiss her, "I'm sorry, I was angry at you. Will you, you sister and grandma join me later this evening?"

Mary quickly got up and pushed her nephew back to a sun lounger and straddled his hips before making out with him. Emily looked on with some jealousy, which Amber noticed. Amber placed a hand on her niece's arm, leaned in to whisper, "When you're ready, your brother will claim you also. There's no need to feel jealous, he has plenty of love to for all of us, including your sisters and your mother when she is free of your father."

Emily had a look of shock on her face, she had never consider her mother would want to be with her brother also.

Darmon laughed when his aunt broke the kiss, saying, "I take that as a yes then."

Mary also laughed, "Rule two, honey. Rule two."

After this near meltdown, Darmon spent the remainder of the afternoon with Marcy and Natasha.

"Marcy, Natasha. I will never force you against your will. If you feel I am doing something that you don't agree with then I will listen. Before, you tell me to stop with grandma and our aunts that is one thing that I cannot give up. They need me and it would hurt them to deny them intimacy."

Darmon's sisters Marcy and Natasha just nodded, each looking inwardly for answers to the biggest question, "Can their brother be trusted?" They had already seen how their sister Emily had already accepted her brother. Where they afraid to finally have the love they had always wanted from their little brother?

Everyone had fun in and out of the pool, until Mary and Amber, this time went to go make dinner. June watched, smiled and laughed as the siblings would play around in the pool. Emily never went too far from her brother, which her sisters looked on with some envy. Darmon on his part tried to give each of his sisters the same amount of time. Sometime during the horsing around in the pool, Darmon's sisters would jump their brother and small pecks on the lips were had. Emily's kisses went a little longer and deeper and, Darmon, true to his word, never took advantage even if he had a hard-on for most of the time.

Amber, shouted to everyone in or around the pool, dinner would be ready in 40 minutes, so time to go shower and get ready for dinner.

Marcy and Natasha got out and started to walk to their bedrooms to shower. June was just about to ask her grandson to join her when she heard Emily make a request, "Little bro, come with me, please." Emily dragged her brother by the hand towards her bedroom.

June stayed behind for a few minutes, then went over to kitchen. Mary and Amber were preparing a side salad. Amber looked up, "Mom!"

June laughed, "I'm okay darling. Emily's going to fall first it seems. I was going to ask Darmon to shower with me and have a little fun before tonight's main action, but the little minks beat me to it."

Mary and Amber both laughed, before Mary said, "Soon, we will have to share him, mom. I hope he can keep up with our libidos."

Emily dragged her brother along with her to her bedroom, laughing in glee. When they got to her bedroom, she locked the bedroom door. Darmon saw this and raised his eyebrow. Emily giggled, "Don't get your hopes up too much, little brother. I just don't want to be interrupted."

"So what actually is and isn't on the menu?" Darmon jokingly asked.

"We can shower together. I'm not ready for full on sex, but can allow some fooling around. Please don't push me for more, right now," Emily stated and made a request. Emily stripped off her bikini and stood naked before her brother. Darmon quickly followed and pulled his trunks down.

For the first time ever, Darmon got a good look at his sister. She was a little bit plump and was slightly shorter than mom. Emily had small breasts with small pink areola's and dark pink nipples, which stood proud from her breasts. As Darmon was taking in the beauty of his sister, he heard a big gasp, "Fuck! You're certainly bigger than dad."

"Emily, I love you, but can I please ask you not bring up dad when we're naked together. I don't want to be reminded that dad, had you first and what he put you through," Darmon requested.

"Oh, umm, yeah, I'm sorry, little bro. It just slipped out and I don't really want to think about dad either. Right now, all I care about is you. Come join me in the shower," Emily asked.

Darmon and his sister entered the shower together, at first they just let the water wash over them before slowly moving together. It started with small tender kisses that got more passionate as they both got more aroused. Darmon was still afraid to go too far and didn't make a move to touch any intimate parts of his sister. Emily had to grab his hands and place them on her breasts before she got him to fondle them.

Darmon broke the kiss and went to kiss his sister on the neck to nibble, bite and suck on her neck. Darmon wanted to mark his sister as his. Emily was gasping and panting as she knew her brother was laying claim to her. Even if she, at the moment, wouldn't allow him full access. Darmon didn't care, to him this was proof that eventually she would be added to the 'family love' circle and be his woman.

Emily grabbed her brother's cock and started to stroke him. Darmon in turn moved down from her neck to her breasts where he took her right nipple into his mouth. Emily moaned as she stroked her brother's cock faster. It was Darmon's turn to moan. Darmon put his hand down to touch his sister's pussy brushing her clitoris, which pushed her over the edge. Emily screamed in orgasm and it was like nothing she had ever experienced with her father or any other family member. Seeing his sister orgasm also pushed Darmon over the edge and he spurted jet after jet of hot sperm all over her sister's stomach. Emily fell forward, into her brother's embrace, who cradled her against him.

Once Emily had caught her breath, she looked up with love shining in her eyes at her brother and kissed him. Nothing was said or needed to be said as they washed off the mess Darmon left on his sister. They used clean towels to dry. Darmon watched his sister get ready for dinner, admiring her body. When she was nearly dressed Darmon excused himself, picked up his trunks and walked naked to his bedroom to get changed himself. The usual attire for dinner and after dinner fun was always in nightwear.

June did catch Darmon walking naked to his bedroom and just raised her eyebrows and chuckled.

Dinner was pleasant and everyone enjoyed it. They all saw the mark Darmon had left on his sister.

June giggled and looked towards her grandson, "Tell me darling. Is this the new norm? You will always mark your women?"

Darmon chuckled, "Why not? It's my mark for everyone to see that this woman belongs to someone else. I won't even need to do anything, as she would do more than reject a pass from a man or woman. I will not dominate my women and they are free to do whatever they want, I just know they will not betray me."

June chuckled, "Darling, what if your women want to be dominated sometimes?"

Darmon laughed, "If it just a fantasy and done during intimate contact then I will and can do it, but I promise, I will not use it to get any of you to do or give up your rights for just a quick fix or to satisfy an ego. I promise, I will not do what dad did."

Amber tried to bring the subject back to the mark and asked, "So, with the your mark on your sister, Emily. Is she yours now?" Amber smiled over at her niece, Emily.

"Auntie, why not ask her yourself. This way, none could say, that whatever I would decide, could be seen as manipulation, forcing her to follow my lead, or enforces my influence on her against her will," Darmon replied.

All heads and eyes turned towards Emily who blushed, before answering, "I am not ready for my brother to claim me fully, yet. Having said that I do wear his mark freely of my own will. My brother has not forced, blackmailed, or done anything that I didn't want myself."

Emily then looked at her sisters, "All you have to do is open your hearts to our brother. You will soon see what a difference love makes in a relationship. Just know that soon, Darmon will claim me fully and with it purge dad from my heart and mind."

"Wow, that got a bit heavy, but I agree with Emily here. Darmon isn't like your father, give him a chance to change your views on what a real relationship should be like. I did spot you both kissing him. You have only to see how Emily is around him to know this," Mary added to the conversation.

June laughed, "Movie time!"

After dinner and the dishes put into the dishwasher everyone settled in for another movie, only this time it was Emily and June who clung to Darmon. Instead of cards this time, they all played a board game. The fun times, soon came to an end and it was time for bed. Emily was reluctant to let her brother go, but she knew that he was due to spend this night with her grandmother and aunts.

Darmon gave each of his sisters a goodnight kiss, even Marcy and Natasha held the kiss longer, this time. Their views were changing. Emily went all out and went straight for a deep French kiss that lasted a couple of minutes. It was Mary that eventually pulled her nephew away from her niece and then dragged him towards her mom's bedroom, which had the bigger bed. Marcy, Emily and Natasha watched their brother being dragged away, before each turning towards their own bedrooms. They already knew that sleep would allude them while their brother, grandmother and aunts made love.

Mary was giggling as she pulled her nephew to the bed and put his back to the headboard. June, Mary and Amber stood facing him at the bed and each stripped naked.

"Sorry, darling. Next time, you can undress us. It seems my daughters want to put on a show for you, if you are okay with it," June said to placate her grandson.

Mary looked towards her mom and then to her nephew, "Honey, we want to include mom in this. We want to show you the love we have for each other, before you became our man. You can join in at anytime you want."

Darmon nodded to acknowledge acceptance.

"Remember, honey, you have the right to stop this with mom at anytime and we will immediately. This isn't just about our pleasure, it's also about yours. You are the head of the family now," Amber added to make it clear that Darmon could stop all this at anytime he desired.

"Darling, you can play with yourself, but save your cum to be deposited inside us. More so, your aunts. I want to hold and love the next generation of this family," June stated.

Darmon chuckled, "So you want me to knock up my aunts, grandma? How do my aunts feel about that?"

It was Mary who answered both questions, "Mom, wouldn't have suggested it if Amber and I didn't feel we were ready for this. We would have gladly had dad's babies, but that wasn't possible. When you claimed us we told you, we were ready and knew you could get us pregnant and were prepared for it, honey."

Darmon got serious, "What about what I want? What if I'm not ready to be a father yet?"

June sighed and it was Amber who responded, "Then we will take the morning after pill and go on birth control until you are ready. Just know that both Mary and I are getting older and would like to have our own babies to love and cherish."

Darmon continued in a serious tone, "I'm sorry." June and her daughters face dropped thinking their man didn't want to start a family with them. "I had to make sure you weren't disregarding me own feelings on this. I may be young, but who am I to deny the requests of those I love. If you want babies growing inside you then I would be happy to put them there. If you don't get pregnant immediately, then think of all the fun we can have getting you there."

Mary laughed, "Who's to say we can continue making love even after we are pregnant. I'm told most men, loving making love to pregnant women, especially, if they know it's there baby inside them. For a moment, I seriously thought you were going to deny us this and I was scared."

Darmon got up and went to kiss his aunt Mary. Not to be left out June and Amber also wanted to be kissed. Whilst the women were laughing, they pushed Darmon back onto the bed to rest against the headboard again.

"Darling, with that out of the way. We're going to put on a little show for you. We hope you enjoy this show and you can join in at anytime," June advised her grandson.

June, Mary and Amber, who were naked facing each other. Mary leaned in to kiss her mother tenderly for a few minutes then repeated the same to her sister. Amber then took control, she also kissed her mother then sister. Mary then started to kiss her sister's neck, to bite and suck on it.

Darmon spotted this, "Auntie, I know you are in love with your sister, but please don't mark her as yours."

Mary immediately stopped, "Sorry, honey. It was a force of habit and something I used to do when it was only mom and my sister, after dad's passing. We would also mark each other as we had within the 'family love' bond. It won't happen again."

"No, No, don't get me wrong. I have no problem with it, if my women ask first. Sometimes, I will allow it, but I feel this is something that is only for me, to tell the world that you are mine. Not that the world needs to know that the women in my family are my mine. It is more for me to know that when someone sees my mark then I would take pride in knowing you're mine," Darmon admitted.

June looked at her daughters then her grandson, "Agreed!"

Mary returned to kissing her sister's neck this time and not leaving her mark, this progressed to gently taking Amber's earlobe into her mouth to gently pull with her teeth. Amber was moaning and panting with desire. June moved up to play with both her daughters' breasts. June gently pushed her daughters together as Mary moved from her sister's neck and ear to French kiss her. Both sisters' breasts mashed together. June pulled both her daughter's breasts out and latched onto both nipples sucking them into her mouth. June looked over at her grandson to see his reaction as both her daughters moaned into each other's mouths.

June then placed her hands on each of her daughters' butts to caress and slide her hand in-between the cracks of their asses. Both Mary and Amber broke the kiss and the stimulation from having their mom sucking on their nipples and touching the rosebuds of her daughters set them both off, they moaned and panted loudly as their orgasm hit strong. June was surprised that their orgasms were stronger than usual, and wondered if it was because of having their nephew, their man, witness it.

Mary and Amber pulled their nipples out of their mother's mouth and pushed her against the bed, so she fell onto it, on her back. June managed to giggle before her daughter, Mary, locked lips with her in a deep French kiss. Amber, attacked her mother's tits, kissing, licking and then sucking on her mother's nipples.

There was a knock on the bedroom door, which caused Mary and Amber to look over at the door but continued to pleasure their mother. Darmon, got up and went to answer the door with his boxers tented from his hard-on.

Darmon was surprised to see his sister, Emily, at the door. "Darmon, can I please come in? I know I should be invited, but I need you to hold me, please!"

Darmon moved away from the door and gestured for his sister to come in. Emily was shocked to see her grandmother was being loved by her aunts. Emily heard the moans from her grandmother and was rooted to the spot, until her brother took her hand and lead her to the bed. The siblings then put their backs to the headboard to watch the show.

"How much do you want to do or willing to do, sis?" Darmon asked.

Emily looked at her brother, before responding, "I just want to be near you and don't want to interrupt any of you. Can I just watch, please?"

Darmon held his sister's head in his hand, turned her towards him before kissing her tenderly. "No one will force you. If you want you can be a participant. Whatever you are willing to do. Just know that I would be making love to them."

June, Mary and Amber had stopped their activity to see what was going on. When June saw her granddaughter, she laughed, "Welcome, Emily, sweetie. If you're here for your brother to claim you then my daughters and I will entertain ourselves."

Emily blushed, "Sorry, grandma. I want my brother really bad, but don't want to interrupt your time with him. I just want to be near him, so will just watch today." June, Mary and Amber, knew the girl had fallen hard for her brother and within the next day or two she would be joining the ranks of Darmon's women.

First June, then Mary, followed by Amber went to Emily and kissed her forehead. "If you want to be included, then don't hesitate, honey. Your brother would like nothing more, than to claim you," Mary told her niece. Emily blushed again and just nodded.

June lay back on the bed and spread her legs. Mary and Amber worked from each knee towards their mother's pussy, kissing, biting and sucking the inner flesh of their mother's thighs. When both got to their mother's pussy the attacked her labia from each side and both of Mary and Amber pushed their tongues together into their mother's pussy. June moaned loudly. Emily watched as her aunts

pleasured her grandmother and started to get very wet. Emily was aroused and put her hand down into her nightwear shorts to touch and play with her own pussy. Darmon saw his sister's hand move as she watched the action on the bed then looked back at his grandmother and aunts.

June scream in climax when both of her daughter licked each side of her clitoris. Darmon was horny and decided now was the time to get involved. As his grandmother recovered, he went over to Amber and took her in his arms before kissing her hard and deep. Amber melted into her nephew's arms.

Darmon broke the kiss and looked into his aunt's face, "I'm sorry, auntie. I need you now. You're probably horny yourself with the foreplay you did with grandma. I am sure there is plenty more that you haven't showed me, but I need to be inside you."

For the benefit of his sister, Darmon asked his aunt, "Aunt Amber, may I make love to you?" Emily heard the request and knew he wasn't like their father and actually care for his lovers.

Amber giggled, but understood it was for the benefit of Emily, responded, "Oh, you silly man. I've told you before I belong to you and will never deny you. So yes, make love to me my darling, nephew."

Darmon gently pushed his aunt on her back onto the bed then mounted her. He took his cock in hand and positioned it at the entrance to her vagina. Darmon looked deep into his aunts eyes as he slammed his cock in one hard thrust deep into his aunt pussy. Amber, lets out a scream of pleasure and climaxed as her nephew pushed up against her cervix.

June, Mary and Emily looked on with envy as they witness Amber scream in passion. Emily started to rub and insert fingers into her vagina, hoping to cum soon. June and Mary, looked over at the raw passion of aunt and nephew mating. June nudged her daughter to turn so they could get into a sixty-nine position. Darmon waited a minute before he started to fuck his aunt, with mother and daughter next to them starting to lick and eat each other out. Emily was panting heavily and her fingers were a blur inside her shorts. She was very close to an orgasm.

Darmon made love to his aunt and tried to time his orgasm with hers, soon Amber was pushing back at her nephew and raising her butt off the bed. When Darmon moved down and started to mark his woman, was the moment Amber lost total control and let out a scream as she shook and shuddered in orgasm. Darmon, felt her pussy clamp down hard on his cock as he pushed deep into his aunt and let out a volley of semen against the opening to her womb. Emily when she witnessed her brother and aunt orgasm nearly at the same time, lost the battle herself and moaned loudly as she too climaxed.

As Emily was recovering she had to admit this was nothing like what her father had subjected their family to. She witnessed actual love when her brother made love to aunt Amber, and wanted to be a part of it, but was still scared. What if her brother didn't like her pussy because their father was there first? Emily hadn't been with anyone else and wondered if her brother would accept her? What about her sisters could they accept this? She knew she loved her brother, not only as a brother, but as a woman loves a man. Would he accept her as she is? Would my brother save me?

Darmon was still hard inside Amber. When he looked over at his grandmother and aunt, they too reached orgasm, but it was more loud moans than the banshee cries when he is inside them.

Everyone moved apart from each other. Amber was still recovering from her nephew's intense love making. June recovered quickly and went to check on her granddaughter. June lay Emily's head against her naked breasts and cradled her granddaughter as she recovered.

Mary was still horny and need her nephew's cock, so pulled Darmon on top of her, put her hand down to grasp his cock line him up with her vagina. Mary locked her legs around her nephew's waist then pulled herself up to impale herself on his cock. Mary didn't climax straight away, because she had already cum multiple time. Mary would raise and lower her pelvis as she fucked herself on her nephew's cock. Soon the lust and passion overtook Darmon and he pushed his aunt down hard onto the bed before starting to fuck her with deep, hard thrusts. After a few minutes of this deep fucking, Mary dug her nails into her nephew's back and let out a banshee scream as she climaxed.

Darmon still embedded in his aunt, turned his aunt around then got her up on all fours. He started long deep thrusts into his aunt's pussy. Sweat glistened off his chest and head to drop onto his aunt's back. They fucked or made love for another 5 minutes before both were close to orgasm. Darmon lost the battle first and pushed in deep, before blowing his load as he was nudging her cervix. When Mary felt his cum enter and pool against her cervix, she let out another banshee scream and blacked out. As she fell forward, she took her nephew with her, which caused his cock glans to push hard up against her womb and her body shook into another orgasm.

Darmon afraid to smother his aunt, pulled out and fell to the side of his aunt. June and Emily witnessed this. Emily was in shock as she had never seen anyone have that strong an orgasm before. Her father had never made any of them, including his wife, her mother, scream and shout as his brother did to his aunts. June just looked on in pride of how their man made them feel.

After recovering, Darmon moved up the bed and lay next to his sister. "Grandma, I can make love to you also, but if you could possibly wait until I get some sleep, I would be grateful. I promise you I won't neglect you."

June actually chuckled, "Darling, I know you wouldn't and with a lot of women to satisfy it is understandable that you would need some rest. Normally, it would be only one or two at a time. This time you had to service the mature horny group. You asked for this, rule two, remember. Until you can gain more stamina, use this as a learning experience of sorts."

Darmon then turned to his sister, "So, sis. Would you like to stay here the night with us?"

Emily almost shouted, but said loudly enough, "Yes!"

In the end, Mary and Amber held each other as they went to sleep. Darmon held Emily to his left side and his grandmother on the right. June had her back to her daughters. All were naked, except for Emily. All that Emily cared about was she was going to sleep next to her brother and knowing everyone was naked was the least thing on her mind.

Marcy and Natasha, not knowing their sister had gone to see their brother, didn't get to sleep until the group making love did. They were both exhausted from fingering their pussies to orgasm, listening to their family making love and equally jealous that it wasn't them experience this joy. They both agreed to themselves they needed to get closer to their brother.

Chapter 5

Darmon awoke with a wet warm sensation surrounding his cock. He groggily opened his eyes and looked down. Emily still in her nightwear had his glans inside her mouth. Darmon moaned in pleasure, he could get used to waking up like this, he thought.

His vision was obscured by his sister's head and only spotted his naked grandmother to the side directing the action. Looking up slightly, he spotted, Mary behind her niece. Darmon looked to his right and saw his aunt Amber playing with her pussy as she watched a sister pleasure her brother.

Mary positioned herself behind Emily and looked over at her nephew for permission as she placed her hands on her nieces shorts to pull them down. Darmon gently shook his head and Mary went to remove her hands.

Emily had felt hands on the waist band of her shorts. Emily removed her brother's cock from her mouth, looked behind her and saw her aunt ready to pull down her shorts. Emily shook her head and said, "Auntie, I'm flattered you want to have access to my pussy, but I hope you would forgive me, if I tell you that I'm saving that for my brother first. I need my brother to claim me first."

Mary chuckled, "Of course, honey. I didn't mean to take away anything from you or my nephew. Would you at least allow me to share in the pleasuring of your brother?"

"I don't mind, auntie," Emily acknowledged the request made.

"Thank you, honey. Can I make another selfish request? When he cums inside you mouth will you share his cum with us?" Mary asked. Emily nodded then went back to taking her brother's glans into her mouth. Mary moved to the side of her nephew and started to lick the side of his cock and made room for her mother to get down to lick and suck his balls. Darmon was in heaven and was nearing his first load for the day, he moaned loudly. June wet her finger and teased her grandson's anus, putting pressure on his rosebud without actual penetration, which caused him to explode and fill his sister's mouth with his semen.

Emily's mouth was bloated full of her brother's cum, and as she pulled off him, quickly closed her mouth making sure not to spill a drop. Mary looked at her niece with a pleading look and Emily almost laughed when she saw the expression. Mary didn't give her a chance to change her mind and quickly moved her lips to her niece's, with open mouth pushed her tongue to take what she wanted. After Mary got her mouthful, June kissed her granddaughter next to get some of her grandson's cum, followed by Amber. With big smiles on each of their faces they turned to look at Darmon and gulped down the tasty cum. Tongues came out to lick any remains on their lips.

Darmon laughed, got up and pinned his grandmother down. "Grandma, I promised you I would attend to you since I couldn't last night."

Darmon proceeded to kiss his grandmother deeply as he placed his hands on her breast and gave them a gentle squeeze. June broken the kiss and giggled, "I know darling. How are you going to take me?"

Darmon smirked before answering his grandmother, "Grandma, you were in a playful mood this morning. If I hadn't cum would you have put your finger inside to massage my prostate? I feel fair plays in order, don't you think?"

June giggled more, "If you think that would be a punishment, darling, you would be sorely mistaken."

Darmon gently moved his grandmother from her back to her front on the bed and then lifted her by the hips so that she was on all fours. He gently swatted her right cheek, causing it to jiggle. June let out a squeal at her grandson's playful mood. Emily watched as she was getting aroused. She could see that her grandmother was offering up her anal hole willingly, and knew by the end of the day she would be her brother's in mind, body and soul. Emily was trying to figure out the best way to get her

sisters to witness it, but wasn't too bothered if she couldn't as she knew in her heart that she will be her brother's.

As Emily was pondering how to go about this, she nearly missed her brother going down on her grandmother. She looked over to see Darmon's hands were on each cheek pulling them apart, then with tongue out dive into the crevice.

Darmon went for his grandmother's rosebud, he licked gently with his tongue in an up down movement before swirling his tongue in a clockwise motion. June was moaning in delight and nearly shouted, but it came out as just a louder moan, the moan grew louder when her grandson gently pushed with his tongue to gain entry.

Darmon left her rosebud to move down to his grandmother's vagina where he licked around the opening. June was in heaven. She was used to getting eaten by her daughters, but having a man go down on her again was sure bliss to her mind. Darmon took her labia into his mouth and sucked on them gently, pulling his head back to stretch them before letting them fall from his mouth. He saw that his grandmother's clit was hard and poking out of it's hood.

June let out a banshee scream as her grandson attacked her clitoris as an orgasm ripped through her body.

Darmon looked over at his aunts, then asked, "Auntie, can you please pass me the lube? I don't want to hurt grandma." Amber went to her mother's bedside table to retrieve the tube of lube and hand it to her nephew.

"Thanks, auntie," Darmon said, as he pulled Amber into a kiss. Amber just melted into the embrace of her nephew and let out a moan of pleasure.

After kissing and releasing his aunt, Darmon opened the tube of lube and used one finger to apply the lube to his grandmother's rosebud. June continued to moan in delight as her grandson played around and pushed a single lubed finger into her sphincter. Darmon was amazed at how his grandmother could so easily take all of his finger inside with no effort. Darmon pulled out his finger and lubed, up two fingers before playing with and inserting them into his grandmother's asshole. June looked turned her head to look over her shoulder at her grandson with a look of pure lust on her face.

Emily saw this exchange, which only heightened her arousal. She was getting very horny and decided that with everyone else naked, she shouldn't be modest and stripped off her nightwear. She opened

her legs wide, so that all could see her shaved smooth pubic mound, with tight vulva that hid the puffy outer labia, her clitoris was erect and could be seen poking out.

Darmon looked over at his sister and wanted to go over to her and take her right there and then, but knew he has to service his grandmother. Darmon had made a promise and he wanted to ensure he never broke a promise, ever. Darmon removed both of his fingers from his grandmothers asshole, which caused his grandmother to groan at the loss.

Darmon used more of the lube to apply to his cock and then shuffled forward to place the head of his cock against her rosebud before gently applying pressure. Darmon started to sink in with June moaning and panting heavily. June was so glad she had taught her grandson about anal sex on his initiation. June chuckled to herself as she recalled how he was so sure he was hurting her, as he pushed in and nearly stopped his education by pulling out. Now June was so glad that her grandson had more confidence in his abilities and was turning out to be a great lover for his family.

Darmon remembered his grandmother saying, due to his size, that he should push in a little and wait before pushing in more. It took about 5 minutes before Darmon was fully seated inside his grandmother. Darmon leaned down to kiss his grandmothers back and neck. June moaned in pleasure and loved her grandson completely.

"Grandma, I'm going to start now," Darmon told his grandmother. June grunted and pushed back at her grandson to confirm acceptance. Darmon setup a steady pace and the sounds of loud flesh on flesh slapping was heard.

Emily started to play with her pussy and clit, watching her brother have anal sex with their grandmother. This sight turned her on more than seeing her father fuck any of them or when he fuck her brother's girlfriends. Emily was seeing what a difference true love could be like in a relationship and wanted that. She wanted that for for herself, her sisters and her mother.

June was starting to feel a orgasm approaching as she panted and moaned loudly. Mary and Amber also saw the sign and decided they needed to make sure their mother have the biggest, strongest orgasm ever. Amber looked over at her sister and both seemed to wordless know what each was saying. Amber quickly scooted down to lay on her back and moved her head below her mothers pussy. Mary moved to the front of her mother, opened her legs wide, getting ready to pull her mother's head against her pussy.

Amber lifted her head up and captured her mother's clit in her mouth and sucked hard. June's shrieks were drowned out as Mary pulled her mother's head hard against her pussy. The attack from her both her daughters and grandson pushed June over the edge. Her bowels clamped down hard on her grandson in a choke grip. This caused Darmon to unload into his grandmother's bowels.

Darmon slowly pulled out with his grandmother still in a haze of pleasure. June knew that he daughter was beneath her so fell to the side, panting heavily. "Thank you, darling. You certainly kept your promise. I love you!"

Darmon chuckled, "I love you too, grandma."

Emily lay limp on the bed and none of them saw or knew she had climaxed. Darmon watched his aunts not having climaxed yet, decided he needed to help. Mary still had her legs spread wide from having her mother's head between them. Darmon leaned over and started to attack his aunts clitoris, in random patterns, which brought his aunt to a crashing orgasm. Darmon left his panting and moaning aunt to spread open his other aunts legs before pushing his tongue deep into her vagina before bring it back to lick and suck on her clitoris. Amber screamed as she also had an orgasm.

Darmon waited a few minutes for everyone to recover before getting up to make sure his penis was clean, if he was going to fuck any of his women soon. Darmon knew that if he wasn't clean then there was a chance for the women to get an infection, especially after anal sex. Anal to mouth was okay but anal to pussy wasn't, his grandmother had told Darmon.

Darmon went to his sister and lifted her up and moved towards the bathroom to shower. Emily opened her eyes and looked at her brother carrying her. She nuzzled her head into her brother's neck and said loudly enough for everyone to hear, "I love you, little brother."

Darmon chuckled and kissed his sister on the forehead before responding, "I love you too, big sis. I hope you know I would do anything for you." The siblings turned on the shower and stepped in to wash away the sweat and fluids from the night and morning sex.

Back in the bedroom, mother and daughters were happy.

"Fuck! Our man can certainly fuck us," Mary responded. This caused the women to giggle.

"You know I fucking love that man," Amber stated.

June laughed, "That feeling is true for all of us, darling. More importantly, did you pass out Mary after he made love to you?"

"Oh, yes. Twice now," Mary answered.

"Twice?" June had a puzzled look at her daughter.

Amber laughed, "Yes, when she passed out first time, Darmon nearly shit himself thinking he killed her. It was when he claimed us both on the day we brought our nieces back."

"You've never done that before, darling. Not even with your father, right?" June was curious.

"No mom, dad never made me pass out. I don't know what it is about my nephew, but so far every time, he makes love to me and I feel his cum in me, I blacks out," Mary shrugged to indicate she didn't understand it either.

"Oh darling, our man is virile and his cum inside could start a new life in either or both of you. Your mind and body know this and is overloaded in pleasure hoping he does knock you up. Amber, have you also blacked out?" June said.

"No mom, I think I might have been close. I was very light headed when he made love to me and left his seed in me. Maybe, I will experience that one day," Amber answered.

"It doesn't matter, either way, darling. Just enjoy mating with our man. On a different note, Emily I feel is ready to be his. I would wager by the end of the day, Darmon would have claimed her as his. I'm going to pull her to one side, explain the rules to her and make sure she knows what it means for her brother to claim her. She will need to know she is committed to him for life," June advised her daughters.

"About fucking time, I say!" Mary chuckled.

Further talks were cut short as Darmon and Emily returned, fresh from the shower. Emily couldn't stop looking at her brother with pure adoration. June, Mary and Amber were quietly looking and knew Emily would be her brother's today.

"Emily, sweetie. After breakfast. Do you think you can spare me sometime?" June asked.

Emily briefly stopped looking at her brother to look at her grandmother before responding, "Of course, grandma."

It was Amber who laughed and got everyone moving, "I'm going to take my big sis to our bathroom to get showered and changed. Let's all meet for breakfast in 30 minutes."

With that said, Mary and Amber departed. June was left in the room with her grandchildren. "Let me go shower and changed then we can go make breakfast for everyone. I would offer you to come shower with me, darling, but I fear doing that might make Emily pout. Just relax both of you and I will be back in 10 minutes."

June left naked to go shower. Darmon and Emily, lay side by side on the bed. Emily was clinging to her brother as if someone would steal him away from her. Emily knew in her heart that he could never be exclusive to her and she will have to share him. Even the thought scared her, she was scared her brother would reject her since, she felt tainted somehow. Emily had tears in her eyes that were threatening to spill.

June came back in dried and put her nightwear on again. She looked over at her grandson and granddaughter who were still naked. "Darmon, Emily. Come on get up and changed please. Let's go to the dinning room."

Darmon and Emily reluctantly got up and changed before all three went off to the dinning room.

Mary and Amber, were already there with Marcy and Natasha helping prepare breakfast.

"Sweeties, good morning. I hope you slept well?" June said to Marcy and Natasha.

"We're good, grandma. Although, there were some noises that did keep us up for awhile," Marcy said and blushed when she saw her brother. Natasha was also blushing. Emily was in a very good mood and bounced into the kitchen.

Emily in a bubbly voice, "Need any help?"

Marcy and Natasha both looked at their sister and were trying to figure out if she spent the night with their brother? They both knew she hadn't slept in her room, or at least it appeared to be that way. They both, sort of, ruled that out because of the moans, panting, banshee screams and the

sound of flesh on flesh. Their brother was in their grandmother's room with grandma and their aunts. Marcy and Natasha, thought that their sister couldn't stand the sounds of sex, especially now, how she felt about their brother and was probably jealous, so moved to a different part of the house to get away from the sounds.

Breakfast was served 20 minutes later and everyone enjoyed it. After clearing up after breakfast, June addressed the group, "Emily, can we have that talk now, whilst the rest go get ready for some fun in the sun around the pool?"

Everyone responded, "Okay!" Darmon, Marcy and Natasha went to go get changed.

As Mary and Amber were about to leave, June addressed them, "Darlings, can you just help me with something in the kitchen before you go off to change?" Mary and Amber both looked at each other and went off with their mother to the kitchen.

In the Kitchen, June looked at her daughters and said, "You know I'm going to have the talk with Emily now. If afterwards, Emily and Darmon go off to a bedroom, wait a few minutes and then lead Marcy and Natasha to just hear everything outside of the bedroom door. I want them to hear what is discussed between Darmon and Emily, I think it will help ease them into this."

Mary and Amber, understood the request and both acknowledged with, "Okay!"

June returned back to the dinning room and waited for the rest to all come down before leaving via the side door to the pool. June got up and lead Emily to the living room.

June, sat next to her granddaughter and took her hands into hers, "Sweetie, I can see it in your face and body language that you are thinking of letting your brother claim you, right?"

Emily was shocked at how easy her grandmother could read her and simply nodded.

"Don't be afraid. This is something you both need to heal. I think the reason you haven't thrown yourself at your brother already is probably, to firstly, test him to make sure he isn't like your father. Secondly, you think since you're not being able to give yourself to your brother completely will mean he would reject you. Am I right?" June asked.

Emily looked at her grandmother and tears started to fall from her eyes. This was all the proof June needed. "For starters, there was no need to test him. He is not like your father and never will be.

Secondly, he will not reject you. Yes, you might feel that he would since it was your father that got what you wanted to give to someone with love. It doesn't matter to Darmon. If you are willing to be his and he yours then that is all he requires. He will not force you to do anything you're not ready for or don't want to do. Mary, Amber and myself weren't virgins either and did he reject us? No, he will accept you as you are."

Emily sobbed, "I'm scared, grandma. I want to be loved and cherished."

June chuckled, "And you will get that in spades from him, sweetie. If you're totally committed to being his then there are some rules that you need to understand. I have explained these rules to him. Your aunts are aware of these rules and will help guide you if you're unsure of anything, so seek them or me out if you need to."

Emily nodded as her sobbing quietened down a little.

June continued to hold her granddaughter's hands as she listed of the rules.

"As Darmon is now head of the family, he as well as his women have obligations to him and him to us. The first rule, is that as his woman we have the right to call upon him to service us and this rule is one of the most important one. This is not forcing him to be with you, but is one of the tasks he has an obligation to perform. In exchange, within reason we will do anything he requests. This is also not to say that he will force you to do that either as another rule governs acceptance, I will speak about that shortly. If on the off chance, that Darmon has multiple requests for him to service them, then he can either take them all on at the same time or ask them to schedule with those requesting his time to plan an order."

"In the case of your aunts, they will always be a pair. They will never request one on one time with Darmon and your brother knows that if he requested one then the other is also to be included. Your aunts are in a unique relationship with each other and with your brother. So when asking him, it might be best to liaise with your aunts before approaching him in case they have also requested his time. You saw your brother struggle last night to service three horny women and until he can build up more stamina it might be best to limit him to just two women."

"The second rule is that Darmon can also request any of his women to attend to him, but the first rule takes precedence."

"The third rule is his women will do as he asks, with the exception when rule one would be violated. This is to prevent him from excluding someone if they have already asked as part of rule one."

"The forth rule is that some of his women may want to be with his other women, it is up to him to decide if he allow this or not. It should be noted that he expects his women will not go behind your back. Basically, he will not allow himself to be 'cucked'. This has been a problem for your aunts and an understand has been reached on this. If anyone wants to be with another women, they first seek his permission and then perform with him present. He has the right to join in or just watch. Your aunts will never go behind his back, even if they share the same bed and are in love with each other. Their love for Darmon is greater."

"The fifth rule is a 'No' means no both ways. You can say no and also he can say no to any requests you may make, with the exception when rule one would be violated."

"The sixth rule is that if someone isn't initiated into the 'family love' circle, then they are excluded from all activities and may not be claimed by someone who is in the 'family love' circle. An example of this would be, if prior to your initiation, you had a girlfriend then Darmon or anyone in the circle cannot claim her, unless she is invited by you first. Once she is claimed by Darmon then she is his and your relationship with her would be like your aunts. Darmon has the right to veto any invites."

"The seventh rule is that if another male is asked to be included in the 'family love' circle, then they cannot claim or have access to what is Darmon's. An example of this could be if you had a son with Darmon and he was invited, then he cannot claim his mother or anyone else that is bonded with Darmon, unless this has been previously agreed upon. Trust me, the males in this 'family love' circle are very protective of their women and to date, there has only ever been one 'head of the family' in essence, the Alpha male and no other males have ever been invited."

"Rule seven, I feel would have hurt the most. Originally, it was planned for your father to be the 'head of the family' and if that happened then would have claimed me, your aunts, your mother, you sisters and Darmon would have been excluded from everything. He would never know about the 'family love' unless something happened to your father. In a way, I am glad that Edward didn't become the head as he could never sire the next generation. Even if you loved your brother and wanted him as a boyfriend or in a sexual manner then this wouldn't be allowed, if your father had gained that position."

Emily was shocked at the last revelation and started to cry again, knowing that it meant not showing her love for her brother as she always wanted. June waited a few minutes for her granddaughter to calm down.

"There are some other rules, but I don't want to overload you right now, sweetie!" June concluded.

"Do you have any questions?" June asked.

Emily shook her head, but then asked the most obvious question, "What does this mean for me, grandma?"

June smiled at her granddaughter, "It would mean that you are your brother's only. You cannot take on another lover, be it male or female, especially male, outside of the 'family love' circle, and should you leave the circle to pursue your other love, then you are disowned by the family. This is a level of betrayal that cannot be forgiven, even if Darmon does forgive, the rest of his women will not."

Emily was shocked at the rules and the consequences of breaking them or leaving the 'family love' circle.

"I know the rules and especially the consequences of breaking them, might seem harsh, but they are designed to protect both him and us, his women. I will tell you now, I love my grandson and am glad to be his woman. Mary and Amber, even with their unique relationship have accepted him over their preexisting relationship. They know they belong to Darmon first. If you want to be with your brother, know that it is for life and you would likely be having children with him. Are you ready for this commitment, sweetie?" June asked.

Emily paused to think about it and looked at her grandmother before responding with, "I am, grandma. I will love and cherish my bond with my brother, if he will accept me that is."

June smiled and kissed her granddaughter on the forehead, "I'm glad you accepted this. Let your brother wash away the shame of what your father has done. Now go get changed and have fun with everyone. If at some point during this morning or afternoon, you feel ready to be his then take him to his or your own bedroom. I will ensure your sisters will not interrupt you both."

Emily got up with a skip in her step and knew if her grandmother gave her the talk about the rules then it was to prepare her for this. Emily knew today, she was going to be her brother's and with it her father will no longer hold any influence on her. Emily was still afraid of rejection from both her brother and sisters.

When Darmon and Emily come out to the pool, everyone was on sun loungers, chatting and sun bathing. Marcy and Natasha saw their sister was happy and looked over at her with raised eyebrows when Emily came to sit in a vacant sun lounge next to her sisters.

"What's going on, Emily?" Marcy asked. Emily just looked at her and then over at her brother and sighed.

"Nothing, just happy to be free from dad and now I can do what I've always wanted," Emily said smiling. "Our brother made that happen!"

Both Marcy and Natasha looked over at their brother and a lot of the resentment towards him vanished, this was being replaced with love. Neither understood what that love entailed, they weren't sure if it was the love of siblings reconnecting or deep seated love that was growing each moment. Emily had already figured out what her heart and mind were telling her and she wasn't going to be denied her happiness.

Emily looked over at her brother and beckoned him over, "Little bro, why not join me here!"

Darmon went over and sat on the same sun lounger as his sister. Emily linked her arm in his and drew him close. Emily looked up at her brother with love and raised her hand to the back of his head and brought his lips to her. The kiss was tender and loving at first. Soon the passion overrode them both as they went into a full make out session. Marcy and Natasha looked on with some jealousy and each wondered if they would have been in their sister's place had they won the rock-paper-scissors game.

Emily was panting heavily when they broke the kiss and got up quickly from the sun lounger, before fanning her face with her hands saying, "Boy, is it hot today." Emily then ran towards the pool and jumped in to cool down.

Darmon laughed and quickly followed his sister. Marcy and Natasha, who were blushing at the open display of affection between their brother and sister soon got up themselves and jumped in. June, Mary and Amber were smiling and a look passed between them before they also got up and jumped into the pool.

What followed was a game of tag, which resulted in a lot of groping. Mainly, the women trying to grab Darmon's cock or ass. When Darmon was 'it', he in turn managed to capture the women and give them kisses as he felt their breasts, asses or in some case got his hand inside their bikini bottoms to rub their pussies. Marcy and Natasha weren't spared either and got their fair share of passionate kisses from their brother and lite pecks from the rest. Darmon never tried to grope or grab his other sisters, in an inappropriate way, as he would with the rest. Marcy and Natasha were jealous and a little disappointed as they could see what Darmon was doing to the rest, but remembered what their sister had said, he wont do that until he is invited.

It was June that went out first to get a drink and relax on the sun lounger. Mary and Amber were booing their mother, which only caused the other's to laugh. As it turns out a few minutes later both Mary and Amber also left the pool. The siblings decided to swim for a bit.

"God, I love this family. Our man, my grandson, is bring this family closer together," June said with joy in her voice.

"Mom, I have to agree. It was a lot different with dad, then it was just the 3 of us. With Darmon he is going to grow our 'family love' circle. I just hope his mother accepts his love," Amber responded as she was watching her nephew and nieces.

"Oh, darling. Trust me, Evelyn has no chance against him. Your sister-in-law is already in love with him, even if she tries to deny it," June said to acknowledge that their group was going to grow.

"Mom, we need to make plans soon to get Evelyn away from Edward," Mary stated.

"I know, darling. I know! I was waiting for him to claim his sisters fully before we can make a plan. This will need to be a plan that the whole 'family' agrees upon," June said sighing.

Back in the pool, someone suggested the good old fashioned, 'Chicken Fight' game. A small disagreement broke out between the sisters as to who gets to ride on their brother's shoulders. It was Darmon that put a stop to it, "Let's go from oldest to youngest. Marcy first, Emily next and then Natasha."

The sisters agreed and each took a turn upon their brother's shoulders. Darmon was sure that he smelt and felt on the back of his neck each of his sisters leave their mark on him. No one was really keeping track of the scores and were just happy with the fun they were having.

They played around for another 30 minutes and when they looked over they didn't spot their grandmother or aunts. Amber came out to announce lunch would be ready in 10 minutes and to get out of the pool, dry and wash their hands. The siblings, still, laughing got out, dried and made sure to wash up before returning the the dinning room.

Lunch was a quick grilled chicken salad, with a selection of sauces. After lunch everyone returned to the pool to sunbathe. Emily chose to curl up with her brother and everyone dozed off. Roughly an hour later, Emily awoke, she looked over at the others and noticed that her grandmother and aunts were talking in whispers and her sisters appeared to be sleeping. She looked up at her brother's face and saw he had his eyes open and looking at her.

Emily put her finger to her lips in a shush motion then got up. She held out her hand for her brother who took it and she lead him away towards the bedrooms. June, Mary and Amber were smiling as they witnessed Emily take her brother.

Mary waited a few minutes before she got up and went over to her nieces to gently wake them up. Marcy opened her eyes to question her aunt, but her aunt made a motion of zipping her lips. Amber did the same to Natasha. They both motioned for their nieces to follow them. They checked Darmon's room first and found it empty, so went over to Emily's bedroom.

Once, outside, they heard their brother's and sister's voices. Both their aunts motioned for silence and to just listen.

Darmon was happy when Emily lead him away. They passed his bedroom and went to Emily's bedroom.

Once inside, Emily got shy and hesitated. Darmon saw this and gently lead his sister to her bed. He sat on her bed and patted the bed next to him. Emily sat besides her brother.

"You know you don't have to do this, sis. While I would love for you to be mine and I yours. I can wait for as long as you need," Darmon said.

Emily looked at her brother's face and looked into his eyes and just saw the truth in his words. Emily sighed, "Are you really trying to talk me out of this?"

Darmon laughed, "I would be a fool to try and honestly, I would love for this to happen. I just don't want you to think you have to do this right now. I only want to do this with you if your one hundred percent sure."

Emily chuckled, turned his head towards hers and placed her hand on his cheek, before responding, "And that is why I love you, little brother. Not once have you forced me, and even now you're thinking about me and not just your own pleasure. Dad, wouldn't have cared and just taken what he wanted from any of us."

Outside, the door, Marcy and Natasha were hearing this conversation with their mouths open. Mary and Amber, looked at their nieces with smiles.

"I told you before, I'm not dad. Remember, I told you dad would have had all this if he didn't do what he did. If dad, got you, Marcy, Natasha, mom, our grandma and aunts, then I am sure I wouldn't be alive. I would have preferred to be dead without the love of my family," Darmon said with his head down.

Emily started to cry and sobbing said, "Don't ever say that. Without you, none of us would survive. Mom would shutdown, my sisters and I would think it was our fault somehow. I suppose, grandma and our aunts would be devastated also. Dad would be the only one, I think, who would be singing and dancing."

Behind the door, there were tears in each of the women there, especially, Marcy and Natasha's who slumped to the ground.

Darmon chuckled, "You still in the mood, sis? Maybe that would put a dampener on this."

Emily didn't want to stop and knew she needed to make her brother feel loved. She threw herself at her brother and kissed him hard. Darmon kissed back just as hard. After a few minutes of passionate kissing the siblings broke the kiss.

Emily was panting and groaning at the loss of her brother's lips against hers. She watched as her brother got up, to remove his trunks. Emily watched her brother's cock spring free and up, which caused her to moan loudly. "You know, I enjoyed watching you make love to our aunts last night and grandma this morning. I especially loved sleeping next to you, knowing I was in your embrace. I felt loved and protected," Emily said as she too started remove her bikini.

Darmon chuckled, "I enjoyed that too. I especially loved the blowjob you performed this morning and sharing my cum with grandma and our aunts."

Marcy and Natasha's expression changed when they heard this and then took on a more lustful look.

"How about I return the favor, sis?" Darmon asked. "I really want to love every part of your body."

"Sure, brother. I would love that. Although, I don't think I can take you in my ass, like grandma did. At least not yet. I know you've seen dad do that to us, but let's face it, you're a lot larger than he is," Emily said with a giggle.

"I'm pretty sure that grandma has told the rules, right?. I won't do anything you are against or unwilling to give me right now," Darmon responded, hoping his grandmother had been told his sister the rules.

Emily smiled at her brother and jumped into his arms again, "Yes, grandma told me them."

"Emily, it is important that you understand what that means for us, especially, you. This is a life long commitment for both of us. You will belong to me and I to you. You know that you would have to share me," Darmon continued in a serious voice. "Furthermore, I will continue to mark your womb as mine and never will I wear a condom. Our aunts are looking to get pregnant, grandma is the matriarch of the family and would have loved to carry my baby, but is sadly past the age. If you don't want children then ask grandma or our aunts to get you on birth control."

"If you do go on birth control, know this will only be a temporary measure as I will want to have children with you. If you're not on any birth control now, then you will have to take your chance, unless you tell me to stop right now. I do have the will power to do that, but can't guarantee it after I am inside you. To claim you I need to cum inside you, sis," Darmon continued.

Emily paused for short time to ponder her brother's words. Emily sighed and looked into her brother's eyes before saying, "Little brother, I am yours now and forever. I will not go on birth control. Dad couldn't get any of us pregnant, but I do want to have your children."

Emily then with a chuckle pushed his head down towards her pussy, "Little brother, you promised a return favor. I think you need to show me how much you care about me and not be selfish."

Darmon laughed then started at his sister's feet. He kissed the soles of her right foot, licked and sucked her toes before kissing, nibbling and sucking up her calves, inner thighs getting closer to his sister's pussy. Emily was panting and moaning loudly. Darmon had started on his sister's right leg and bypassed her pussy altogether before going down her left leg towards her foot. Emily was horny and really wanted her brother to eat her out. On the return journey to her pussy via the left leg, Darmon was about to tease his sister by bypassing her pussy again, when he felt both of her hands on the back of his head to smash his mouth hard against her pussy.

Emily screamed when her brother took the first swipe with his tongue and had her first orgasm. Emily's butt raised off the bed and shook for a few minutes before falling back to the bed. She

continued to moan and pant as Darmon continued to gently lick her clean. Emily pushed her brother face away as her pussy was very sensitive right now. Darmon lay next to his sister. Emily looked over at her brother and her eyes shone with love. Brother and Sister came together again in a deep French kiss.

Outside the bedroom door, each of the women had their hands inside their bikini bottoms, gently rubbing their pussies. Those outside were trying hard to stifle moans and groans.

Back inside the bedroom, Darmon was very hard and when he thought his sister had recovered enough, asked her, "Sis, you want to be on top or should I go on top?"

Emily giggled, "Brother, will you make love to me in the good old fashioned missionary position. I want you to kiss me and mark me as I look into your eyes as we make love."

Darmon moved on top of his sister and it was Emily who took hold of his cock to position her brother at her entrance. Emily held onto her brother's ass as she pulled her brother inside her. When Darmon was fully seated inside, Emily wept.

Darmon got concerned and looked deep into her eyes before she reassured him, "Oh My God, You are fully inside me. I'm both glad and guilt at the same time."

"What! Why?" Darmon asked, fearing that she was feeling guilty now for letting him inside her and he didn't measure up to her standards.

Emily kissed her brother as a way to let him know that she didn't regret this before telling her brother the reason, "I'm glad that you will remove the taint dad left on me and feel guilty that I wasn't able to give my first time to the one I truly wanted it to do to. There was one man I was saving myself for, but dad stole that away from me."

"I'm sorry that dad took your first time. Did you have a boyfriend that you wanted to give it to?" Darmon asked whilst he was still buried to the hilt inside his sister.

Emily chuckled, "Haven't you figured it out, little brother? You were the boyfriend I wanted and it was to you I wanted to give my first time to. This was one of the reasons, why I avoided you and also resented you as I felt I could no longer be yours. This is why I wanted this and would devote myself to you. I just didn't want to be used and abused like dad did to me. When you claim me properly then I would be like your wife, I think I could live with that promotion."

Darmon raised up on one arm and clenched his fist and raised it over Emily. Emily cried thinking her brother was just like her father and was going to beat her. The clenched fist landed hard against the bed to the side of her head. Emily saw the anger in his face and understood it wasn't directed at her but knowing she wanted to be his from the start and their father took that away from him like he took everything else away from him.

Emily lifted her hand up and cup her brother's face and got him to look at her. "Hey, little brother. You're in me right now and I will never let any other penis inside me ever, unless it is our unborn son. Dad will never touch or look at me again. I am yours now and forever. I promise you this!"

Darmon was shocked at his actions and the anger he displayed, "I'm sorry, sis. It just pissed me off knowing what dad did to you all and what he did to me."

"I know, little brother. It was for this reason, I felt you would reject me. I want to be yours and yours alone. I meant what I said, I want to be your wife. I will always love you and never betray you. I will have as many of your children as you want. I will never deny you my love."

Darmon was shocked and then laughed, "Wife? Really. I expect you would have competition on that front. It would be our children, my beautiful and sexy wife!"

Emily started to flex her pussy and move her ass off the bed to get her brother to start fucking her, "Yeah, why not? I know it can't be official, *MOAN* but still make us all your wives. *PANT* *MOAN* Those that can will all have your babies. *MOAN* Please enough talking, FUCK ME, little brother."

Darmon got into a steady deep thrusting rhythm. Emily lifted her legs up and position her legs up against her shoulder which caused Darmon to penetrate her deeper.

Everyone outside the door, heard loud moans, heavy panting and slapping of flesh on flesh. The women started to finger their pussies and let out small moans, not fearing to be overheard over the mating pair inside.

Emily shrieked as another orgasm rocked her. Emily had never been loved like this before, her father had never managed to make her cum as hard and fast as her brother was doing.

June, all the way back at the pool was hearing the shrieks and laughing to know her grandson was claiming her granddaughter.

Back in the bedroom, Emily went through another couple of orgasms before her brother was close to releasing. Darmon's thrusts became longer, deeper and harder, his cock glans was battering her cervix before the pressure was too much for him. He pushed hard against her womb opening and let out steam after stream of his hot cum inside his sister. When Emily felt the first blast of cum push out the sides of his glans that was butting up against her cervix. Emily let out a banshee scream that could rival that of her grandmother's and squirted against her brother's pubic mound as her orgasm hit her hard. Darmon as he was releasing inside his sister, marked her as his with a hickey.

Darmon rolled his sister on top of him with his cock still embedded deep inside her. Both Darmon and Emily dozed off.

Outside the bedroom door, the women there were all coming down from their own orgasms, which they managed to achieve as Emily screamed out her final orgasm. Once, they have recovered for a few minutes they got up to return to the pool.

June watched her daughters and granddaughters return. She laughed when she saw they all had flushed faces. They all returned to their sun loungers.

Mary laughed, "Well, mom. Our man claimed his sister. Did you know she wants us all to be his wives?"

June chuckled, "Why not? I think that's a wonderful idea. I know none of us can be his legal wife, but he still might want to add to his women with fresh blood that he could marry."

"If he does that, then she better be prepared to accept he is all of ours and not to throw the legal part in our faces," Amber said with some conviction.

"Wait, grandma, aunties. He hasn't even claimed us yet and you're already trying to set him up with someone else. I feel a bit slighted here," Marcy said looking over at her grandmother and aunts.

It was Mary who laughed again, "So, you heard him with your sister. Do you still feel he is just using us for his pleasure alone? You heard him and felt his pain, right? If he didn't have his family then he wanted to be dead."

"WHAT?" June shouted.

"Yeah, mom. He told his sister that if his father got all this then, he would have lost his mother, sisters and even us. He thinks his father would have probably killed him or if not then wanted to die without the love of family," Amber said, seriously.

Marcy and Natasha, started to cry. June had tears starting to fall from her eyes.

June sobbing told them, "You all need to show him your love. The thought of losing him is an ache in my heart." As June looked around, she say nods from them all.

"Back to my original question, girls. Are you ready now for him to make you his and claim you?" Mary asked again of her nieces.

"Yes, auntie. I believe him and can tell he isn't like our father. He cares for us. So I think I can speak for myself and my sister and tell you outright, we are ready to be his," Natasha stated.

"Good. I suggest you take him on both together as I feel there might be a disagreement if you go one on one for him. You need to know the rules," Amber replied to her nieces desires.

What followed was the exact same conversation that June had with her other granddaughter only now it was given to both her other granddaughters.

"You heard about what it means from the conversation between Darmon and Emily. You know when he claims you, then you are his and his alone, right? This will not be a fling or short-term agreement, it's for life. You would be expected to give him children, if he so desires with you. He will not force you to have them as he told Emily, but will expect them if you're not ready right now," Mary concluded.

"We know, auntie. If we're being honest here, we feel the same way about Darmon as our sister does. We loved our brother and would have loved for him to be ours and we his. Dad, is the one that fucked this up for us all," Marcy replied.

"We know and Edward will get the punishment for his misdeeds, soon enough. We will plan out how to do this once you both are claimed. For now, rest and await the couples return. Try not to say anything about this, or that you know your sister is his now. More importantly, don't feel jealous of your sister. You both will have your brother soon," June advised.

With that they all went back to sunbathing and pretending they were all still sleeping and didn't notice the siblings leave.

Darmon awoke first and felt his cock still in the grasp of his sister's pussy, even when it was flaccid. Darmon kissed his sleeping sister's forehead as she lay on his stomach. Emily stirred awake. She looked into her brother's eyes and kissed him hard. Emily pulled off her brother with a small pop and cum oozed out of her pussy, then lay besides him.

Emily sighed in joy which caused Darmon to look at her. Emily turned her head towards her brother and smiled at him. "I know you don't want to talk about dad or compare you with him, but oh my god! Making love to you was so much different and better. I have to admit that you made me cum so much and in fact I couldn't stop cumming with you. Dad could never make me cum. I only ever had orgasms when mom or my sisters would lick my pussy, and even then never as much as you did in just one session. I now understand why grandma would always scream so loud and even why aunt Mary blacks out. You made me squirt and that was a first for me."

Darmon chuckled and just held his sister close.

"Darmon, can I make a selfish request please?" Emily asked.

"Sure!"

"I know grandma or our aunts might request you, but can I ask for you to spend tonight with me?" Emily asked, knowing and fearing another had already made a request for his time.

"Sis, rule one. You are my woman now. You can be selfish and request me to service you. You know I can't refuse you or them, but I can at least, ask them to postpone for a day at most. Would you have a problem with another of the women with me also, or do you want me exclusively tonight?" Darmon asked.

"Exclusive tonight please. As for sharing you with another, I don't have a problem with that, just not today, please!" Emily confirmed her request.

"Done!" Darmon accepted her request and would have to let his grandmother and aunts know when they return to the pool.

"You not having any doubts or regrets, right?" Darmon was scared of a negative response.

Emily laughed, "Oh, little brother. Why would I ask for exclusivity for this evening if I had any doubts or regrets." This of course made Darmon laugh also, more at himself for a silly question.

"Grandma and our aunts, probably already know what we did this afternoon, but do we tell Marcy and Natasha?" Darmon inquired.

"Yes, if you aim to claim them also, then being honest will help, I feel," Emily replied.

"Shall we have a shower before we go back out?" Darmon asked his sister.

"No fucking way, little brother. I want to keep your cum inside me for as long as I can. Although, I think we should head back, they might wonder where we are if they wake up before we get back," Emily chuckled in reply.

Darmon watched his sister get back into her bikini and it was having an effect on his cock. Darmon quickly retrieved his trunks and put them on. Brother and sister did kiss before returned to the pool.

June, Mary and Amber were awake when Darmon and Emily returned. All looked at the new couple and had big smiles.

Darmon went to his grandmother first, French kissed her and whispered in her ear, "Sorry, grandma. Emily has requested exclusive rights for this night. I hope you don't mind." June smiled at her grandson and nodded acceptance, knowing a new couple always needs time to bond.

Darmon next went to Mary, French kissed her also then whispered, "Sorry, auntie. I need to be with Emily only tonight. My sister wants to ensure our bond grows stronger. If you could wait a day, I promise to fill you and aunt Amber up as soon as I can." Mary also nodded her head, understanding that her nephew and niece needed this.

Darmon next went to Amber, French kissed her also then whispered, "Sorry, auntie. Emily has asked for only me tonight. I think she needs me to make sure our bond is strong to get rid of any of dad's influence on her." Amber smiled and kissed her nephew again to show there wasn't any hard feelings or she was upset.

Darmon looked over at Marcy and Natasha and saw they had their eyes closed and went to sit on the sun lounge near them. As he sat down, he looked over and saw Emily was also going to greet her grandmother and aunts.

Emily went to hug her grandmother and as they hugged, June said, "Welcome, sweetie. I would kiss you like your brother did to me, but we haven't cleared that up with him. For now, I will hug you and would love to witness our man make love to you, soon." Emily blushed.

Emily then went to her aunt Mary to hug her also. Mary whispered, "Welcome, honey. I hope our man serviced you well. Maybe, soon, I can lick and suck his cum from your pussy. That is of course only if he agrees." Emily had a look of shock and blushed a deeper shade of red.

Emily was getting nervous when she went to her aunt Amber, to also hug her. Amber actually laughed, "Honey, I can imagine what my sister must have said to you. I won't embarrass you any further and all I will say is welcome to our true family. Just remember the rules and have as much sex and shout as loud as you want tonight. No one will judge you."

Amber continued to laugh, before added, "Oh dear, I think I might have embarrassed you anyway. Sorry, honey. You know I love you, but you should know that man loves you a lot more."

With that out of the way, Emily went over to the sun lounge Darmon sat on and curled up in his embrace.

When Marcy and Natasha pretended to just awaken, they looked over at their sister and brother and immediately noticed their sister had a certain glow around her, but didn't otherwise comment on it. They saw Emily whisper something in Darmon's ear and got a nod from him. Darmon kissed Emily, then got up and went over to Natasha, pulled her out of her sun lounge towards the sun lounge occupied by their eldest sister, Marcy. Darmon sat besides his sister, Marcy, who made room for him to lay besides her. Darmon then pulled both sisters against his chest and kissed both of their foreheads before tenderly kissing them both. Both Marcy and Natasha moaned in pleasure.

June, Mary and Amber watched this exchange, smiled and then they got up to go make dinner.

Before dinner, everyone went off to shower and get ready in nightwear before returning to the dinning room. Darmon was both disappointed and glad that he was showering alone. He knew he needed to make sure he had enough energy for his sister tonight and equally wanted to have one of his women with him to wash his back and cock.

Throughout dinner, Marcy and Natasha were almost glued to their brother's side. This continued during movie time also, and it was both of his sisters that had to drag his hands to their asses to let their brother know it was okay to fondle them.

As with all things, when having fun, time flies. Soon, it was time for bed. Darmon kissed his grandmother, and both aunt with some passion and even managed to French kiss Marcy and Natasha, who were shocked at first and accepted his advances. The kiss didn't last as long as any of them wanted, but they all knew it was still early for that.

Marcy and Natasha, were surprised when their brother didn't kiss Emily, but they did go hand in hand towards his bedroom.

When Darmon and his sister entered his bedroom, Emily was all over him. They kissed hard and with so much passion. Emily had to break the kiss to remove hers and her brother top. As soon as both were topless the kiss resumed with tongues pushing and duel into each other's mouths. Whilst still kissing, Emily, managed to push her brother's shorts down to free his cock. Darmon stepped out of his shorts and used a foot to kick them away. Emily couldn't wait to hold her brother naked and removed her shorts also.

Emily pushed her brother back to his bed and when the back of his legs hit the side of the mattress, he fell back taking his sister with him.

"Oh god, I can't get enough of you, Darmon," Emily panted as they fell back on to the bed.

"Sis, I'm not going anywhere. Take your time. No one is going to disturb us. From now on you are mine and I am yours. I'm never going to let you go. I love you!" Darmon assured his sister.

Emily wept tears of joy, "I love you too, little brother. So this is what it feels like to be loved by your soulmate? All I ever wanted was to be near you and yours. If I am dreaming then I never want to wake up."

Darmon laughed and pinched his sister's side. Emily winced, "Ouch!"

"Do you still think this is a dream, sis?" Darmon asked with a chuckle.

Emily laughed and they made out again for another 5 minutes. Darmon broke the kiss and asked his sister, "I could make out with you all night, but I feel you want more. Shall we start off with a classic sixty-nine?"

Emily didn't even need to confirm as she turned her body around to straddle her brother's head as she lowered her face towards her brother's crotch. Emily had to pause every time her brother made her orgasm which made her shriek in pleasure. After 3 orgasms, she rolled off to her brother's side, panting heavily. Darmon waited a few minutes to let her recover before getting up and moving his sister onto all fours.

Darmon used his cock to slap his sister's ass cheeks and clitoris a few times. Emily was moaning loudly and begged her brother, "Little brother, please stop teasing me and make love to your woman."

Darmon chuckled before putting his glans to her entrance and watched as her labia surrounded him before pushing in in one slow gentle thrust into the very depth of his sister's vagina. Emily let out a banshee scream as an orgasm ripped through her. She was panting and moaning as her brother started a steady rhythm making love to her. Darmon wanted to time his orgasm to her sister's next one. When Darmon sensed her close to orgasm, he moaned loudly as he released inside his sister's cervix. Emily let out another banshee scream and squirt to cover her brother's balls in her juices.

The siblings stayed joined together for several minutes as their panting and moans quietened down. Darmon fell to his side, pulling his sister into his embrace, so they were spooning with Darmon the big spoon. Both must have dozed off for a bit and when Darmon awoke a short time later, he raised his sister's right leg to position his cock at her entrance again to fuck her again in this position. Emily woke up as her brother started to fuck her and they both worked in unison to both climax again, Emily shrieked loudly in the quiet villa. Darmon remained locked inside his sister as they dozed off to sleep again.

Darmon awoke an hour later and this time got on top of his sister to fuck her in the missionary position. Emily again woke up as her brother pushed in deep, saying, "Brother, how can you fuck me so much?"

Darmon started a steady pace and chuckled at his sister, "Are you complaining that your brother wants you. I'm going to put a baby inside you, big sis."

Emily shrieked as another orgasm hit her when she heard her brother's words. Emily giggled after she managed to calm down a little, "I love you, little brother. I told you, I will never deny you. Just make love to me and claim what is rightfully yours."

Soon, Darmon climaxed and deposited another load into his sister. When Emily felt the blast of cum splash against her cervix she orgasmed and squirted on her brother again, while letting out another scream.

This last orgasm from both was the end for them that night and exhaustion eventually claimed them until they fell into a deep contented sleep.

Emily slept that night in the knowledge that she was in love with her brother and knew he had washed away the taint of her father. Emily truly knew and felt what love was.

Chapter 6

There was a knock on the bedroom door and neither Darmon or Emily heard it, and weren't awake enough to acknowledge it. Darmon, vaguely, thought he heard a knock but dismissed it in the sweet embrace of his sister. There was another knock on the door and as the cobwebs of sleep were leaving Darmon's mind, and before he could answer the door opened. Darmon looked over to see his sisters, Marcy and Natasha, entering the bedroom.

Marcy and Natasha, saw the state of their brother and sister, naked and embracing each other, with dried cum coating Emily's pussy. The smell of sex was heavy in the room. The sisters also saw the size of their brother's flaccid cock and gasped as each thought it was bigger than their father's even soft. Marcy and Natasha looked at each other and some sort of understanding was reached between them.

Marcy and Natasha both leaped onto the bed, with Marcy to her brother's right and Natasha wriggled in-between her brother and sister. "Time to wake up, sleeping beauties," Marcy giggled as she nuzzled up to her brother. Marcy lifted her head up and kissed her brother for 30 seconds, before pushing his face towards her sister. Darmon kissed his other sister also. Both, Marcy and Natasha, sighed and moaned in pleasure. Emily, who awoke as her youngest sister got between her and their brother, smirked at the exchange between her siblings.

Natasha then turned around to hug and went to kiss her sister, Emily. Emily moved her head to the side with the kiss landing on her cheek; this confused Natasha since her sister had never denied her kisses, especially after their father made them do lesbian acts and then later to comfort each other. Emily saw the confused look and placed her hand on her sister's cheek before assuring her, "I'm sorry, sis, but we can't kiss like we did before. You're not part of 'family love' yet, and it will be up to our brother to allow it when you are initiated."

Natasha, remembered the rules and understood that until her brother claims her, then she is not to be included in any activity of those within 'family love'. Natasha smiled and nodded her understanding.

Marcy and Darmon saw the exchange. Marcy was amazed that Emily was adhering to the rules and knew then, that her sister was truly her brother's woman. Darmon was equally shocked and happy to know that Emily wouldn't betray him.

Marcy laughed to break any tension and jumped out of bed. She grabbed her brother's hand and pulled him out of bed. Natasha, rolled over her sister to get out of bed the other side and did the same to her youngest sister.

"Go shower, you lovebirds," Natasha chuckled. "Grandma, asked us to wake you up for breakfast."

Marcy and Natasha, pushed their brother and sister towards the bathroom, and both left the room laughing.

Marcy and Natasha entered the dinning room and sat down at the table. Natasha had a mock pout on her face which was noticed by her aunts.

"Why the face, honey. You didn't like what you saw?" Mary asked.

Natasha looked up at her aunt and shook her head, "No, it's not that, auntie. You know dad made mom, my sisters and I do lesbian things against our will. He would make us French kiss each other before forcing us to do other things. At first we hated doing that and later the kissing became something that we did to comfort each other. If I'm being totally honest here, I think mom, my sisters and I started to have more enjoyment from the lesbian sex, than any other form of sex with dad."

Natasha paused and Amber filling in the gap, "I think I understand why the face now. You tried to kiss Emily right and she rejected you?"

"How could you know that?" Natasha said in total surprise.

Amber laughed, "Call it an educated guess," then in a more serious tone, "What did Emily say when you tried it?"

"She told me I wasn't part of 'family love' yet and couldn't allow the kiss until I was, and then only if Darmon agrees to it," Natasha responded.

June who overheard this conversation, spoke up, "I'm glad that Emily is taking the rules seriously and she isn't wrong. Since, neither you or Marcy have been claimed by him yet, then she or we cannot have sex with either of you, and then only when Darmon agrees. Usually those outside of the 'family love' wouldn't even know about it and be automatically excluded. Since, your mother, Emily and you both know about it, makes this a little bit more complicated. I can tell you now, your brother wants both of you, like he did with Emily. Your brother will claim, your mother when she is here with us also and this is all because you already know of the 'family love'. If you want to join the group of his women then don't wait on your brother to make the first move, he will wait forever for you both to be ready. Go ahead and seduce him, sweeties."

Marcy and Natasha simply nodded.

Darmon and Emily, entered the dinning room. June, Mary and Amber looked at the sibling pair and smiled knowingly at them. They knew that the relationship between them was so strong that nothing could break it; in fact, all Darmon's women felt that their relationship with him was unbreakable.

Breakfast was served and eaten with small banter, giggles, chuckles and a general relaxed atmosphere. After breakfast, Marcy and Natasha got up to take care of the dishes and looked over at Emily. Marcy was the one that asked, "Emily, can you help us for a min? Lets give grandma, our aunts and brother a chance to be lazy."

Emily looked puzzled at her sisters, then looked over at her brother, before replying, "Sure, I don't mind."

Everyone bar the sisters left to go change for the pool.

In the kitchen, Marcy and Natasha turned to face their sister. "Little sis, we have a confession to make," Marcy commented, as she looked from Natasha to Emily.

Emily raised her eyebrows, but waited for her sisters to continue. "We heard everything you and our brother said and did, yesterday afternoon," Marcy continued.

"Then from the display this morning, you're not upset with me or our brother? I love him! I don't care if you approve or not, I just know I do!" Emily stated.

"No we're not upset, big sis. In fact, we're jealous," Natasha said. She looked over at her big sister before continuing, "What Marcy and I need is a favor, from you."

Emily was confused and her expression told the story. "Favor?" Emily asked.

"Yeah, help us be his, please. We want the same as you have with him. Over the last few days, we have watched him and you. Grandma has also told us about the rules. We're just scared of rejection," Marcy said with a downward look at her feet.

Emily let out a loud laugh, which made her sisters think Emily was rejecting them from wanting to be with their brother. Emily took half a minute to catch her breath before responding, "Sorry! Are you scared of rejection? It's funny, after he claimed me yesterday, I feared that my sisters would reject the union I have with our brother. Just as your fear is baseless, I can see mine was also the same. Marcy, Natasha, our brother will not reject you. Once you are his, let him show you what true love is."

The relief on her sisters faces made Emily laugh again. It was Marcy that continued to ask, "I know you want him to be near you, but will you let us have a chance with our brother. I mean, will you help him and us?"

Emily threw her arms around her sisters and drew them into her embrace before saying, "Of course, I will. When we're all his then we can get mom here to be his also. Let's go get changed and I will try to coax our brother to be more intimate with you both."

With that the sisters all went off to their bedrooms to change.

Meanwhile, at the pool, Darmon is sat on a sun lounger near his grandmother, on his right, and aunts to the left.

"Darling, have you called your mother yet?" June asked.

"Shit! I forgot," Darmon replied.

"Honey, your mother is probably scared not knowing how things are going and probably wants to hear the voice of someone she loves. I know that what you've been doing is exciting, but never forget that others love you also," Mary said whilst she was looking at her nephew with a concerned look.

Darmon grabbed his phone and called his mother. The phone rang a few times before it was answered, he put the phone to speaker mode, so that his grandmother and aunts could also hear.

"Honey?" Evelyn answered.

"Mom, I'm so sorry for not calling sooner. How are you? Dad hasn't..." Darmon said, with the last part left unsaid. Darmon wasn't sure if he actually wanted to hear how his mother might be suffering, while he has been claiming his women. He was feeling pangs of guilt in not being able to get her out, right now.

"Honey, don't worry about me. Your father has only got his wife to service him, now; I can handle that. At least your sisters aren't suffering," Evelyn said to reassure her son.

"Still mom, he hasn't hurt you, right?" Darmon asked concerned for his mother.

"I'm sorry, honey, he is being a little bit more forceful and even tried to bribe or blackmail your ex-girlfriends, so he can get more pussy; they all turned him down and he took it out on me. He is demanding that I call to make sure our daughters return quickly," Evelyn confessed.

"Evelyn, your son has claimed Emily and will most likely claim his other sisters shortly. Once, your son has claimed all of his sisters then they will never come back to their father. They will be Darmon's women and not playthings for Edward. We're going to make plans to rescue you soon," June spoke up to assure her daughter-in-law.

"Mom, what do you mean Darmon has claimed Emily?" Evelyn asked confused.

"Darmon has added her to the 'family love'. Darmon had already informed you of this, and I believe you all agreed to it. Your son as part of claiming his sister has a commitment to love and protect her and any within the 'family love'. He is now the 'head of the family' and has claimed me and his aunts. Emily did this of her own free will. Darmon hasn't forced her or done anything against her will," June confirmed.

There was a pause in the conversation as Evelyn was coming to grips with what this meant for her son and daughters. "Mom, what of Marcy and Natasha?" Evelyn inquired.

"Darling, they have both already expressed they want to be Darmon's, and all doubts they had of their brother being like their father have disappeared," June continued. Darmon was shocked, this was the first time he knew that his other sisters also wanted to be claimed by him. He now understood the playful mood they both had yesterday evening.

"Darmon, honey, is this what you want?" Evelyn asked her son.

"Honestly, mom, yes! Emily is happy and understands what this means for her. She knows I will now protect her and ensure that dad or anyone else can ever hurt her. If Marcy and Natasha want the same thing, then I will be happy to take them as mine. Mom, are you happy with dad?" Darmon told his mother with conviction and asked a question that he feared to have any answer to.

There was another pause before Evelyn responded, "No I'm not. I loath the man I once loved. The only good thing he gave me was you and your sisters. I don't love him anymore," Evelyn said with a tinge of sadness in her voice.

"Evelyn, there is someone here who loves you unconditionally. When you get here, let him show you the depth of his love as he is showing his sisters. Trust me, you won't be disappointed. Let's put that to the side for the moment, as we need to get you away from Edward," Mary added to the conversation.

Evelyn actually laughed, "Sis, I agree. So my son truly has become the 'head of the family'?"

"Yes, he has sis and none of us regrets it. Mom, Mary, Emily, and soon to be added Marcy and Natasha, as well as I, love him completely. Edward no longer has any control over kicking Darmon out or disowning him; mom won't allow it," Amber added. Then she chuckled before continuing, "I feel

sorry for anyone that would even dare to talk bad about Darmon. Mom's love for grandson is absolute and is even willing to slap her own son around the side of his head."

"Listen, can you hold fast for a short while longer, darling? In the next few days, we will have a plan in place and let you know. I promise that you will be free of Edward and will have front row seats to his punishment. Let's leave it here for now, I think the girls will be back in a minute," June stated.

"Okay, mom. Good bye, Mary and Amber. Honey, I love you and hope that I can be with you soon," Evelyn said and after hearing byes from the everyone, hung up the phone.

Darmon was overcome after hearing this conversation and how much his grandmother and aunts love him. Darmon went over to each of them and kissed them tenderly as he uttered the words that told them how he also feels, "I Love You!"

Marcy, Emily and Natasha soon arrived at the pool. Darmon was a bit surprised when Emily didn't immediately come to him like she normally would and instead it was his other sisters that sat either side of him. It was they that captured his arms and cradled them between their breasts. Darmon didn't know if he should be flustered or happy with this development and to hide this awkward moment, told his sisters, "I just spoke to mom."

"Oh? How is is mom?" Marcy asked.

"Not good, I feel. I got the feeling she is suffering and we need to make plans on getting mom away from dad. Mom's sad and doesn't love dad anymore. Dad's trying to force mom to get you all back," Darmon commented on the phone call with their mother.

"Bastard!" Emily expressed as her emotions erupted, "That man, will never see naked or touch me again!"

Emily looked over at her brother and after getting a nod threw herself at her brother to wrap her arms around his neck. Darmon kissed her forehead before answering his sister, "Never, sis. Dad will never force or touch you or our sisters ever again."

After Emily got the confirmation she needed went back to her sit on the sun lounge next to her brother and sisters. Darmon looked at both Marcy and Natasha in turn, then back to his eldest sister. "Marcy, has grandma told you the rules for what she calls 'family love'?"

Marcy looked into her brother's eyes and she responded, "Yes!"

"Do you understand what that means for us and the commitment that would bind us?" Darmon pressed.

"Yes!" Marcy responded again, "Little brother, let me stop any further questions and confess something to you. Natasha and I, heard everything that was said between you and Emily yesterday afternoon. We know how you feel and it our turn to let you know how we feel. Both Natasha and I accept everything and want you to be our and we yours."

June, Mary and Amber were witness to the exchange and were getting excited and knew their 'family love' was about to grow again. Darmon nodded to his eldest sister and then turned towards Natasha; she nodded to show that she also understood the rules and commitment they were about to make.

Darmon sighed, "Are you both sure about this? Don't feel you have to be a part of this, just to fit in. I would love and protect you regardless and doesn't require you to force yourselves into an intimate relationship with me."

Natasha laughed then looked at everyone around her before settling back on her brother, "You know I had already expected that question and resolve from you, little brother. If we had any doubts before this then they are gone. We, now, know that you care about us and will not force or manipulate us. I can safely speak for myself and our sister in telling you, make me and our sister your, Darmon."

Darmon chuckled, "I suppose that is to be expected. I did try to give you an out and just like Emily you didn't take it. If you're both ready, we can take this to the bedroom. Just know that I will be coming inside you both and it could mean that either or both could get pregnant."

Marcy giggled, "We know, brother and don't care. Why take this to the bedroom? Let's do it here, so that everyone here is a witness to our union and yes, we will also become your wives."

Darmon was shocked that Marcy and Natasha wanted to be claimed out in the open with his other women to witness it.

"Honey, I think it is a wonderful idea, since, after this then there would not be anything to hide from each other. It would mean that you can make love to any of us openly. However, I do have a request though," Mary advised and asked her nephew.

Darmon looked over at his aunt Mary with a raised eyebrow. Mary continued, "Would you allow Mom, Amber, Emily and I to be intimate while you claim your sisters?"

Darmon laughed, "Sure, even if I can't be with you, grandma, aunt Amber or Emily, then I would still be here to witness it. You wouldn't be doing this behind my back. I can at least allow that. Just don't fall in love with each other and forget me."

Amber laughed at her nephew's silly comment, "Honey, you already know I love my sister, but I love you more. Mom, Emily and even Mary would never do that to you, and neither will I."

Emily was shocked at the implications of what her brother and soulmate was saying and shook her head knowing it would never happen. She went to her brother, held his hands in hers and looked at him before saying in a very serious tone of voice, "Darmon, I will not ever fall in love with another. I only love you. If you prefer me to not be intimate with anyone else then I won't. You are my life and I could never forget you."

June smiled and went over to her granddaughter and hugged her, "Sweetie, your brother was joking. He already knows that. We, his women, would never love another over him. Darmon doesn't have a problem with his women being intimate with each other as long as he is present and can participate, if he so wishes. We will always make room for him in any interaction his women may have. Remember, we are his and he will always claim what is his by ensuring he seeds us."

The relief on Emily's face was priceless. Marcy and Natasha also noted the comments made by their grandmother for future reference.

Mary continued, "Just be mindful as he doesn't allow any except him to mark his women. Darmon will always mark his women with a hickey and likes to show others that his women belong to another."

Emily raised her hand up to the hickey her brother had left there from their love making the previous night and smiled.

June then stepped back from her granddaughter and said in a seductive voice, "I did say I would kiss you like your brother did to me, yesterday. It seems we have been given permission, so let me do that now, sweetie." June then kissed her granddaughter on the lips tenderly, before opening her

mouth to French kiss her. Emily was no stranger to kissing other women after her father had forced her to do that with her mother, sisters and even her brother's girlfriends. This was the first time she would be kissing another woman willingly and was enjoying it. Darmon's kisses were by far the best, Emily concluded. Her father had tried to kiss her many times, until he gave up after the continued rejection; this was true for her mother and sisters also, as they also refused to kiss her father.

Darmon, Marcy and Natasha, watched as their grandmother kissed their sister and listened to the moans from both women. After June stepped back, Mary stepped in and spoke to her niece, "Honey, I can't lick your brother's cum out of your pussy yet, but I can certainly kiss you. If you would accept me that is."

Emily looked over at her brother and got a small nod, then turned back to her aunt before kissing her like her grandmother had. Amber, followed suit.

Marcy was horny and pulled her brother's head towards her and kissed him hard that lasted a few minutes before Natasha pulled her brother's head towards her and kissed him just as passionately. None of the kissing siblings saw their grandmother and aunts stripping off their bikini's. Emily was a little hesitant at first, but a little coaxing from Amber soon had her niece naked. Emily did look over at her brother to confirm he was still okay with this and saw that Marcy had pushed Darmon to the sun lounge and straddled his hips. Natasha was French kissing her brother as Marcy placed her brother's hands over her breasts for him to fondle them.

Darmon moaned into his sister's mouth as he looked up to see Marcy had placed her hands over his and was directing her brother to rub in circles and squeeze her breasts over her bikini top. Darmon was amazed at the size of his sister's breasts as they were so large they couldn't fill his hands. Marcy felt pleasure as her brother groped her breasts and moaned. She started to grind her bikini covered crotch against her brother's hard cock, which was still trapped within his trunks.

Marcy released her right hand covering her brother's, who continued to fondle her right breast with his left hand. She reached down with her right hand in-between them. Marcy lifted her bum up slightly to push down her brother's trunks to release his hard cock, which sprang up with a slap to hit his stomach. Marcy looked down and gasped at the size of her brother's cock, this caused Natasha to look down and broke the kiss to say loudly, "Fucking hell, you're huge, brother."

Emily to the side giggled as her sisters saw their brother's cock for the first time. June, Mary and Amber understood that the girls probably only had their father to compare against and did ponder how small Edward must be. Darmon looked over at the rest of his family and saw they were all looking towards him and his sisters whilst fondling their breasts and pussies.

Marcy moaned and trapped the base of her brother's cock against her bikini covered pussy. She leaned down and kissed her brother then moved to his neck to kiss and suck on his neck. Darmon noted that his eldest sister had a slight dominate nature as she marked him as hers with a hickey. Once she saw the red mark on her brother's neck she moved up to whisper into his ear, "Little brother, this is my mark to tell everyone that you also belong to someone else. Sometimes, I will be dominate and other times submissive. I will never get you to do something that you're against and I now know you would never force me to do something I'm against."

Marcy then sat back up and lifted the bikini top cups away from her large breasts. Darmon watched as his sister exposed her breasts for him. She had large dark brown areola's with puffy nipples that stood erect from her breasts. Darmon raised his hands up to cup and flick his index fingers on the taut nipples causing his sister to moan. Natasha went back to kissing her brother.

Marcy raised her bum a little and used her right hand to move the gusset of her bikini bottoms to the side. Darmon moved Natasha slightly so that he could watch his big sister. He saw that Marcy has longer labia that dropped down from her vulva with the a slight gap that hid the entrance to her vagina which glistened with moisture. Darmon also saw the triangle patch of pubic hair, neatly trimmed pointing towards clitoris. Marcy sat back down on her brother's cock so that her labia spread either side of his shaft and started a back and forth motion. Both, Marcy and Darmon moaned in pleasure.

Marcy then leaned down to her brother and said loudly enough for all to hear, "Little brother, I'm a little too horny for much foreplay and want you to make love to me. Next time I promise that you can lead and I will do anything you want."

Darmon continued to kiss Natasha as Marcy lifted up slightly and used her right hand to grasp her brother's cock and raise it up. She placed him at the entrance to her vagina and said loudly for everyone to hear, "With this, my love for you will be complete. I will forever be yours and you mine."

Everyone watched as Marcy took her brother into her very depth and shrieked as an orgasm rocked her body. Darmon moaned into his sister's mouth and heard cheers and clapping from the side as his grandmother, aunts and sister rejoiced in Darmon claiming another of his sisters.

Marcy started to raise up and down on her brother's cock after she regained control of her senses following her orgasm. Natasha broke the kiss and removed her bikini bottoms and moved over to straddle her brother's face. Darmon watched as his sister's pussy descended, and noted that she had a small landing strip on her pubic mound with small tight labia just visible from within her vulva. Darmon also saw that her clitoris was already peeking out of it's hood. Darmon didn't have more time to admire his sister's pussy before Natasha gently moved lower until her brother's lips were French kissing her neither lips. Natasha moaned and panted as she neared an orgasm.

Marcy continued to move up and down on her brother's cock and Natasha ground her pussy over her brother's face. 5 minutes later, Natasha exploded into an orgasm as Darmon latched on and sucked hard on her clitoris. Natasha screamed as she climaxed. She had her pussy held tight against her brother's face, until Darmon tapped her leg. Natasha moved off her brother and sat next to him.

Marcy seeing her brother's mouth free leaned down to kiss and lick her sister's juices from his face before French kissing him. Marcy continued to ride her brother hard and was nearing another orgasm as her pussy started to clamp and release her brother's cock. Marcy fell down hard on Darmon's cock to bury him deep inside as she shouted out, "Oh, fuck! I'm cumming, little brother. Cum in me now, PLEASE!"

Darmon felt his sister's pussy tighten around his deeply embedded cock with his glans pushed up against her cervix and let fire volley after volley of his sperm inside his sister. The mating siblings knew then that this would change everything and understood that they now belonged to each other. Marcy collapsed onto her brother and twitched as aftershocks of her orgasm rocked her body. Darmon held his sister close and kissed her hard before marking her as his with a hickey.

Darmon looked towards the others and found that his grandmother was scissoring his sister while his aunts were doing the same to each other. This sight prevented him from going soft as his cock twitched inside his sister. Marcy looked over at Natasha first and saw she was panting heavily, recovering from her orgasm and then looked over at her grandmother, aunts and sister. She moaned loudly at the sight before her.

June, Mary, Amber and Emily, all climaxed as the siblings recovered with loud screams that never rivaled those they made when Darmon was making love to them. Darmon was a little disappointed in that he didn't witness the full display of love between his women, but understood that this was a small price to pay to ensure his sister became his.

With Marcy's head close to her brother's head, stated and asked, "Darmon, I love you! I am yours now and forever. Will you allow grandma to lick your cum from my pussy? I will send Emily back to you whilst you make love to Natasha."

Darmon nodded and said, "Marcy, I love you too. You're mine now and thanks for asking my permission. Yes, you can! Soon as I claim our other sister then we will make plans for us to rescue mom. I aim to claim mom also and then we will punish dad."

Marcy, lifted off her brother's cock with a pop and his cum started to ooze out of her pussy. Marcy, put a hand over her pussy to stop the flow; with shaky legs walked over to her grandma and sister, who has just moved apart. Marcy address both, "Emily, go and sit on our man's face while Natasha makes love to him. Grandma, I have his permission for you to suck and lick his cum from my pussy, if

you want to. You might not get another chance for awhile as I intend to keep all his cum inside, so he can get me pregnant."

June didn't need to be asked twice and accepted her granddaughter's offer. Mary and Amber, watched as their niece stood over their mother, who had laid down on the sun lounger. Marcy's aunts watched as she removed her hand and saw their man's cum drip out of her pussy into the waiting mouth of her grandmother. Darmon heard the moans from his family and looked over to see Marcy sit down on their grandmother's face and saw his aunts kissing and fingering each other's pussies.

Darmon didn't notice when Natasha had moved down to his crotch, until he felt a hand wrap around his cock. Darmon looked down as Natasha took her brother's and sister's combined cum covered cock into her hand and then take him into her mouth. Natasha sucked and cleaned her brother's cock of his and her sister's cum. Natasha moaned loudly at the taste that assaulted her taste buds and swallowed every trace of their combined cum.

Emily still shaking from her orgasm as her clit was rubbing against her grandmother's clit, walked over to her brother before positioning herself to straddle her brother's face. "Little brother, thank you for allow me to experience sex with grandma. I really love you with all my heart."

Before Darmon could respond, Emily lowered her pussy to her brother's face. Darmon didn't waste much time in licking, pushing his tongue deep into her pussy and then clamp his mouth over her clit to such hard. Emily shrieked as another orgasm ripped through her body. Emily moved to the side when she saw her sister was ready to make love to their brother. Darmon looked down and saw Natasha held his cock up as she slowly impaled herself on his cock. Darmon noted that she was tight a lot tighter than any of his other women. Natasha shrieked in orgasm as she felt her brother's cock bottom out inside her as his glans pushed hard against her cervix.

Darmon heard cheers and clapping again, then looked over to see the rest had stopped any further love making and were now witness to their man claiming his last sister. Darmon waited until his sister calmed down as he kissed and marked her as his.

After Natasha has recovered enough, the siblings started to make love to each other, not caring about the others and only concentrated on themselves. Darmon would raise his hips as his sister descended down and pull back without leaving her pussy when they moved apart. Natasha was panting and moaning loudly and Darmon was grunting and moaning as he made love to his sister.

Natasha moved her mouth to her brother to French kiss him and noted the taste of her sister inside his mouth which caused her to start moving up and down on her brother faster and harder. Another 10 minutes later, Natasha let out a banshee scream as felt her pussy exploded in orgasm and this

tipped her brother over the edge as he felt jet after jet of his semen enter his sister. Darmon held onto his sister tightly and shrieked himself.

When Darmon recovered, he noticed his sister was crying. June, Mary and Amber, were surrounding them as well as his sisters, each were stroking Natasha's back. "Natasha, I love you. Dad, will never again hold sway over you or any of you, this I promise. I will get mom away from him also."

Natasha continued to cry and looked at her brother, "Am I truly your? Am I free from dad?"

Darmon looked at his sister with love and in a voice with total conviction, "Yes, Natasha. You are mine and I am yours. I promise you that dad cannot hurt you ever again, I will not allow it."

As Natasha continued to sob and in a quiet voice confessed to her brother, "I always wanted to be yours. I will always love you and will not allow anyone else to take that away from me. Promise me you will never leave me and never stop loving me."

It was June that answered her question, "Sweetie, your brother loves you and always has. He is never going to forsake you. As for your father, never mind your brother, I will not allow him to ever lay a hand on you again. We are your brother's women now and he is ours. As long as you are faithful to him he will always take care of you."

Mary added, "Honey, I can only imagine the suffering you, your sisters and mother have suffered. Just know that Darmon will protect us. He loves us all and we in turn love him."

Amber then soothed her niece, "Honey, shush. Do you not feel the love of your brother as he is still inside you? Do you not feel his arms around you with the promise that he will always protect you?"

Natasha calmed down as her sisters hugged and comforted her. Marcy was the one who offered her own opinion, "I for one am glad for this development in our relationship."

Marcy then looked at both her sisters in turn, before saying, "Emily, Natasha. I know this is something that we all wanted and now we have it. We will always stay together now with our brother. All we are missing is mom."

June took action again, "Everyone, let's leave the joined couple for a few more minutes, whilst we get ready for dinner. I need to go get dinner prepared. Mary, Amber, will you come help me please?"

Mary and Amber, agreed. June, Mary, Amber and Emily all walked naked towards their bedrooms to shower and get into their nightwear. Marcy stayed behind with her brother and sister.

"So tell me sis, was it everything you expected?" Mary asked with a chuckle.

This actually brought a smile to Natasha's face and looked over at her sister who was sitting near her head what was resting on her brother's chest. Natasha giggled which caused her brother's cock which was still inside her to wriggle around, "It's better than I expected. It's the first time I've cum with a cock inside me."

"Yeah, dad is no comparison to our brother. It was a first for me also, sis. I never knew it could be this good. Well, I suppose if all you can compare against is dad, who didn't care for anyone but himself then I can honestly say, our brother is a million times better," Marcy continued.

Darmon remained silent letting his sisters talk. "We just need to get mom free from dad so she can also experience this level of passion and total commitment in a loving relationship. I doubt mom is going to put up any resistance. She already know about us and how we really feel, she only has to see how happy we are to be fully onboard," Marcy said.

"Yeah, I know," Natasha replied.

Marcy, gently slapped her sister's butt and giggling said, "Sis, do you plan to stay locked with our brother forever? If you do then there is sure to be some very upset women, including me. We, all, need to get up showered and ready for dinner."

Natasha squealed in mock hurt then with a giggle separated from her brother. She got up with her brother's cum dribbling down her leg. Both women grabbed their brother and helped him up. Darmon drew both women into his embrace and kissed them both on the lips tenderly before asking, "How about you both come to my room, so we can shower together?"

The sister's nodded and were lead by Darmon towards his bedroom, after they each picked up the discarded bikini's and trunks.

In the bedroom, Darmon got his first look at Natasha's breasts as she undressed. She had small pink areola's and darker pink nipples that were starting to get erect as her brother removed his trunks. Darmon notices that her breasts were small in comparison with their mother and sisters. Natasha saw the looks that her brother was giving her breasts and became shy and began to hide her breasts. She said in a very quiet voice, "Sorry, there not as big as mom or my sisters." Natasha looked down at her feet afraid that her brother hated small breasts.

Darmon moved towards his sister and gently removed her hands to uncover her breasts before telling his sister, "Sis, never hide your breasts from me. Every woman is different and I actually find your breasts delightful. For me I find the breasts of our grandma, aunts and you my sisters a feast for my eyes." Darnon then leaned down to lick and suck on her left nipple. Natasha moaned in pleasure.

"Our little brother is right, sis. Mom, Emily or I, never found issue with your breasts. When dad was forcing us to do lesbian things, I can tell you as fact that I enjoyed sucking on them. I am sure mom and Emily felt the same. I've got the largest breasts out of mom, Emily and you and sometimes I wished I could have your size," Marcy confessed which caused Natasha to look at her sister in shock.

"Really, I always wished I had your size. I would sometimes, get jealous of mom and Emily licking and sucked on yours," Natasha stated as she blushed.

Darmon stop suckling and embraced his sisters and simply stated, "It doesn't matter to me your shape or size. All that matter's to me is that you love me and I love you. Let's shower and then we can walk back to each of your rooms so that you can change into nightwear before dinner."

Marcy chuckled, "Yeah, I'm feeling like a nice hot shower is going to help after sweating so much in that orgy we just had."

Darmon laughed as they moved to the bathroom, "Yeah, that was surprising and means that from now on having fun with any of you would be a lot easier." Darmon turned on the shower and got in, followed by his sisters.

Initially, brother and sisters did wash each other with body wash and shampoo their hair, but having their hands caress each other soon had Darmon hard and his sisters panting in arousal. Marcy who hadn't yet sucked on her brother's cock, knelt down and used her hand to jack him before taking him into her mouth. Natasha decided to play and suck on her brother's nipples. Darmon moaned in pleasure from the duel attack of his sisters. A few minutes later, Darmon was blasting a fresh load into his eldest sister's mouth, who swallowed everything.

Darmon was panting heavily and needed a few minutes to recover. The first thing he notices were both of his sisters were pressed against his sides. Darmon moved forward then faced his sisters, he first French kissed Marcy and then did the same to Natasha. As he was kissing his sisters, Darmon moved his hands to finger their pussies simultaneously, bring them both to quick orgasms. Marcy and Natasha moaned loudly as they reached their peak and nearly collapsed to the shower floor if it wasn't for their brother holding them up with his fingers still embedded inside them.

After Natasha recovered, she spoke first, "Darmon, is it always going to be like this with you? I mean... not that I'm complaining... it's just that I love cumming with you."

Darmon chuckled, "Sis, we've only just started, this is the first day of our relationship. I enjoy making love with you and all my women. I promise that I will not be like our father, who only seeks his own release. I will always strive to make you cum multiple times and whenever we do have sex I will always put one load deep inside to coat your womb."

Darmon got a serious look on his face, "You know the rules and I would like to ask you both to sleep with me tonight. I can't promise to have further sex with you tonight as think our aunts need some of my time today. I spent the night with Emily and had to put them off until today. If I can't make love to either of you tonight then I will certainly do that in the morning."

Marcy laughed, "Oh, the pains of having a harem, hey little brother. I am pretty sure, I can speak for my sister as I say, we understand. We know we have to share you and we're okay with that, to be honest."

After that any further discussions ended and they showered properly. Darmon got changed into his nightwear and then went to Natasha's room for her to change before then going to Marcy's room to change.

Dinner was eaten is a lot of laughter as each understood their role in 'family love'. They understood that Darmon was their man and 'head of the family' and they were all his women, in a bond that was stronger than any familial bonds alone.

After dinner and with the dishes added to the dishwasher, Darmon asked, "Everyone, instead of our usual fun of watching a movie or playing cards, can we all return to the dinning table to discuss our next plans, please?"

Everyone agreed and 10 minutes later, everyone was seated at the table again. Darmon opened the talks, "Firstly, the orgy this afternoon was something else and I enjoyed it and hope everyone else did also."

When Darmon looked around the room, he saw blushes on each of their faces. Darmon smiled then said, "Now, I know that those I didn't claim today had some fun together and for that I don't have a problem. I just want to make it clear and ask that you don't do this behind my back. As a concession, I will allow you all to express your love for each other by allowing you to kiss each other with or without me present. I just don't want you to have sex with each other without me being a participant or present."

June was the one who answered her grandson's plea, "Darling, you have nothing to fear, and thank you for allow us to express our love for each other. I am sure it will come as a great relief for some of us, if not all. As per the rules, you have made your wish and desire known and we are bound to those rules. None of us will have sex with each other without you as an active participant or present."

Darmon looked around at all the women and saw each nodded in agreement. Darmon sighed in relief, "Wow, these rules are still new to me grandma and I somewhat feared a lot of push back."

"Honey, the rules are there to protect you and well as us. You don't want to be hurt, and us doing something behind your back would be like how your father went behind your back with your girlfriends, mother and sisters. We know the pain that can cause and we understand you don't want to experience that level of pain ever again," Amber said to sooth her nephew.

Everyone saw the tension leave Darmon's body. Darmon then moved onto the next subject, "Thank you for understanding. The next topic is how to free mom and punish dad. Anyone have any idea's?"

Marcy opened the discussion, "Not sure what's there to discuss. Darmon, should do what dad was going to do to him, disown him and in the process he would rescue mom."

Mary said, "That is fine, but don't you feel it's a little bit of a cope out on the punishment for Edward?"

Marcy replied to her aunt, "Not really. What is the one thing that dad flaunted at us all? The money he has access to and how he could use that to blackmail his family. Take his money away and also his family then he is left with nothing."

Darmon pondered this, as his sister and aunt were discussing, and said with an edge of anger in his voice, "Yes, that is one possibility, but that doesn't punish him for taking my girlfriends."

June laid a hand on her grandson's hand and gently rubbed the back of his hand, "Darling, we know."

Darmon looked over at his grandmother and smiled, "Grandma, I have a wacky idea myself, but I first need to ask how much you care for your son?"

Darmon then looked over at his aunts, "Aunt Mary and aunt Amber, how much you care for your brother?"

Darmon then looked over at his sisters, "Marcy, Emily and Natasha, do you have any feelings at all for dad? I know I don't. Mom already told me he hated me and thought of me as a rival."

Darmon paused as he let each decide for themselves before presenting his plan. June was the first to respond, "Darling, he is my son and I will always have a small part of my heart that has some feelings towards him. I will hear your plan before..." June trailed off and everyone knew this wasn't going to be easy for her.

Mary and Amber looked at each other before Amber gave her response, "My sister and I do not have any feelings towards our brother. For a long time now, we've not been able to call him big brother with any loving emotions, only hatred. Initially, he was fine with us but as he got into his early twenties, after that he was cruel towards us. Any love we might have had for him evaporated when he learned of the relationship his sisters had after Mary and I had after I turned 18. Then he took delight in tormenting us by calling us hurtful names and even on some occasions used force on us. Mom and Dad were the only ones that accepted us for who we were. So, honey, if you want to kill him then I will bring the shovel."

June, Marcy, Emily and Natasha, all gasped. Mary then continued as she looked at her mother, "Sorry, mom. It's the way we both feel."

Darmon then looked towards his sisters. Emily was the one that answered her brother's question, "I think I can speak for all of us. We all loved dad, up until he forced and blackmailed us into being his sex slaves. He took away the one thing that we all wanted to give to the one we truly loved. The fact that he got us all to do some disgusting things as well as making sure we all did lesbian things with each other. Let's also not forget how he would make us seduce our brother's girlfriends, especially if money wouldn't do it. Then forcing us to hide everything from Darmon."

Darmon let everyone ponder how each felt before saying, "Thank you all for being honest with me."

Darmon took a moment to collect his thoughts before outlining his plan, "For starters, until dad's punishment is near completion, none of you will come before dad. You know dad would always try to take what was mine and leave me with nothing. I propose that we hire a young woman who through no fault of her own has contracted HIV to pose as my girlfriend."

Darmon heard further gasps from everyone, but the all remained silent.

Darmon continued, "I will take her home with me, alone, and make it so that mom will leave to come here on the pretense of collecting my sisters to return home. I expect true to form, dad, will try to send me away again leaving my girlfriend alone with him. I will of course return here, so that I can claim mom. Dad, I think will initially try to get mom to seduce her. I will inform mom this is a ruse and not to fall for it. Dad, I think will then revert to bribing my girlfriend. I want dad to have unprotected sex with her to contract HIV."

"When I return home, it will be with all of you so that dad can see what being hated feels like. For the young woman we hire, we should pay to help her with her treatment. In most cases, any patient with HIV can continue to live normally well until their 70's or 80's. When dad finds out that he can no longer blackmail mom or my sisters and understands that I have the power to cut him off, he will be forced to bend to my will. I will ensure that dad, of course, will have a small stipend on which he will have to live with his guilt over his actions. How he uses that money is up to him. He wanted me to get beat up on a regular basis, so I intend to brand his forehead and just above his pubic mound that he is HIV positive. This should curtail a lot of his ardor and any would be pussy that he could bribe into his bed."

"Above all else, I want him to witness me taking his mother, his sisters, my mother and my sisters. I want him to see how I've won and how to treat a woman right," Darmon concluded.

Darmon then looked over at his grandmother, who had tears in her eyes before taking her in his arms and telling her, "Grandma, this is going to be hardest on you. I won't want him to be disowned, unless he does something drastic like hurt any of you. I will ask that you continue to allow him a small amount each month to live on and for treatments. I will not bring myself to harm in any physical way, other than the branding. I will not have him beaten, as he always threatened to do to me. After all, I would never wish to harm my own father, even if I wasn't planned, considering that he did still sire me."

Marcy, Emily and Natasha gasped at the last statement as they weren't aware I wasn't planned.

June sighed and settled into her grandson's embrace, "Darling, I'm not totally happy with the plan even though I know Edward needs to feel a fitting punishment. Just please don't kill your own father. If you can promise that then I think I can come to live with this."

"Grandma, if he tries to rape, hurt or do anything else against any of you then I might not be able to control myself, other than that I can make that promise to you," Darmon uttered with total conviction.

Natasha was quiet for awhile before she said, "Fucking hell, brother. I'm glad I'm on your side, I almost feel sorry for dad!"

"Grandma, do we have the budget to hire this pretend girlfriend and for her treatment?" Darmon asked.

June leaned up to kiss her grandson before replying, "Yes, darling. Your father will no longer have access to the money where he could blackmail his family, and if it to punish Edward then it is available to you."

"Grandma, just so you're aware, this does mean that if dad doesn't spend some of the money he will get towards treatment then his life expectancy is likely going to be lower. I don't want this even after all the things he has done to our family. I want him to suffer as befitting his punishment only and nothing more," Darmon continued to sooth his grandmother.

Mary was the one that actually laughed to break the tension and chuckling said, "Edward didn't want a rival and his actions actually made it come true. I can't wait to see his face as his son lays claim to my womb and makes me black out; letting him know that he could have been in his son's place if he had made different choices."

Amber teased her sister, "Sis, how are you going to see his expression if our nephew makes you black out? I'll tell you what so that we can always play it back and laugh at Edward, I will record it for you sis."

June once again took control, "This has been a very heavy after dinner talk. I suggest that we all get off to sleep and I will ask Mary to look into a suitable young woman to pose as your girlfriend, darling."

"Aunties, I know Emily asked for exclusivity yesterday, but today I would like to service you both. Just note that Marcy and Natasha would also be present and want to sleep next to me. They know that

tonight is for our aunts and I will ensure they get some of my time in the morning," Darmon asked his aunts and by extension his sisters he claimed today.

Mary and Amber, squealed in delight and quickly got up as they lead their nephew and nieces towards Darmon's bedroom. June and Emily, smiled and went off to their own bedrooms.

In the bedroom there was no pretense of modesty and everyone stripped naked. Darmon French kissed his sisters first before moving over to his aunts. Mary moaned into her nephew's mouth as Darmon fully made out with her. The kiss lasted for more than 5 minutes before, there was a gentle tap on Mary's shoulder. Mary broke the kiss with a flushed face to look at her sister. Amber had a look of pure lust on her face and narrowed her eyes at her sister. Mary quietly said, "Sorry, sis. Kissing our man has that effect on me. I never want to stop."

Amber moved into the space left by her sister and used both hands behind her nephew's head to pull him down to French kiss him. This kiss also lasted about 5 minutes. When Amber broke the kiss, Darmon looked at his women and saw lust mixed with love in their expressions.

"Little brother, can I make a request please?" Marcy asked. Darmon nodded his head to acknowledge the question.

"As you make love to our aunts, will you allow my sister and I to make out and have intimate contact?" Marcy asked her real question.

"Sure, I don't mind. Although, I would have really liked to watch and participate," Darmon confirmed.

Natasha had a look of shock on her face, "Uhhh, brother. My sister and I can wait. It's just that seeing you fuck our aunts would have us sexually aroused."

Darmon moved over to Natasha and held her cheek in his hand. He looked into his sisters eyes before confirming, "Hey, sis. Marcy and yourself can have fun, and as long as you do this with me present then it's fine."

Natasha nodded her head, kissed her brother tenderly before moving over to her sister. Darmon returned to his aunts, "Now where were we?"

Amber giggled, moved in front of her nephew and pushed him so he fell onto his back onto the bed, "Oh, you already know where we were. You were going to make love to your aunts and ensure we get pregnant."

Darmon laughed. Mary then spoke up, "Honey, there is something that both my sister and I have always wanted to try. Can you move to the center of the bed for us please?"

Darmon moved to the center and waited for his aunts. "Honey, we're going to try something that we've never tried before and this would form part of our foreplay before you take us both. Before that we need to make sure you're slick enough," Amber said.

Darmon and his sisters watched as their aunts moved either side of him and began to kiss and lick his shaft from the base to the tip. Darmon was moaning in pleasure. Marcy and Natasha, held each other close, moaning loudly as each had their hand in the other's pussy, gently fondling and caressing their sister's labia and clitoris.

When Mary and Amber had coated their nephew's cock in saliva. Mary got up and put both of her legs over Darmon's, so that her labia made direct contact to one side of his cock. Amber moved and position herself to lay her legs on top of her sister's to trap her nephews cock the other side with her pussy. Mary and Amber shuffled around a little as they would if they were going to scissor each other. Darmon's cock was trapped between his aunts pussies with the labia of each of his aunts pressed hard against his cock. Slowly in rhythm the sister's moved up, down and side to side, stimulating their nephew's cock.

Marcy and Natasha were moaning loudly as the sight of what their aunts were doing to their brother's cock. Darmon was also moaning and trying hard to not cum too quickly. Darmon was sure, he felt wetness coat his cock as one of his aunts would orgasm with loud moan or shriek. Soon Darmon lost count or even cared how many times his aunts climaxed. Darmon suffered the torture of his aunts for a good 10 minutes before he had to stop them, "Fuck! Aunties, please stop. I don't want to cum like this... *PANT* *MOAN* I want it to be inside you. *MOAN*"

Mary and Amber, giggled, before breaking apart and lay besides their nephew to let him calm down a little. Darmon had his eyes closed and felt light kisses on either side of his face until they both reached his mouth together. Mary and Amber then brought their lips together with their nephew's into a three-way kiss with three tongues coming out to play. Darmon and his aunts heard from the side Marcy and Natasha each have an orgasm after they had witnessed something so erotic that it pushed them over the edge. The younger sibling sisters moaned and shrieked loudly as they climaxed.

After the three-way kissed broke apart, Darmon panting uttered the words that he truly felt, "Aunties, I love you, both! I'm so fucking in love with you, both."

Mary and Amber, giggled and almost simultaneously replied, "Oh honey, we love you too!"

Marcy and Natasha collapsed onto their backs on the bed panting heavily. They had cum more times in this one single day than they ever had in any single day. While, they had never cum with their father, they had still cum when getting licked or eaten by their mother or their sisters. They never knew pleasure on this scale before and wanted more. Marcy and Natasha, while they didn't express their love for their brother at this exact moment, still felt it in their hearts. Darmon's sisters knew they had found what they were missing all this time; they loved their brother with every fiber of their bodies.

"Honey, are you ready to make love to me, now?" Mary asked.

Darmon chuckled, "Of course, I am. Between all of my women wanted me to service them, I feel you're all going to kill me, but what a way to go, huh? Would you like to ride me aunt Mary? Reverse cowgirl, so that aunt Amber could get in on the act."

Mary and Amber both giggled. "Oh honey, that is a wonderful idea," Amber replied. Mary then straddled her nephew facing away from his head, lifted up and took hold of his cock before pointing it towards her sister. Amber took her nephew's cock into her mouth to suck and bob on it a few times before moving her nephew's cock into position to enter her sister. Mary pushed down and they all watched as it slowly entered. Mary didn't understand how it always happens, but as Darmon bottomed out in her and his glan pushed hard against her cervix, she let out a banshee scream as an orgasm would rip through her body.

Mary after she recovered from her intense orgasm, started to cry and sob. Amber, held her sister in her arms and kissed her sister's forehead and cheeks. Amber with concern asked, "Sis?"

Mary looked at her sister, smiled and sobbed, "Oh Amber, these are tears of joy. Not even dad could make me cum like our nephew does. While I am so happy, I'm also sad! I love you sis, and will always love you but I love my nephew more. I'm sorry, sis."

Amber laughed, "Nothing to feel sorry for. It is right to love our man more than me. He has something I don't and will put his child in you and in each of us. I love you too, sis, although I am sure that I feel the same way you do. Sex with dad was fun, but he couldn't give us what we wanted or needed. The life that will grow in us will be a part of our nephew and testament of our love for him."

Marcy and Natasha heard their aunt's talking and were shocked somewhat on how their brother could effect all of them, on this scale. Darmon's sisters then watched as their aunt started to rock up and down on his cock.

Mary started to rock her hips up and down and side to side to build up towards another orgasm. Amber, kissed her sister, tenderly at first which then moved on to full on French kissing. Amber, grabbed her sisters breasts to fondle and pinch her nipples. Mary was moaning into her sister's mouth. Darmon looked over at his sister's and motioned for them to come closer.

As soon as Marcy and Natasha came close to their brother, he brought their faces down to kiss each of his sisters into a three-way kiss. Darmon played with each of his sister's breasts before moving down to finger them both. Marcy and Natasha were panting hard and moaning into their kiss.

Mary pushed her sister's face down towards her breasts to play with and suck on them for awhile as she continued to ride her nephew. Mary was nearing another explosive orgasm and pushed her sister's face down further; Amber was fully enjoying this and didn't resist her sister. Soon, she was kissing her nephew's shaft as it entered her sister before licking up towards her sister's clitoris. Amber felt and saw that her nephew was about to cum inside her sister.

On a hard downward thrust from his aunt, Darmon let fire as his seed was about to pool against the womb opening of his aunt. As Amber felt the first blast rise up her nephew's shaft, she clamped down hard on her sister's clit to suck hard and flick the bean with her tongue. Mary let out another banshee shriek as she and Darmon climaxed at the same time. True to form, as Mary felt the first blast hit her cervix she blacked out. Amber was ready to support her sister and chuckled to herself, knowing this was going to happen. Darmon remained locked with Mary, as Amber moved her sister to lay her upper body flat on the bed with her legs still straddling her nephew.

Marcy and Natasha, both had strong orgasms and were shocked when their aunt blacked out. It was a good 15 minutes before Mary came back and lifted off her nephew to lay flat on her back in contentment. Surprising, Mary's gentle clamping pussy, squeezing and releasing over and over again, kept Darmon hard as she milked her nephew's cock. Amber lay back on the bed and motioned for her nephew to mount her. She didn't care that his cock was covered in the combined juices of her nephew and sister.

Marcy and Natasha were no longer surprised and far too exhausted to do anymore than just lay to the side to wait for their brother to make love to their other aunt.

Darmon pushed up both of his aunt's legs, so they lay flat against his shoulder and positioned himself as if doing press-ups with his cock resting against his aunts pubic mound. Amber took hold of her nephew's cock and position him to enter her. Darmon, pushed down hard with his hips and entered

his aunt in a hard and deep thrust. The sudden hard thrust pushed deep and hard against her cervix to knock on her womb entrance seeking entry. This of course had caused Amber to let out a shriek as an orgasm rocked her body. Soon Darmon, while still remaining in the press-up position used his hips to drive hard and deep into his aunt.

Amber wasn't sure if she was having multiple orgasms or just one continuous one and truthfully she didn't care as the pleasure of mating with her nephew caused all other thoughts and outside influences to be meaningless to her. After 10 minutes of fucking his aunt like this, Darmon was getting tired and started to give his aunt deeper, harder thrusts. Another 5 minutes were all that Darmon could take and felt his cock explode inside his aunt.

Amber felt the first volley hit her cervix as her nephew pushed hard against her womb. She let out a deafening wail and fell limp as she also blacked out. Darmon lay suspended off his aunt using his arms to support his weight from crushing his aunt, but remained fully inside her as he pumped more seed against her cervix. Mary laughed, "Sis, can't tease me anymore. Now she knows what it feels like."

Darmon slowly pulled out of Amber and flopped to the side in-between his aunts. "I'm sorry, auntie. I'm done for now. I can't put another load into you until after I get some sleep," Darmon said defeated.

Mary chuckled, "Honey, I doubt that my sister or I could take another pounding either. With the way you make love to us, I am sure we will be carrying your child within us pretty soon."

Amber came around after 10 minutes and the first thing she did was look over at her sister, over Darmon's body. "Sis, what happened?", Amber asked.

Mary giggled, "You can't tease me anymore, sis. Our man just did to you what he always does to me."

"Seriously?" Amber asked confused and shocked at the news.

"Yep, welcome to the club now," Mary replied giggling like a schoolgirl. Amber was too exhausted to even come back with a retort.

Darmon rolled over Amber, kissed her hard and whispered to her, "I love you, auntie." Amber melted when she heard her nephew's words. "Sorry, can I ask you to lay next to your sister? I promised to hold and protect my own sisters as part of claiming them. I hope you don't mind?" Darmon stated.

Amber moved into the embrace of her sister as Darmon moved between his sisters. Darmon soon had both of his sisters in his embrace as they all got some sleep.

During the night, Darmon woke up and moved over his eldest sister, Marcy, and in-between her legs. Marcy woke up as her brother entered her. Marcy groggily looked up at her brother, before asking, "Little brother, aren't you sated enough for today?"

Darmon smiled and shook his head, leaned down to give his sister a hickey and then whisper to her, "Sis, I can never get enough of making love to you or any of our family." Darmon then made love to his sister, the grunts, moans and the shaking bed soon had Natasha awake and feeling horny seeing her brother and sister making love. Mary and Amber also awoke to see the siblings mating. Soon, Marcy climaxed with a loud scream and her brother let fire a large dose of his semen inside his sister. After a few minutes to make sure his cock was blocking his cum from leaving his sister, Darmon slowly pulled out and moved over to hug his other sister, Natasha.

Darmon cuddled up with Natasha and whisper, "Sis, give me 10 minutes please and then I will make love to you." Natasha nodded and in the interim made out with her brother. Darmon and his siblings could hear the sounds of kissing from their aunts. Natasha was playing with her brother cock as it started to grow hard again. When Darmon felt his cock sufficiently hard enough, mounted Natasha and slid in easily as she was very wet. Darmon was still amazed at how tight she was and soon built up good rhythm as he pushed in and out of his sister.

15 minutes of the siblings making love, had pushed Natasha to have several mini orgasms. Natasha let out a banshee scream as she felt the blast of her brother's cum flood her pussy and had the biggest orgasm of this night. Natasha was digging her nails into her brother's back as she moaned and panted to try and get some air into her lungs. Darmon lay locked inside his sister and they kissed, with Darmon marking his sister in his usual way. Instead of pulling out, Darmon moved his sister to lay on top of him and pulled Marcy towards him as sleep finally claimed them. Darmon remained embedded in Natasha throughout the night.

Meanwhile, June and Emily who were in their bedrooms just heard the screams and loud moans of the 'family love' women having orgasm after orgasm. June was giddy with joy as she knew that she had correctly appointed her grandson as the right person to lead this family. She knew Darmon would usher in the next generation and was looking forward to it. June now understood that the 'head of the family' could never have been Edward or her late husband, even if it pained her admit it. June was eager to get her daughter-in-law into the 'family love' and when it happens then this family would finally be where she always wanted it to be.

Emily had been playing with her pussy and having orgasm after orgasm, but had to stop after the fifth orgasm because her pussy became sore. Emily didn't know if she could survive this and was sure that her brother was going to put her in hospital.

Eventually, the night's silence had June and Emily, finally get some sleep.

Chapter 7

Darmon woke up with the usual morning wood, only it was different this time. He opened his eyes and looked directly into his sister, Natasha's eyes which were glazed in lust. Darmon felt the pressure on his cock grip and release, gently. Memories, of having his sister sleep on him with his cock still embedded inside her brought him fully awake.

Darmon looked over at his other sister, Marcy, who was awake and smiling at her brother. Darmon turned his head the other way to see his aunts. Mary was spooning Amber and both had their eyes open looking at nephew and nieces. Darmon's left hand was trapped under his sister Marcy but had enough movement to fondle her left breast. Darmon's right hand was free, and he used that to grasp Natasha's bum.

Natasha, realized that her brother was now awake, started to grind her hips down onto her brother's crotch. Natasha was groaning and moaning as her brother's cock was started to bump against her cervix, she felt an orgasm quickly approach and started to move up and down on her brother's cock. Natasha started to speed up and soon reached the point of no return and exploded into an orgasm. Darmon heard his sister scream loudly and then burst into tears.

Darmon was concerned and held his sister close. "What's up sis?" Darmon asked.

Natasha lifted her head slightly and kissed her brother hard and with a lot of passion before answering her brother, "Darmon, I just feel so happy. I slept so peacefully in your arms last night, and this morning I felt you still inside me. I'm sorry for ignoring you and resenting you for something you had no knowledge of. I, now, know I was always meant to be yours and am now."

Darmon kissed his sister tenderly before telling her, "Hey, sis. You're mine now and will be for all our lives. I was hurt when everyone started to ignore me, but that is in the past now and I understand why it happened. That goes for you too Marcy and aunties, I will always be there for you now and ensure that all of you feel safe and protected."

Darmon wasn't expecting the mad rush of all the women suddenly throwing themselves at him, to kiss him wherever they could. His cheeks, lips, forehead and neck were all areas that got plenty of kisses.

"Oh, my beautiful, nieces and handsome nephew, my sister and I are going to go to our own room to shower and get breakfast going. In the interim, Darmon, make love to your sisters as you promised and then come to breakfast," Mary said to her nephew and nieces.

Mary and Amber got up to leave after picking up their nightwear. Darmon looked over and spoke up before they left, "Uhhh, Aunties, I think you are forgetting something."

Darmon's aunts looked at each other puzzled. Darmon chuckled before saying, "Did you forget the morning greeting?"

"Morning greeting?" Amber asked.

"Yes, each morning whether it be in our bed if you spent the night with me or in the dining room, I would always expect a morning kiss and none of those silly pecks either," Darmon answered.

"Oh, I think I will like this new tradition, does that also include, every one of your women kissing each other in this morning greeting?" Mary asked.

Darmon pondered this for a moment and then simply said, "Yes, if they want to that is."

Mary and Amber, quickly moved over to their nephew and both French kissed him for a minute each, then tenderly kissed their nieces; not sure yet if they should go as far as French kissing them. There were small moans of pleasure from all the women before Mary and Amber left.

Darmon then returns his attention back to his sisters. He flexes his still hard cock inside his sister, Natasha's tight pussy. Natasha squeals and then moans in pleasure before looking at her brother with pure lust on her face before kissing him hard with her tongue duelling inside her mouth. As the lust mounts, Natasha starts to rock up and down on her brother. Marcy to the side is watching her siblings making love, whilst fondling her breasts, pinching her nipples and fingering her pussy with two fingers. Marcy moaned in pleasure whilst watching her brother and sister.

Darmon still locked in a duel with Natasha had their lips pressed tight against each other's, raised his hands up to play with his sister's small breasts, flicking his finger over each hard nipple. Natasha

pushed down hard and shrieked into her brother's mouth as another orgasm hit her hard. Darmon, felt he really need to seed his sister, moved his hands to her butt and helped raise and lower her onto his cock. Natasha's muffled moans told Darmon that she was feeling her orgasm as he helped her continue with their mating.

Natasha hadn't completely got over her last orgasm as another was on its way. Natasha broke the kiss, panting heavily and moaned loudly. Darmon grunted and moaned, as he felt his cum leave his balls and shoot up his shaft and splash against cervix. Natasha felt her brother's cum inside her and let out a loud scream as she shook and trembled. Natasha felt an overload of pleasure as her orgasm rocked her to the core. She had never felt so close to her brother before and never wanted this feeling to ever end.

Marcy had her own orgasm watching her siblings. She had seen the look on her sister's face and wondered if she also made that type of expression when cumming on her brother's cock. Darmon held his sister tight to his chest as her pussy was milking his cock and held her down on his cock whilst she was twitching.

It was over 5 minutes before Natasha stopped twitching and stopped squeezing and releasing her brother's cock before the siblings parted with an audible pop and a pussy fart. Natasha blushed at the sound with her eldest sister giggling.

"Big sis, come stand to the side of the bed and bend down. I'm still hard and want to make love to you in a standing doggy style. Marcy, I will allow it, if you want to eat my cum from last night and this morning from our sister's pussy as I make love to you, if Natasha doesn't mind it that is," Darmon ordered.

Natasha pondered whether she wanted to keep her brother's cum fully inside her, but then felt his cum start to dribble out, so moved into position before her sister's face. Marcy looked over her shoulder at her brother with a lustful look before diving into her sisters cum oozing pussy.

Marcy felt her brother tease her by putting his cock at her entrance then push up or down to simulate not being able to enter a virgin pussy. Marcy moaned and stopped eating her sister to let her dominate side out; shouted, "FUCKING STOP TEASING ME YOU ASSHOLE. PUT YOUR FUCKING COCK IN ME NOW AND FUCK THE SHIT OUT OF ME, LITTLE BROTHER."

Darmon chuckled and teased her by slapping his cock against her clitoris a couple of time which caused his sister to groan in frustration before lining his cock, then plunged in deep with a single hard thrust into her vagina. Marcy, screamed as an orgasm ripped through her body, when her brother's cock rammed hard against her womb opening. Marcy would have collapsed, if she wasn't impaled on her brother's cock and had his hands holding her up.

Darmon took total control of his sister and started to fuck her as hard as she wanted, not letting her recover from her current orgasm. Marcy's head was being pushed and pulled away from Natasha's pussy with the hard thrusts her brother was giving her. Natasha was now groaning in frustration as her sister's lips and tongue would tease her as they moved to and from her pussy. Darmon took pity on Natasha and stopped the hard thrusts to more gentle thrusts.

Darmon felt Marcy orgasm again and watched as Natasha raise her butt off the bed and shake in orgasm. Darmon who initially was fucking his sister was now making sweet love to her. After 15 minutes of making love to his sister, had him close to releasing inside her. Over the course of their loving making Darmon had made his eldest sister cum a few more times and saw Natasha also cumming once more. Darmon felt his sister's pussy twitching and knew she was close to another orgasm. He tried to time his own climax with hers.

Darmon, pushed in hard with his cock pressed hard against her cervix and released his load into his sister. Marcy's own orgasm hit her hard as she felt her brother's seed inside her. Marcy's body was shaking and twitching in spasms, and she let out a shout, "FUCK ME, IIII'MMMM CUMMING..."

Natasha quickly moved away and watched as her sister twitched, as if she was having a fit of some sort. Darmon was concerned he had hurt his sister in some way and tried to pull out. Marcy even in her current state, screamed at him, "IF YOU PULL OUT NOW, I'M GOING TO KILL YOU!"

Darmon and Natasha were shocked when they heard this. This outburst even had June rushing to the room. She didn't even knock and burst into the room to witness what the hell was going on. June saw her twitching granddaughter and grandson, fully embedded inside his sister. She knew the only thing holding Marcy up with Darmon and his cock.

June laughed which broke the tension. Darmon looked at his grandmother in confusion. June smiled and came up to both of her grandchildren joined together and laid a hand on his arm, "Darling, don't take what your sister is saying to heart. You just overloaded her ability to reason and it's her instinct that wants every chance to get pregnant. Marcy will let you leave her pussy after she has calmed down."

Darmon was relieved to know that and a few minutes later, he felt his sister pull away from his cock and flop on to the bed. Marcy started to cry and sob, "Darmon, I didn't mean what I said. I could never kill you. You shouldn't have teased me too much. I don't like that side of me coming out too much. I love you and could never hurt you."

June, Darmon and Natasha saw how she felt and how Darmon might now feel about her. June gently pushed her grandson towards his sister. Darmon wrapped his sister into his embrace. Darmon chuckled, "Not going to lie, sis. You frightened me there. I can't promise to not tease you sometimes, but I know you would never do anything to harm me. I love you too!"

Darmon and Marcy kissed and then beckoned Natasha over to join in the kissing. June chuckled and went to leave, but Darmon stopped her, "Grandma, not sure if my aunts have told you yet, but new tradition, when first meeting for the day, we have to kiss and that includes everyone."

June wasn't aware of the new rule that was being added to 'family love' but seemed to like it and accepted it. June went over to her grandson and French kissed him, that lasted a few minutes with some serious tongue action. June then French kissed her granddaughters, just a little less than her grandson and a lot less tongue action. June had been moaning and getting aroused, as the kissing went on. She left the siblings panting heavily and pulling the crotch of her shorts away from her soaking wet pussy.

After June left the siblings had a shower with only minimal touching as they all were sated for the moment. They brushed their teeth and went off to the dining room.

June returned to the kitchen and saw her daughters. She went over to them and kissed each with a deep French kiss. Mary laughed after the kiss, "So, Darmon introduced a new rule to 'family love', which I'm fully onboard with, as is Amber."

June chuckled, "Yeah, our man amazes me every day. This is what a true 'head of the family' should be like. He doesn't hesitate to claim what is his but is patient enough to give us all the space we need and then is attentive enough to make sure he takes care of our needs. Edward could never be as great of a man as Darmon is."

Amber laughed, "And that is why we love him. If he continues to cum inside us, it's only a matter of time before we are pregnant. I hope he manages that before we come before Edward to throw it in his face. I want to see his balls drop in despair when he finds out we, all of us, are his women. It felt good when I kicked him in the balls for touching Mary that's when I told him that he didn't have the right to touch her as she belonged to another. I want to see him cry when he learns it's his son."

"You're cruel, sis. But yeah, feeling his grubby hands on me felt disgusting. Glad, Darmon washed away that feeling when we got back," Mary added.

Emily arrived and saw her grandmother and aunts in the kitchen and went over to them, "Need any help?"

As soon as she entered the kitchen, June went over to her granddaughter and went to kiss her, Emily stopped her grandmother, "Stop Grandma, not without Darmon's approval."

June laughed, "Emily, sweetie. You heard your brother yesterday evening; he doesn't mind his women expressing their love for each other and this morning he seems to have introduced a new rule to 'family love'. Each morning, when we all meet each other for the first time that day, we all greet each other with a kiss."

Emily was confused at first and then leaned into the tender kiss of her grandmother. This was followed by tender kisses from her aunts Mary and Amber.

Breakfast making continued and just before service, Darmon, Marcy and Natasha arrived.

Darmon went over to his sister, Emily, and French kissed her hard, pulling her body to his. Emily melted into her brother's embrace. Darmon broke the kiss and left Emily with a flushed face. Marcy was the next to French kiss her sister for 30 seconds instead of minutes that Darmon and Emily had kissed. Emily felt her legs were going to give way until Natasha kept her from collapsing as she also French kissed her sister. After the kiss, Darmon was there to support his sister and lead her towards a chair.

"So, the new tradition is true?" Emily asked.

"Yep, it seems that our brother wants us all to express our love for him and each other," Marcy answered with a giggle.

June was the one who took command again, "Okay, everyone take a seat at the table as breakfast is ready." Everyone took a seat at the table. Breakfast as per normal was eaten with fun banter.

During breakfast, Emily commented, "I suppose the shoe was on the other foot last night, huh! I now understand why sleep is a high commodity in this household. Will it settle down, grandma?"

June laughed, "Only if our man wants it to. My advice, take whatever naps you can take throughout the day. Expect the nights to be sleepless for most of it. It's swings and roundabouts here, when you're with him then the others will not get as much sleep and vice-versa when someone else is with him."

Mary chuckled, "I for one, don't mind as it informs us all that 'family love' is in full force. Those years of mourning after dad died were heartbreaking, and to finally hear the moans, screams and shrieks is music to my ears."

Marcy, Emily and Natasha all blushed.

"Now that we are all in 'family love', has anyone not been satisfied. Has Darmon not made sure that he doesn't care for your needs? Mom, he made me black out last night. I was out of it for over 10 minutes. I think it was when he pushed hard against my uterus to try and make sure his sperm entered my womb," Amber confessed.

June was shocked and happy also, "How did he make love to you, darling?"

Amber, who had no shame when it comes to sex with her man, answered, "Mom, he was in a position that he would take doing press-ups and was pounding me hard using deep hard thrusts from his hips. I've never been fucked like that before and I'm sure that I'm going to be pregnant if I'm not already."

Emily then quietly asked, "Uhhh, maybe, when we next go shopping, we buy out all their stock of pregnancy tests. I mean as and when we miss our periods, we could take the test a week or two later to confirm."

Mary giggled, "Can you imagine the look on the clerk's face as we all went in and brought the whole lot? Still, I think it's a good idea, though. Marcy, Emily and Natasha, when at home there is no need to be bashful. We are all adult women who love the same man and don't be afraid to voice anything. Outside of this home, you can be shy and bashful as much as you want but within these walls, let go and enjoy yourself."

June got serious and addressed the group here, "It does lead onto a serious topic. How should you act outside? Simple, we act as a family. I am his grandmother, Mary and Amber are his aunts and you, his sisters. No overt affection other than the familial kind. Which means no kissing or touching of any kind. Always wait until you get back home to let your emotions out. I know I didn't need to voice that, but when you're in love with a person, sometimes that overrides common sense. Don't think it's going to be easy for me or even for Mary and Amber."

Emily sighed, "I know grandma. It's hard to not want to be in my brother's embrace and kissing him all the time. Sometimes, I don't want to care what the whole world may think as I want to shout out to everyone that I am my brother's. But I know it is against the law and could get us all into big trouble, so I'm sure we all understand."

Amber giggled, "Inside these walls, we would all be his wives like you wanted, huh!" Emily blushed after hearing her aunt tease her.

Darmon who was enjoying this banter, finally brought the conversation back to next steps, "Just know that inside these walls I am a husband to you all and you will be my wives, but let's get back to the next steps in getting mom and punishing dad."

Darmon paused for a short bit to let everyone get into a serious mode before continuing, "The way I see it, we need to find a sexy and beautiful woman to pose as my girlfriend. Also, I want to have some security at hand for when we need them to restrain dad before I confront him and to ensure he can't hurt any of us as we show him that you all now belong to me. Also need to look out for a tattoo artist that can brand dad as part of his humiliation. Grandma, Aunties, can you handle those tasks?"

"Darling, of course we can. It might take a few days or weeks to get setup." June confirmed.

With that the meeting ended.

June was initially going to ask Mary to look for a suitable candidate to pose as her nephew's girlfriend, but in the end chose Amber and she went to stakeout the sexual health clinic.

June investigated the security task, which was one of the easiest jobs to complete. Mary looked for a suitable tattoo artist near to Edward's home and spoke to them on what was required. The discussion went without too much of a hitch, especially, when a large sum of money was agreed upon.

It was just over a week when Amber returned with a suitable candidate.

Darmon was sat in the living room with Emily sat in his lap, cuddling up to him. Emily had taken her brother's right hand and forced it into her bikini bottoms. Darmon's other sisters sat opposite them watching their brother's hand movements as he fingered their sister.

June and Mary were in the kitchen making lunch as Amber returned. She saw a potential issue as she noticed her nephew being intimate with her niece and said loudly, "Hi, I'm back and brought home a guest."

Darmon removed his hand, with Emily sighing in frustration as she was close to cumming. Darmon moved Emily to the side and got up to greeting his aunt and new guest. Darmon hugged and kissed his aunt on the cheek and smiled at her before saying, "Hi, auntie. Welcome back!"

Darmon then stuck out his hand to the beautiful women before him; the one he had been using to finger his sister. She was around 5 foot 7 inches, with long dark hair down to the centre of her back and had a lean figure with smaller breasts than most of his family apart from Natasha. Darmon thought she must be a C cup. She was dressed in a t-shirt and jeans with open toed shoes. Darmon noted that she had a strikingly beautiful face, someone that he could easily have taken the time to get to know and ask to be his girlfriend, if things weren't different now.

The guest shook his hand and felt his hand was a little moist and naturally thought he had sweaty hands. Darmon introduced himself, "Hi, I'm Darmon. It's nice to meet you. I hope you're hungry as lunch is nearly ready."

The woman smiled and replied, "Hi, my name is Sandra, but most people just called my Sandy. I'm starving, to be honest."

Darmon laughed and said loudly, "Grandma, Sandy's staying for lunch. Can you ask Aunt Mary to ensure another setting at the table, please?"

Darmon then led Sandy toward the living room and introduced everyone, "Sandy, you've already met my Aunt Amber, so now let me introduce my sisters. Marcy is the eldest, followed by Emily and then Natasha. Girls, this is Sandy." Darmon pointed out each sister in turn, who all shook Sandy's hand.

June walked into the living room wiping her hand on a tea towel, "Darling, who is Sandy?" June stopped and saw the beautiful women and stuck out her hand. Sandy took the hand and shook it. "Hi, I'm June and grandmother to this rabble," June chuckled and indicated the siblings with her head.

"I know you're probably confused about why you're here and we will get to that shortly, but first lunch will be ready in 10 minutes, so let's eat and then we can discuss things. You're very beautiful you know that sweetie," June commented. Sandy blushed at the compliment.

During lunch, Sandy was watching to try and figure out why she was asked to come here. She watched the banter between everyone and even smiled or giggled at some of the joking around that happened over lunch. What struck her the most was that Darmon was the sole male here and surrounded by many females. She also noticed the looks some of them were directing towards Darmon. Darmon for his part seemed too ignorant of the stares and Sandy wasn't sure if he was just simple and naive.

It wasn't until after lunch that Sandy saw his true nature as a confident man, and she realized that he was fully aware of the stares and didn't bring it up to save the women embarrassment. "Emily, Natasha, can you please help our aunts, clear up and then go out to the pool to have some fun. Marcy, you stay here with us. Grandma, you also stay. Aunts, when you have finished, come back here please," Darmon ordered with everyone jumping to do what he tasked them to.

Sandy was impressed and looked at Darmon in a new light and almost didn't hear Darmon's question, "Huh? Sorry, I kinda spaced out there. Can you please repeat what you said?"

Darmon chuckled, "I said, would you care for a drink of some sort? We have water, soda, wine or if you prefer something stronger."

"Oh, uhmm... A Soda would be nice," Sandy confirmed. Marcy got up without being asked and brought back a selection of drinks, including water, wine and something stronger as well as the requested soda.

Sandy saw the smile Darmon directed towards his sister and the look that passed between them but put that on the back burner as Darmon's aunts returned.

When everyone was seated, Sandy looked over at them all and under the intense stares almost asked to leave and go back home but somehow pushed down that feeling and waited.

Darmon opened the discussion, "Sandy, I'm sure you're confused as to why my Aunt Amber asked you here. Can I ask what she has told you so far?"

"Well, Amber said that there was a possible proposition where I would be compensated for my treatment following my diagnoses," Sandy replied.

"Sweetie, that is correct. But before that can you tell us a little bit about yourself and how you came to be in your current situation?" June asked.

Sandy took a deep breath, opened the soda and took a big gulp of it, "My name is Sandra and I'm 20 years old. I was studying at the college just on the outskirts of town. I was majoring in business studies."

"I came to this city from the north and was enjoying my freedom. You know getting away from your parents and living the dream."

"I met my boyfriend, well ex-boyfriend now, at college. We did everything together and thought my life was going in the right direction. Things fell apart about 4 months ago when I found out that he had been cheating on me, probably, from the start of our relationship."

Sandy paused and started to cry. June went over to her and hugged her to give what comfort she could.

"He came to me one day and confessed to being unfaithful and told me to go to the sexual health clinic to get checked up. You see he told me that somehow, he had contracted HIV and because I was on the pill, we never used another other form of contraception or a condom. I've not had sex with anyone else since then and have been attending the clinic every two weeks for check-ups. So far, the tests have been inconclusive, but the doctors believe there is more than a 70 percent chance I have HIV."

"Honey, there is still a possible 30 percent chance you don't. Think positively," Mary added.

Sandy sobbed, "I've cried each night for months, and how I didn't spot the signs of my then boyfriend cheating. I didn't do anything wrong and I'm still getting punished. What is it you want from me?"

There was a pause in the conversation where Sandy watched as Darmon looked at the women around him before answering, "This is a delicate proposition and you're well within your rights to say no. Regardless, of what you decide. I will pay you \$5000 for just listening to us and if you do agree to this then I will guarantee enough to live comfortably and all your treatment costs."

"So that you understand where I am coming from, I will need to tell you a little bit about my own story," Darmon continued.

"As a prefix to all this, I will tell you from the outset, I did love my father and all I wanted was for him to be a part of my life. Every attempt at having a bond with him was rejected and it was only until recently I learned that he has hated me all my life. You see he sees me as a mistake, one that should never have been born," Darmon said in a cold voice. Marcy clenched her fists and the action wasn't lost on Sandy or the rest.

Darmon knew he couldn't tell the full story so had to tell half-truths as he continued, "As it turns out I still had a connection with my mother and sisters, but my father was poisoning their minds and they in turn turned away from me. I was lost and threw myself into school and got myself a girlfriend. I was so proud to show her off to my family." Marcy winced at the mention of his girlfriend as it was she who had seduced her for her father. Marcy shed a tear that was quickly wiped away.

"I was dating her for a couple of months, and my father called me into his office for a task. I was already happy I had a wonderful girlfriend and now my father was calling for me. I thought this was the start of our father son bond. I felt happy knowing my father was acknowledging me now. Dad sent me on an errand that meant I had to be away for a while. The task had taken 5 days to complete and when I got back, my girlfriend had dumped me for no apparent reason. I asked for a reason until she blocked my number."

Marcy filled her glass with a strong drink and took a big swig. June, Mary and Amber, looked at Marcy and understood that she must of had a big part in that. Darmon hid his shock and concluded that she was the one forced to seduce her for their father.

"While I was hurt, there wasn't much I could do about it. I soon got another girlfriend; after dating her for a month, dad would send me to some leadership camp, or on some other sort of errand. This time I made sure I kept in contact with her via calls and text. This lasted for 3 days before she also broke up with me. Blocked my number after I tried to understand why."

Marcy took another big swig of her drink, recalling how she, mom and her sisters had hurt Darmon.

"Let's just say that this happened a few more times and every time, it was always after I got a girlfriend and my father would send me off to do something or other. My last girlfriend was a sweet girl, and I think we both cared for each other. As you can probably gather, my father sent me to spring camp this time. I left camp after a couple of days to return home early."

"The sight that I was presented with, shocked me to the core and I now understood why all my girlfriends would dump me afterwards. It seems that my dear old father was bribing or using some sort of blackmail to get them into his bed. I witnessed my own father fucking my girlfriend. I was confused and hurt, so I ran away to come live here with my grandmother and aunts. My sisters are visiting for the summer break. Should I have confronted them, I don't know as it didn't change anything, I would still have lost another girlfriend."

"It seems that my mother found out what was going on and told me that my father hated me and wanted everything I had or gained. He didn't want me to be happy in anyway. It seems that my father is keeping my mother hostage and not letting her leave. I aim to rescue my mother."

"Which brings me to my proposition. Remember, what I told you at the start, you are free to decline and that would be it. I want you to pose as my girlfriend and want you to allow my father to bribe you into sex with him. I want him to get infected with HIV. It doesn't matter if you have HIV or not as the fear alone would be enough to punish my father."

Sandy gasped and decided to pour herself a strong drink and downed it in one single gulp.

June then added, "Sweetie, my own son has hurt my grandson badly. I want to punish my own son, and this plan wasn't something that was easy to accept. We are willing to pay you for all your treatments and living expenses. You don't have to decide now, think it over and if you have any questions then please ask."

Sandy got up and paced the ground before the dining table, she kept throwing her hands up in the air every so often and kept opening her mouth to say something, but nothing would come out. Sandy eventually sat down and poured another strong drink.

Mary and Amber looked at each other but remained silent. Marcy refused to look at anyone and kept looking into her glass. June laid a hand on top of Sandy's, which made the younger woman flinch.

Sandy, eventually, got up the courage to talk in a quiet voice, "I'm not a prostitute to be bought and sold. I have a mind to just take the money already offered and run."

Sandy paused before continuing, "However, I will consider it under some conditions and one of them may be heavy."

Darmon asked, "What are your conditions?"

"For starters, this is only a transaction to punish your father and not a long-term relationship with him. I will only have sex with him once or twice and you let me break the news to him that he should get checked over for HIV," Sandy started with her conditions.

"The next condition is one that I feel might be hardest. I am young and if I have been infected with HIV then chances of me conceiving a child in the natural sense would be impossible," Sandy said as she then looked directly at Darmon.

"I want Darmon to be a sperm donor so that I can have a child one day," Sandra concluded.

Darmon was shocked and the room erupted into turmoil. Marcy cried, Mary was ready to throw herself over the table to strangle the girl and was only being held back by her sister Amber. June just took the whole bottle of strong drink and put to her lips, tipped her head back and took several large gulps.

Sandra was confused at the reactions. She knew the last condition was going to be hard, but only for Darmon and not the women around him, so why were they all reacting this way.

Darmon sat there for a while in silence before he answered, "Okay, if I accepted those conditions you would do this?"

"Yes!", Sandy answered.

It was June who next spoke up as she slammed the bottle down on the table, "Before you accept, darling. Know that if Sandy has your baby, then the baby will be a part of our family. Regardless, of how the baby is conceived, it will be of your flesh and blood. I will not allow you to be an absent father like your own father is."

Darmon looked over at Sandy. She pondered this before saying, "So you and your family would want an active part in the child's life?"

Mary was still angry and exploded, "Yes, you dumb cunt. If the child is Darmon's, then he or she is family. Despite what his own father, my brother, has done to him, we will not abandon Darmon's flesh and blood."

June laid a hand on her daughter's arm, "Darling, language, please. We can discuss this in a peaceful manner."

Mary looked over at her mother and then back at Sandy before saying, "Sorry!"

Sandy was so confused with the reactions and couldn't figure out why. She simply answered, "I can accept that condition."

Darmon sighed before bringing this to a close, "Done! I accept your conditions."

Marcy was sobbing openly and got up to run back to her room. June looked at her daughters to indicate that they should follow Marcy to make sure she is okay.

"Sweetie, shall I call you an uber to take you back home. Can you please tell me your bank details, and I will wire the money, right now?" June asked.

June called an uber and Sandy informed her of her bank details, the money was wired and confirmed. Telephone numbers were exchanged and a promise to give enough notice when this plan is to take place.

Soon Sandra left and Darmon was left to pick up the pieces.

Darmon went to Marcy's bedroom first and found her crying on her bed with their aunts either side trying to comfort her. Darmon walked up to her and said, "Sis?"

Marcy turned around quickly and threw herself at her brother, sobbing loudly, "I'm so so sorry, Darmon. I hurt you and caused you the pain you felt."

Darmon was soothing his sister by rubbing her back as he let her cry into his chest. "What do you mean?" Darmon asked in a gentle calm voice.

Marcy looked up at her brother, and he saw her eyes were puffy from crying, "Please don't hate me. I won't hurt you ever again, please don't hate me."

Darmon was concerned for his sister and didn't know what she had done, as she continued to sob into his chest. Mary was the one that posed the possible reason, "Honey, I think your sister is feeling remorseful for seducing one or more of your ex-girlfriends based on her reactions, now and during the talks today, and the previous planning talks. I think she feels that now you know the full extent of her involvement that you will hate her; maybe also your mother and other sisters."

Darmon already knew that their father had forced them to do it, but seeing how it was eating up his sister from the inside out was a gut punch and hurt. Darmon was conflicted, on one side knowing she was feeling in her gut how she had betrayed her brother and caused him pain, and on the other side Darmon knew she was forced to do this by their father with the result the same; her brother was always hurt.

Darmon only thought about it for a split second and already know how he felt. Darmon had made a promise that he would love his sisters and would never hurt them, willingly. "Hey, Hey, Hey, sis. This is all water under the bridge. Would you have willing done that if you weren't being forced to by dad? I doubt it. I love you, Marcy. I know you will not hurt me ever again. Get some rest, I will lay beside you until you fall asleep. I don't hate you."

Marcy turned and put both hands on his cheeks and looked him directly in the eyes, "You don't understand... During my seduction of your ex-girlfriends, I got to 2nd and 3rd base with them and had to even help dad put his cock into them."

Marcy was starting to shake, and her voice get higher and trembled, "Dad, got each of them to confess that you hadn't even got to 2nd base with them. We helped dad take what was supposed to be yours."

Mary and Amber, seethed in anger at how Edward had manipulated everyone. Amber quietly soothed her niece, "Honey, you didn't do this willing. Your father is the one at fault, not you, your mother or sisters and it was never Darmon's fault."

Darmon pulled his sister tight into his embrace and then lay them both on the bed. Darmon ran his hands through her hair as he said in a soothing voice, "Marcy, you should know this doesn't change how I feel about you. If you think I would hate you for this, then you're wrong. I'm glad this is now out in the open. You're exhausted, try to get some rest. Don't worry I won't leave until you've gone to sleep."

Darmon pulled Marcy against his chest and lay beside her as he continued to run his fingers through her hair to sooth her. Mary and Amber, looked over at their man and saw how loving he was, even knowing the truth. They tenderly kissed their nephew on the lips and kissed Marcy on the forehead before leaving.

Darmon waited until Marcy was asleep before he too left.

As Darmon was comforting Marcy, Mary and Amber had returned to the pool where they saw their mother talking with their nieces.

Emily and Natasha were told of the events and were shocked. Amber sighed heavily, "Honey's, I advise you to come clean towards your brother of any events that you had in his ex-girlfriend's betrayal. Darmon just learned of Marcy's involvement, and it nearly tore her apart. She is being comforted by him after she cried herself to sleep."

Emily and Natasha's faces paled as they hoped that this was a part of their lives that should have been forgotten. What matters was the future and why raise something that could cause a rift. Emily and Natasha started to cry fearing things will change and not for the better.

Whilst sobbing, Emily spoke up, "Dad, never got me to try and seduce any of his ex-girlfriends, although I was forced to do lesbian things with them. Dad would always ask mom, Marcy and Natasha to do it, this he would only do when bribing never worked on them. In all cases, dad would always get his way. After dad was finished with them, he would ensure we kept quiet and hide this all from Darmon. Mom, my sisters and I, all saw the pain and confusion of our brother each time."

"Honestly, we wanted to look to the future of our relationship with Darmon and felt that was all in the past. With hindsight, I suppose that wasn't the wisest of moves. None of us wanted to hurt Darmon with that kind of knowledge. Dad was totally at fault here for manipulating everyone," Emily concluded.

Darmon had heard this exchange and smashed his clenched fist against a wall. The women all turned to look over at Darmon. Emily and Natasha were initially scared at this reaction and then saw his bloody hand, they both bolted off their sun loungers and ran over to their brother and took his hand in theirs, as they sobbed.

Mary got up quickly and went for the first aid box and started to administer to her nephew's hand. She saw Darmon was seething in anger. Darmon sighed and winced in pain as his aunt was cleaning the wound, "Emily, Natasha! I'm not angry at either of you, Marcy or even mom. I'm angry at dad. He has fucked up all our lives."

The fun and games from the previous weeks felt so distant and everyone quietly went through the motions of the day, preparing dinner and eating it in silence before all going to bed early.

Darmon tossed and turned in bed for a few hours before getting up and going to Marcy's bedroom first. She was still awake and pulled the covers away to allow her brother into bed with her.

Brother and sister remained silent as Marcy crawled into his embrace. "Sis, will you let me fuck you? I have so much anger that I need to get out; anger directed at dad, not you. I made some promises that I intend to keep to each of you, I won't willingly hurt you and if I'm too rough, tell me. I'm sorry, this won't be the tender love we would normally make. I will try to make you cum, but I can't guarantee this. Just for today, I need this, from tomorrow onward I will be back to my usual self and always love you with every ounce of my being."

Marcy knew the pain her brother was going through and simply opened her legs for him. Darmon pulled his shorts down and was surprised that his sister wasn't wearing any shorts or panties.

Darmon fucked his sister hard; he pounded his cock into her relentlessly. Marcy never complained and even enjoyed her brother being a little rougher with her. She did cum multiple times, she would grunt and moan quietly, instead of the usual screams, as she had a feeling this was more about her brother than her own pleasure. Darmon filled his sister with his cum, then got up to leave.

Marcy was concerned for her brother's mental state, "Stay with me tonight, my love."

Darmon shook his head, turned to look at his sister and then said, "I can't I need to FUCK Emily and Natasha, also. I still have some stress that I need to let go of. It's just for today, sis. From tomorrow onward, things would be back to normal."

Marcy was sad and shed a couple of tears as she watched her brother leave.

Darmon then went to Emily's bedroom then Natasha's bedroom. He repeated the same words he spoke to Marcy and fucked them. Despite that, each of his sisters did have multiple orgasms and each didn't resent their brother for his actions. They knew he had a lot of anger to get rid of and each had silent orgasms.

Darmon, then went to his aunt's bedroom and silently made love to them. His aunts saw in his expression that this wasn't going to be like their usual encounters and had silent orgasms. Mary didn't black out when her nephew's cum entered her and quite frankly Mary hated not blacking out. They didn't make any comments when he left. Mary and Amber held each other tight until they fell asleep each reflecting on their nephew's anguish.

Darmon ended up in his grandmother's bed. After he made love to her also, he finally let all his frustrations out. June felt tears soak her shoulder and held her grandson close as he remained inside her, soothing him. Darmon slept that night on his side with his grandmother's leg locked over his to keep him inside.

The next morning, Darmon was happy and his usual self. He greeted everyone with the new tradition and the women all were starting to think they all dreamed how Darmon reacted last night.

June was concerned that her grandson was still hiding the pain and took him to the side, "Darling, are you sure you're okay? A lot of things were piled onto you last night. If you need more time to process things, we will all give you time."

"No grandma. I let go of all my resentment and hurt last night. Will you please check on my sisters today. I think I might have hurt them. I didn't make love to them last night; I fucked them hard. It won't happen again I promise. I also made love to Aunt Mary and Amber as well as spending the night with you," Darmon confessed, concerned for his sisters.

After breakfast, Darmon announced that he was going out alone and went to get ready to take his car to the city centre.

When Darmon had left, the women had a meeting in the living room.

June looked concerned and addressed her daughters and granddaughters, "Did Darmon hurt any of you?"

Mary and Amber looked at each other and shook their heads, "No mom. Darmon was quiet as he made love to us, but only once each. He left shortly after cumming inside us. We felt his pain; my sister and I, hate Edward for putting him through that."

Marcy, Emily and Natasha each looked at each other. Marcy responded, "It's what we deserved. We hurt him badly. He fucked me hard and wasn't his usual caring self. Other than that, no he didn't hurt me."

Emily and Natasha both nodded. "Ummm... he pounded me hard last night. He promised me this would be one time thing. Truthfully, I didn't mind it so much and occasionally, its fine with me. To answer your question, grandma, then the answer is 'NO', my brother didn't hurt me," Emily stated.

"He did the same to me, grandma. I'm not going to lie as I really wanted him to make love to me and didn't like to, just be fucked. Dad would always just fuck me, and I wanted to be made love to from my brother. He didn't hurt me, other than, not doing it the way I wanted. He came inside me and then left. I wanted him to stay with me for the night," Natasha said.

June sighed, "After he made love to me last night, he shed some tears. I felt his anguish last night. Don't hold this against your brother, girls. I feel he has gotten this out of his system now and would be the man we all know and love."

June then held Natasha's hands in hers and told her, "Natasha, don't hold this against your brother and start to resent him again. He had just learned more of the betrayal by his father. He loves you and you love him. He needed some sort of release for everything he was feeling. Look at it from his point of view, he fucked you and left you, but his father has fucked him repeatedly and even used each of you in the process. He could easily have left us all, but he didn't."

All except June gasped and knew it was true. June continued, "Edward is really pissing me off now. His fucking actions have hurt us all."

June, her daughters and granddaughters all went to go change to relax around the pool. All were feeling at a loss when Darmon wasn't there.

Darmon had no clear plan and just wanted to get away from it all to clear his head. His wandering brought him the luxury shopping mall and somehow was drawn to the jewellery store.

Darmon looked around and saw necklaces, bracelets, earrings and rings. There were made from various metals, including silver, yellow gold, white gold, rose gold, platinum, palladium, titanium and tungsten.

The older male clerk was eyeing the young man and wondering if he had the money to even buy the basic of items in the high-end store and only vaguely acknowledged him. Darmon noted the upturned nose from the male clerk and found a mid-twenties female clerk to ask for assistance.

"Excuse me, can I get some assistance here."

The female clerk looked at Darmon, smiled and answered, "Of course, sir. How may I be of assistance?"

"I'm looking to purchase a number of rings, in various sizes with a guarantee that if the ring doesn't fit it can be exchanged or refitted," Darmon answered.

"What's the occasion for sir?" The clerk asked.

"Oh, uhhh... Wedding," Darmon answered.

"Wonderful, your fiancé must be thrilled for your upcoming wedding. Can I ask what metal the engagement ring was made from?" The female clerk asked.

"Oh, hmm, I never gave an engagement ring. We just made a commitment to be husband and wife. Do I need to get an engagement ring first?" Darmon was confused and didn't know the correct etiquette for this.

The female clerk gave a soft musical chuckle, "Well, sir. If it were me, then before, getting married myself, I would insist on an engagement ring. The wedding ring is normally given during the wedding ceremony as the final binding and commitment to always honour and be faithful to your partner."

Darmon reflected on the word faithful and some anger almost seeped through when he asked himself, 'how faithful was his father to his mother?'

"How long have you been dating, may I ask sir?" The female clerk continued to ask.

"Oh, umm... About a month, but we've known each other for a lot lot longer than that, sometimes, I feel it's almost all my life," Darmon said with a chuckle.

The female clerk laughed and Darmon joined in. The male clerk looked over and snorted.

"It doesn't matter, sir. If you both love each other then that's all that matters. What sort of metal were you looking at?" The female clerk continued.

"Wow, not an easy task is this? What metals are there?" Darmon chuckled to hide his embarrassment.

"No, it's not sir, you only buy an engagement and wedding ring once or at least you aim to. With divorce so easy to come by, the sacred ceremony of marriage is losing its charm and committing to your partner only for the rest of your life," The female clerk answered.

Then with a giggle, said, "Not that we mind that too much as it keeps us in business. Well to answer your main question, engagement and wedding rings can be made from silver, yellow gold, white gold, rose gold, platinum, palladium, titanium and tungsten. It really depends on what interests you and your partner."

"You keep referring to 'partner', why?" Darmon asked confused.

"Well, sir. These days, a person can marry a man, woman or even in some cases dogs, I've read some tales like that happening," The female clerk answered. The male clerk snorted again, now knowing he did well to avoid this young man who was clearly just wasting everyone's time.

"Wow, I didn't know that... I meant about the dog thing, I knew you could marry the same gender these days. Rest assured, that my love is female, of the humankind. I'm looking for some silvery metal, not silver though and maybe not white gold either," Darmon chuckled.

"I see, firstly congratulations on your upcoming engagement to your human female," The female clerk giggled then continued, "As for the metal, can I suggest platinum or palladium. They have the same look as each other, with palladium being the rarer metal and slightly lighter than platinum."

"Can I see some of the palladium rings then please?" Darmon asked.

The clerk brought out a wonderful selection of rings, some with simple bands encrusted with small gems and others big rings with a real large diamond and some in-between. Darmon's eyes fell on a beautiful ring with a simple band which flared up at the top that held a diamond with sapphires either side.

"I see your eyes have fallen on a beautiful ring and one that your fiancé would show off to all her friends and family. Would you like to purchase this ring?" The female clerk's eyes lit up as the commission she would get for selling a ring like this. Darmon looked at the price tag for the ring, and it was valued at \$1200 each.

Darmon smiled at her, "Yes, I would. Can I get 8 of them please in various sizes with the guarantee of exchange or refitting?"

The female clerk, sat down on the bench behind her and nearly fell to the floor when the young gentleman asked for 8 rings. "How would sir, like to pay for them?" The female clerk asked in a trembling voice.

Darmon fished his wallet out and pulled out a platinum status credit card; it was the one given to him by his grandmother after being initiated as 'head of the family'. The male clerk watched this and collapsed to the floor, knowing his disdain for the young man had just cost him a big bonus. The female clerk got up on unsteady legs and brought out 8 identical rings with small changes in size.

"Sorry for the late introduction, sir. My name is Susan. The total for these rings would be \$9600. I'm just going to put this through. When you are ready to purchase wedding rings, please do come back and ask for me personally," Susan said. 30 seconds later, "Sir, it has all gone through. Will you please allow me to have security arranged to take you to your car for your own safety."

Darmon smiled at Susan and answered, "Sure, my name is Darmon by the way. Can you please ensure that all the rings are in nice, elegant boxes. Also do you engrave rings here?"

"Yes, sir. I mean Darmon, if I may call you by your name. If the rings are brought here, then that service is free of charge. Can I offer you a drink of some sort whilst I make the phone call to security?" Susan answered and asked.

"Yes, you may call me by name and no thank you," Darmon said with a smile. Susan called security and 10 minutes later they lead Darmon to his car. Darmon drove back home with his prizes.

Darmon quickly went to his room and hid the rings after he noticed the women were still around the pool. He got changed and went out to the pool. When the women saw him, all got up and kissed

him, and he kissed them back hard. It was close to dinner time, so June, Mary and Amber went off to get dinner ready. Darmon was left alone with his sisters. Each held onto their brother to show that they loved him and the events of last night were all forgiven and forgotten.

Darmon just chatted with his sisters and just wanted to be close to them. "Listen, I want to say I'm sorry for last night. If I hurt any of you then I didn't mean to. I shouldn't have projected my own pain and anguish onto any of you. You know I love you all, so much..." Darmon said but couldn't finish the sentence as his sisters all tackled him to lay kisses all over his face.

Just as things were starting to go further, there was a call to go shower and get ready for dinner. Darmon insisted on showering alone this evening, but the sister's understood that if he only picked one of them it could be seen as favouritism. Darmon had an ulterior motive this evening. Darmon showered quickly and waited for everyone to get to the dining room and be seated before he turned up.

Darmon held the rings behind his back as he entered and laid each ring down on the floor on the rug and knelt on one knee. The women seated at the table were all looking at Darmon with their hearts beating fast inside their chests. The room went dead silent.

Darmon cleared his throat and the next words that came out of his mouth were a struggle as he choked, a felt the pit in his stomach. Darmon mouth went dry and had to keep trying to create saliva to coat his dry throat. "Ohhh, ummm... This isn't easy for me, and I hope you would all allow me to finish before doing anything or answering me."

Darmon cleared his throat again, "I was thinking of doing this individually but felt it would be unfair, and how do I pick the order. So thought it best to do it in one single go."

Darmon opened the first case and turned to his grandmother, "Grandma, you took me in when I had nowhere else to go. You taught me the rules and what it means to be a part of 'family love'. I know that you initially only wanted to have fun with me until you learned of certain events. I, now, know that your love for me is unconditional, as is mine for you also. I was told today I nearly made a complete 'faux pas' in that I missed a crucial step. I went to go get wedding rings for you all and learned that I need to propose to your first. So, I hope, you will accept my love for you is true and would be honoured if you would accept the position as my fiancé."

Darmon left the ring case open facing his grandmother and then opened two other cases and presented them towards his aunts. Darmon had gained a little confidence and spoke up more clearly, "Aunt Mary, Aunt Amber. Without you both in my life and the support you have given me, I would still be lost and probably dead. You have given me a new lease of life, one where I shouldn't be afraid to express my feelings, you have given your love freely to me. You both have been willing to listen to

my views and my desires. You have lifted and banished many of my insecurities and shown me a life full of love and affection. Aunt Mary and Aunt Amber, would you allow me the honour to call you both my fiancés?"

Again, Darmon left the cases open facing his aunts. Next Darmon opened 3 cases and presented them towards his sisters. "Marcy, Emily and Natasha, for the longest time I thought you all hated me and I couldn't figure out why. I kept trying to understand what I did wrong and how to go about fixing it. I've always loved you, my sisters, and it's only recently this love has transcended the conventional society norms. I say 'to hell' with these norms. I know what my heart wants, how can a love so strong, be so right, yet be wrong at the same time? No for me this is always right. I don't care for those standards that would deny true love. Yes, you have hurt me and I in turn you. I hope that if you accept to be my fiancés, then this will be the start of a promise to each other one that no one can break."

Darmon went silent and waited for something, anything. He had his head down and only heard the screams; chairs being pushed back with some even hitting the floor before he was assaulted from all sides.

Darmon lay at the bottom of a pile of women, who were kissing any part of his body they could get to.

Chapter 8

Darmon heard the squeals and giggles from all the 'family love' women. He was at the bottom of a pile of women and laughed as the women inadvertently tickled him.

Everywhere there was bare flesh on Darmon, was kissed, licked and sucked on by his women. After 5 minutes of this treatment, June took control and moved away. She cleared her throat and said to them all, "Girls, please give Darmon some space and come stand beside me. I believe, we all need to give him an answer."

The women all got off Darmon and stepped back. Once, all the women were standing side by side facing Darmon they all put on a serious face. June was the first to answer her grandson's proposal. All the women had wordlessly decided on the same order that they were asked.

Darmon stood up, picked up the ring that he had presented to his grandmother. June moved towards her grandson and looked him directly in the eyes before answering, "Darling, you have no idea how happy this makes me. Not that I had any doubts, but this just proves that I chose the right man to be

'head of the family'. In answer to your proposal, I give myself to you freely and accept your proposal. With this bond, I promise that you will always hold prime position in my heart. My only regret is that I'm unable to give you a child."

Darmon had a smile from ear to ear, took the ring and placed it on his grandmother's ring finger. "Grandma, it doesn't bother me that you're unable to have our child. All that I know is that you didn't abandon me and trusted in me. I love you!"

Darmon and June kissed tenderly. The other women all cheered and had tears in their eyes. June stepped back and admired the ring on her finger. Darmon bent down to pick up the two rings he presented to his aunts.

Darmon turned towards his aunts as they both came forward. Darmon looked at both of his aunts and saw they had suddenly gotten shy with their hands clasped in front and down. Darmon chuckled, "Really, you both get shy now. Where is all that confidence when you knew you had me at your mercy?"

"Oh honey. Before you were just our man and we knew we had to share your love with others and made sure we got your love and affection when we needed it the most. This changes the dynamic of our relationship. No longer will we be just your women, but we will now be your partners for the rest of our lives," Mary responded.

"What my sister is saying, honey, is that we accept your proposal. You will be our man and we your women. Our love for you will supersede any other love we have. Unlike, mom, we can and will give you children," Amber continued from what her sister was saying.

Darmon took each ring and placed it on the ring finger of each of his aunts. Mary was first followed by Amber. As each ring was put on the finger, aunt and nephew kissed passionately. Mary and Amber stepped back and held up their rings to catch the ceiling lights. The other women all cheered. June watched as her daughters swooned in pleasure and understood that their dreams were coming true.

Darmon bent down again and picked up the next 3 rings. He held them in his hands and again presented them towards his sisters. Marcy, Emily and Natasha all wanted to rush towards their brother to get him to put the rings on their fingers but held back a little.

Marcy looked at her brother, turned away from him and went to walk away. Darmon was confused and saddened that his big sister was rejecting him. June, Mary and Amber were just as shocked, until Marcy turned around and rushed her brother.

"Got ya, little brother," Marcy giggled as she jumped on her brother to wrap her arms and legs around him. Darmon barely held onto the rings in his hands. "Did you really think I would reject you? I accept your proposal and will gladly be your fiancé, you are now my would-be husband and my little brother," Marcy giggled as her lips locked with her brothers into a deep French kiss. After the kiss, she got down from her brother and accepted him putting the ring on. The other women all cheered.

Marcy returned to stand next to her grandmother and aunts. Emily came up to her brother shyly and accepted her place in his embrace, "Darmon, are you sure you want me? I would have loved you regardless of this commitment."

Darmon turned his sister's face up to look at him and smiled at her before answering, "Yes, I am sure, sis. You hold a dear place in my heart, and I would love for you to be mine and mine alone."

"I was already yours, my love. Yes, I will be your fiancé and would always be beside you. I couldn't ever find a better place to be," Emily gave her answer. Darmon placed the ring on her finger. The other women all cheered.

Emily returned to the group and Darmon then turn towards his last sister, "It seems that you're the only one left for now, sis. Will you be mine? The only answer I will accept are 'Yes' or 'YES'," Darmon chuckled.

"YES!" Natasha shouted as she rushed into her brother's arm. Darmon took the ring and placed it on her ring finger. Once her brother pushed the ring onto her finger, Natasha burst into tears. These were tears of joy. The other women all cheered after confirming Natasha was alright.

"This has always been my dream, Darmon. Now it has come true," Natasha said sobbing. Natasha overcome with pleasure and lust started to pull her brother's clothes off. Darmon didn't resist. After getting her brother naked, Natasha stripped also. Darmon glanced over at the others and saw they were also stripping.

Dinner was forgotten. Darmon made love to each of his women. Each received multiple orgasms. Darmon came a total of 3 times and came deep inside, Mary, Amber and Emily. Mary blacked out when she felt her nephew's seed inside her.

June, Marcy and Natasha weren't jealous that they didn't get to feel Darmon's cum inside them knowing that next time it will be they who got his cum. What surprised Darmon was that none of the women wanted to get intimate with each other and would wait patiently for him to service them.

For the next hour and a half, the women would moan, scream and shout as orgasms rocked their bodies. After the reverse gangbang, Darmon and his women lay exhausted on the rug, couches or seated in the dining room chairs.

June got up and noticed 2 rings boxes left unopened. "Darling, there are still 2 ring boxes left unopened. I can guess that one is for you mother, but the other?" June asked.

Darmon looked over at his grandmother, "Yes, one is for mom. Not sure why I got another one but something deep inside me, informed me that I should get it. I just can't explain it, grandma."

Amber sat up and looked over at her nephew before saying, "Maybe, it's for his future legal wife. It was, probably, done subconsciously. Who that is, is probably a matter for another time."

June responded, "Probably and you're right, it doesn't matter right now. Oh dear, dinner has gotten cold." June chuckled as she again looked at her left hand with the engagement ring shining in the light.

Some of the rings weren't a perfect fit for the women and since the rings were all identical some swapping was done. Everyone remained naked. Dinner was re-heated and eaten. Whenever one of the women caught a glimpse of their rings, they would sigh and lift their hands to admire their ring.

When it was time to go to bed there was a little bit of an argument between all the women because everyone wanted to sleep in the same bed as their fiancé. In the end it was decided that Darmon and everyone would spend the night in June's bedroom, she had the largest bed in the villa. It was a tight squeeze fitting everyone in. Darmon was told to move to the centre of the bed. Once he was settled Darmon and the women all crowded around him, he was unable to move throughout the night.

Darmon knew he had morning wood and heard the whispers of his women but was unable to make out any words. Darmon cracked one eye open, to make a slit from which to see without drawing attention to him being awake. He saw his grandmother directing everyone around him into a semi-circle around his cock.

Darmon heard his grandmother say, "Girls, this is going to be a competition, and the winner or winners will get exclusive access to Darmon, so you can spend all night with him to ensure he gets

you pregnant. In my case, if I win, I will still take his cum inside but will ensure that one other is with me to take his seed deep inside them. Regardless of the winner, one of you is going to get pregnant by him soon. The order for this competition will go from eldest to youngest. Whoever gets Darmon to cum inside their mouths will be crowned the winner. Of course, if Mary or Amber win then Darmon will service them both as a single unit."

June paused to look at her grandson to see if he was going to wake up and smirked inwardly when she saw the pupil of his eye looking at her from behind the slit of one eye but remained silent. "We will each take turns to give him a blowjob. Each person will have 30 seconds to try and win. Any questions?"

"Grandma, can I just add that if one of his sisters' win then you all agree that we will be a single unit as per our aunts?" Marcy asked.

June looked over at her daughters who just nodded then replied, "That is fine by me. Just know that if I win then I will likely only take one of my granddaughters with me and who that is will be decided later. Of course, this is only if I win. Any other questions?"

"Grandma, can I make sure that whoever gets his cum inside their mouth doesn't have to share with other? I for one want to make sure I start the morning with an early breakfast," Emily stated.

Darmon saw they all nodded with this suggestion and wondered how he got so lucky and how long he could resist.

June licked and used her tongue to rim the bottom of her grandson's glans. Darmon moaned, which drew the attention of all the women. When they detected that he wasn't waking up yet, went back to looking at their mother or grandmother giving Darmon a blowjob. Mary tapped her mother to indicate her time was up. Darmon was thankful for small mercies like this as it gave him a few seconds of respite before the next woman started her attack. Mary used the tip of her tongue to fuck her nephew's cock slit and took his cock into her mouth. Mary started to bob up and down. She was getting totally into it before she felt a tap on her shoulder as her time was up.

Amber took over and immediately took her nephew's cock deep into her throat. Darmon heard his aunt gag before she had to pull back a little. "Be careful, sis. Darmon is a larger than dad. You're out of practice and might need to take it slower until you can deep throat him," Mary said. Darmon hearing this nearly lost it and had to think of things that could make him lose the edge. He recalled that thinking of grandmother's was one technique, but then his own grandmother came to mind, and he moaned loudly before have to think of something else; he thought of action movies he watched recently, cars, and boring TV shows. Thankfully, he didn't lose his erection, as the need to cum abated.

Marcy tapped her aunt on the shoulder and Amber reluctantly came off her nephew's cock with a popping sound. Marcy licked from the base of his cock to tip and grabbed his balls into her hands to squeeze them gently. Marcy put her brother's cock into her mouth and bobbed up and down on half his shaft whilst tugging on his scrotum. When Emily tapped in her sister's shoulder, Marcy didn't want to let her brother go and sucked hard. Darmon watched as both Emily and Natasha pulled their sister off their brother. Marcy grunted in frustration at being denied her brother's cum.

Darmon was panting heavily. He watched his sisters, Emily and Natasha look at each other before both started to attack either side of his cock with their tongues occasionally touching. Darmon started to lift his butt off the bed. "Grandma, their cheating..." Marcy nearly shrieked.

"Sweetie, Emily is just using your own word against you. You already made it clear that you sisters are a team and should be counted as a single unit, so Emily and Natasha doing this is allowed," June responded to the accusation. Marcy threw her hands up in the air and heavily sighed but knew it was the truth.

Darmon felt his sister's lips come together on his glans trying to French kiss each other in the process. Darmon's hips bucked off the bed and he moaned, "FUCK!"

Before Darmon lost it, June tapped them both on their shoulders to let them know their time was up. Darmon sighed and fell back to the bed. "Darling, you can stop pretending to be asleep now," June told her grandson.

Darmon looked down and his hard cock with saliva covering it and panted. June looked over at her daughter and asked, "Mary, darling. In my night stand you will find my eye mask and some headphones. Can you get them and cover Darmon's eyes and ears please?"

Mary went to retrieve a pink eye mask and some black blue-tooth headphones, she put both on her nephew and June took her phone to play some light music, so that Darmon couldn't hear or see anything.

"Darmon, darling. Just so you know, we're all going to tie you to the bed and leave you like that all day. If you don't want that to happen, you better tell us now," June asked her grandson loudly.

Darmon didn't respond. Marcy giggled and asked, "Grandma, so are we going to tie him up now and leave?"

"God no, sweetie. I was just checking to make sure he was deaf to our talks," June responded then looked over at her granddaughter to see in her expression that she was joking, "Oh you silly girl, I can see you were joking."

Marcy laughed, which caused the others to giggle also. "Now, since Darmon was awake throughout all that, he knows the order we used. He has rested to take the edge off him cumming so soon. So, I think we should now mix it up a little. Let's start with Marcy first and continue with the order after that. Emily and Natasha can you not double team him to sow confusion in his mind. Each person should now get 45 seconds each. Let's see if he can figure out whose mouth is performing the blowjob now. May the best woman win."

Darmon was now blind and deaf to know who was giving him the blowjob; he thought they would start with the order previously set but the technique and sensations were all different. Darmon in his pleasure was finding it hard to concentrate but did notice the time each woman was servicing his cock was different, so he could only count the number of times the women changed. He was sure each had serviced him at least once.

It was getting harder for Darmon to resist cumming because the time in-between the women changing was shortened. Darmon was lifting and dropping his butt off the bed and moaning loudly. Eventually, all sense of when a woman changed was lost until Darmon reached the point of no return and exploded into the mouth of one of his women. The headphones and eye mask was removed. Darmon saw the bloated cheeks of his sister, Natasha.

Darmon scanned the others faces and saw disappointment. When he looked back at Natasha, she swallowed her brother's cum with a gulp. Darmon's deflating cock quickly sprang back to life as each of the women decided to enact the new tradition with Natasha and French kissed her to try and get any taste of Darmon's cum from within her mouth. What followed was a lot of kissing from everyone to everyone. There was plenty of moans from all, including Darmon, who was getting French kissed from all his women.

Mary noticed her nephew's cock was hard and took advantage of the situation to mount him. Mary let out a shriek as her nephew's cock bumped hard against her womb and exploded into an orgasm. There were shouts and screams of annoyance from his sisters and Aunt Amber, although Darmon did notice his grandmother laughing. All attempts to push or pull Mary off his cock were met with a lot of resistance, until they gave up. Mary rode her nephew hard and fast and would ensure her pussy was squeezing hard on the cock that was embedded inside her. Darmon lost it after Emily started to lick and suck on her brother's nipples and Aunt Amber along with his eldest sister forced his hands and fingers into their pussies.

Darmon exploded deep inside his aunt. When Mary felt the blasts of cum flood her pussy, she fell hard, screamed loudly and blacked out as an intense orgasm rocked her body. It was the second time

that June had witnessed this and was both intrigued and amazed. Darmon made sure to catch his aunt as she fell forward and lay her body on top of his.

June looked at her daughter and grandson and knew that she needed to act again to get the morning underway. "Girls, let's leave Mary and Darmon to recover, go shower and get ready for breakfast. Amber, you're with me this morning in getting breakfast done," June ordered.

All bar, Darmon, Mary and Amber, gathered their items and left. Darmon and his other aunt waited a good 15 minutes before Mary came back. Mary looked dazed and pulled off her nephew before they all went to the shower to clean up and get dressed.

Darmon entered the dining room with Mary and Amber each linking their arm with his on either side of their nephew. Mary looked up at her nephew with love clearly shown in her expression and then looked at her engagement ring again before saying, "I truly love you, honey."

Darmon chuckled and leaned down to give her a tender kiss. Darmon then remembered his other aunt and turned to her and gave her a tender kiss also. "I love you, both, aunties. I meant what I said yesterday. If I didn't have grandma and both of you then chances are I would have been dead. Either dad would have carried out his threat, or I would have ended my own life without anyone in it to love me," Darmon confessed.

"Honey, no more talking like that. I don't want to hear any more of that. You're our man now and there is nothing anyone of your women wouldn't do for you. You are loved by so many and that love will always keep you here with us," Amber stated with a hint of annoyance in her voice, which wasn't lost on Mary or Darmon as a subject that should never be talked of again.

Breakfast was served with the usual banter, giggles and laughter. Following breakfast and after the dishes were cleared away June informed everyone, "Darling, the girls and I need to go out shopping today. We will need to take 2 cars and would love for you to accompany us."

"Sure, grandma. But before that, can I get you all to line up before me?" Darmon asked.

There was puzzled looks from the women but did as Darmon asked. When they were all lined up, Darmon proceeded to mark all his women and made sure they all had large visible hickey's. "I don't want anyone else to think they have a chance with any of you," Darmon assured them.

Marcy laughed, "Jealous, little brother? Don't you think the rings would have been enough?"

Darmon was shocked as he hadn't thought the rings would have been enough to deter would be suitors. Darmon looked crestfallen, before his eldest sister kissed him, "Not that we mind, plus none of us would have even looked at anyone else."

To hide his embarrassment, he went to leave and told everyone, "Okay, time to get ready and leave." As Darmon went to his bedroom, he heard all his women chuckle and giggle.

Mary stopped all the women from leaving straight away, "Everyone, do you mind waiting a second or two please?"

All the women stopped and turned to face Mary, who took a deep breath and looked at everyone before settling on her mother, "Mom, I'm late by a few days. While Amber hasn't told me, I suspect she is late too. Our periods were in sync after all."

June nearly jumped with joy at the news but did let out a squeal of delight. Amber, who had been having too much fun these last few weeks did a mental calculation in her head and concluded she was also late. Amber had a shocked look upon her face. Darmon's sisters all felt jealous of their aunts.

Regardless of how each felt at the news, both Mary and Amber got hugs and tender kisses from everyone. "I think, that pregnancy tests are a must buy item. Mom, can you keep Darmon entertained whilst my sister and our nieces go buy those tests?" Amber asked.

"Of course, darling. I just hope you, both, are pregnant as this would be a blessing for our family," June confirmed. June then laughed, "Good job, Natasha won the competition this morning. You 3 will have your brother all to yourselves. If you're looking to get pregnant then make sure his cum stays inside you."

Marcy, Emily and Natasha all blushed before getting a gentle push towards their bedrooms from their grandmother.

Darmon was ready in 15 minutes and had to wait another 40 minutes for the rest to be ready. He settled to wait for his women within the living room. In the interim, he called his mother. Evelyn picked up the call on the second ring.

"Honey!" Evelyn said.

"Mom, how are you?" Darmon asked.

"Okay, I suppose. Your father is getting antsy and is demanding that I get your sisters back here. I've been putting him off for a while now by telling him that they are enjoying their summer break. Don't know how much longer I can keep him at bay," Evelyn told her son.

"Mom, he hasn't hurt you right?" Darmon asked with concern in his voice.

"Not any more than usual, honey. It seems that I'm unable to satisfy your father alone anymore. He seems to be bored with my pussy, and our sex life is dull. I'm glad your sisters are out of his reach. He even tried to get me to invite some of my married friends over, so he could get me to seduce them for him. I point blankly refused which didn't go down too well with him," Evelyn confessed.

Darmon's anger seeped into his voice as he said, "Mom, has he hit you?"

There was a pause on the other end of the phone as Evelyn pondered how much to tell her son. Evelyn eventually answered, "Yes, honey, but it's not something I'm not used too and can handle it."

Darmon's anger exploded, "No it's not alright. I'm coming to rescue you in one week. I will not allow dad to hurt you ever again."

Darmon heard a sob over the phone before continuing in a more controlled voice, "Mom, next week, I will return home with my new girlfriend. When I get there, do not allow dad to force you to seduce her. Let him do it himself. I have a plan in place to punish dad."

"Follow my lead and when dad will ask me to go on some sort of errand, I will put forward the motion for you to come visit grandma. You must convince dad that you're coming here to bring back your daughters. I will offer to drop you off on my way to perform his errand. That will leave him alone with Sandy. I will explain more on the return journey here."

"Can you trust me on this, mom?" Darmon asked.

"Yes, honey. I trust you and will follow your lead," Evelyn confirmed.

"Mom, be ready. I love you. In one week, I will come for you. There is much to tell, but not over the phone like this. I must go now, mom. See you in one week," Darmon concluded the phone call before hanging up.

Just as the phone call ended, June entered the living room and noticed her grandson's stiff expression. "Darling, what's up?" June asked.

Darmon shook his head to clear it before responding, "I just talked to mom and dad is getting violent with her and demanding mom brings back my sisters. Grandma, I promised mom that in one week I will come rescue her. Can you call Sandy to prepare her for this task?"

"In just over a week, mom will be here with us, and I will claim her as mine. After that, have security ready and the tattoo artist ready. Also secure a means for dad to remain unconscious during the branding. When we return, we will all return together. I want to hurt and humiliate dad for what he has done to us all," Darmon ordered his grandmother in a firm commanding voice. June got shivers and goose bumps in the confident tone of voice her grandson was using and her pussy got wet.

"Of course, darling," June replied.

June took out her phone and called Sandra and Darmon didn't hear the conversation as Mary and Amber entered the living room. They saw the change in the room and immediately became alert. Darmon looked up and went to his aunts and hugged them, "In one week, I will go get mom. Grandma is arranging it with Sandy."

Mary and Amber knew this wasn't the full story and didn't push it for the moment as everything will come to light eventually.

Marcy, Emily and Natasha arrived and saw their brother hugging their aunts and their grandmother talking to someone over the phone. Alarm bells were ringing inside their heads and concerned looks were etched in their expressions. Amber went over to them and stood before her nieces before telling them, "Your brother is going to rescue your mother in one week. I don't know any more than that. Darmon will tell us when we need to know. Just to thankful that Evelyn is soon to arrive here and never go back to Edward."

Darmon looked at everyone and simply said, "Nothing to worry about. I will explain everything at dinner this evening. Let's go have some fun for now. Everyone ready?"

Everyone arrived at the shopping mall and the first thing the women did was separate. Darmon was to escort his grandmother, with his aunts and sisters going off to some secret place, which none of them wanted to reveal.

"Grandma, don't get me wrong and it's a privilege to stay with you but be honest with me. Why are my aunts and sisters acting strange?" Darmon asked.

June paused and pondered how much to reveal to her grandson and the one person who she shouldn't lie to before answering, "Darling, they are going to go get pregnancy tests."

Darmon was shocked and his eyes opened wide before he almost shouted, "What?"

June lay a hand on his arm and continued in a very calm voice, "Your aunts may be pregnant. Mary confirmed this morning that her period is late. Both your aunts are in sync when it comes to that, and chances are that if one is pregnant then the other is also."

Darmon looked around for a place to sit down and found a bench. June sat with him and held his hands in hers. They sat in silence for 10 minutes before Darmon's aunts and sisters found them. When they got close, Darmon got up and went over to his aunts and held their hands before he jumped around and went to kiss his aunts, before he remembered they were in public and quickly moved apart.

Mary looked over at her mom, "You told him, didn't you, mom?"

June looked over at her daughter, nodded her head and then shrugged her shoulders, "What was I supposed to do? I'm not going to outright lie to our man; who is the one person I will never lie to."

Amber laughed, "Too late now, sis. The cats out of the bag." Amber then looked over at her nephew and whispered, "Honey, we will know in less than a week but for now there is a good chance we are. You could be a daddy in 9 months' time, twice over." Amber then burst out in laughter.

Darmon's legs buckled and he had to sit down again. June remained with him on the bench whilst Darmon's aunts and sisters went about shopping and making sure that when Evelyn comes, she would have everything she needed.

A few hours later, with bags overloading their arms Darmon's aunts and sisters returned. They dropped off the items to the cars, then all went to lunch. Darmon decided to take them to the jewellery store where he purchased the engagement rings. Susan instantly spotted Darmon and each of the women around him wearing the engagement rings. Susan blushed. The male clerk was around and immediately went to June, Mary and Amber to see if he can assist them. Each politely turned him down and spotted Darmon talking to a female clerk.

They approached Darmon and the tail end of the last sentence, "... none feel jealousy?"

June was the one that answered what she thought was a valid question even if she hadn't heard the full extent of the conversation, "No we don't. This might be unconventional but each of us knows he loves us equally, but I would be grateful if this didn't become public knowledge."

Susan stammered, "Of course, ma'am. My lips are sealed."

Darmon didn't want to draw attention to their relationship before introductions, "Susan, this is June and the queen of the women. Next to her is Mary and Amber. The women over there are Marcy, Emily and Natasha." Darmon pointed out each member before continuing, "And this is Susan the one that sold me the rings."

Darmon suddenly had a bright idea, "Oh, since we're all here, why not get the rings engraved. You can do that right now, right, Susan?"

Susan chuckled, "Yes, Darmon. Do you have an idea for what you want?"

Darmon instantly knew what he wanted, "Within the inside band of each ring can you add my name with the plus sign and then the name of the woman. On the outside band, either side of the sapphires can you have the letter's F and L engraved please?"

"FL?" Susan asked.

"'Forever Love'," Darmon answered, but June and her daughters knew it stood for 'Family Love'.

Susan melted at the mention of this and commented on how wonderful it was. They waited an hour for the engraving to be completed and insisted that Darmon was the one that placed the rings back on their ring fingers. Susan watched this and was beet red, she even felt her pussy leaking at the pure love she felt from Darmon and his women.

After that they returned home, got changed and relaxed around the pool until it was dinner time.

After dinner and before the dishes were taken care of, Darmon spoke up, "I said we will talk at dinner. I called mom today and I feel she isn't doing too well. Dad is trying to force mom to call her daughters to return. When mom refuses, dad is getting violent. He is even trying to force her to seduce her friends for him to fuck. Mom has refused outright."

"I will return back to dad's with Sandy as my new girlfriend. I expect dad will send me on another errand and I will put forward a motion that mom come here with the pretence of bringing her daughters back home; this is not going to happen. When mom is here, I will claim her and she will never be a plaything for dad ever again."

"My aim is to leave Sandy with dad who I suspect will bribe her to have sex with him. I will come back here with mom to make her mine before we all then go back home to confront dad. I aim to catch him fucking Sandy which will kick off the start of dad's punishment." Darmon concluded.

All the women were silent before Natasha shouted, "About fucking time, brother. Get mom here and if she isn't convinced it's a good idea to be yours then we will convince her." All the women agreed with Natasha's sentiment.

What followed next was a general discussion on when, how and what punishment and humiliation dad was going to get.

After dinner they all watched a movie and played a game of strip poker as there wasn't any need for restraint anymore, since everyone knew where they stood within 'family love'.

When it was time to go to bed, Natasha nudged her sisters and they all grabbed their brother and led him away to his bedroom. Mary laughed and said loudly as the siblings left, "Have fun kids. Make sure none of us gets any sleep tonight."

The siblings brushed their teeth and performed the nightly rituals before they all lay naked on Darmon's bed.

There was a quiet contentment between the siblings and a love that didn't need to be voiced. Darmon drew his sisters into his embrace and sighed. Emily suddenly let out a big scream, "OH YES, BROTHER FUCK ME... *MOAN* PUT A BABY IN ME... *MOAN*"

The outburst brought her siblings to dead silence and shocked expressions. Natasha laughed, "Wow, sis. That sounded so fake, I doubt the others would be convinced."

Emily laughed, "I know but I wanted to make it, so the others didn't get much sleep."

Darmon moved away from his sisters and positioned them on their backs side by side with Marcy on his left, Emily in the middle and Natasha on his right. Darmon moved over to his eldest sister first and started by kissing her neck, earlobes, forehead, eyes, nose and then lips. The kiss was tender and he put all his love into the kiss. Marcy felt the kiss and melted in pleasure from her brother's touch. Darmon then trailed kisses down her chest as he kissed and licked his sister's areola's before capturing each nipple into his mouth. Darmon gently bit and pulled on his sister's nipples before releasing them.

Marcy was moaning loudly and enjoying the attention her brother was giving her. Darmon left her breasts and trailed a wet tongue down towards her belly button to push the tip of his tongue inside. Darmon swirled his tongue inside for a close to a minute before kissing down to her pubic mound. Darmon kissed and licked her pubic mound, the inner thighs either side of her vulva. Darmon could smell the arousal of his sister and felt a hand on the back of his head to push his face into her pussy. Darmon didn't resist and the first swipe of his tongue that contacted her clitoris sent her over the top. "FUCK!" Marcy screamed, then exploded into orgasm.

Darmon left his out of breath and panting sister, Marcy and moved over to his other sister Emily. Darmon initially kissed Emily in the same way as Marcy and almost repeated the same technique he used on his eldest sister. Only when it came to playing with his sister's pussy, Darmon added a couple of fingers to tease and stimulate her g-spot. Emily shrieked in orgasm when Darmon pushed up hard on her g-spot and captured his sister's clitoris in-between his lips to suck hard. Emily flooded her brother's face when she squirted.

Marcy looked over at her sister and was amazed at witnessing her squirt and gently laid a kiss on her sister's lips as Emily was recovering. Natasha was horny beyond belief and instead of allowing her brother the gently kissing and foreplay he had given to her sisters, pulled her brother's face to hers to lick his face clean of her sister's juices and then pushed her tongue deep into her brother's mouth. "Little brother, I'm too horny for foreplay. Please make love to me and put your seed in me. Make a baby in me, please!" Natasha pleaded after breaking the kiss for a brief moment.

Natasha put her hand down to capture her brother's cock in her right hand and rubbed it up and down her slit to coat it in her juices before placing him at her entrance. Natasha hooked her ankles behind his butt and pulled him in. "FUCK! I'M CUMMING!" Natasha let out a banshee scream as an orgasm ripped through her body when she felt her brother's cock bump hard against her cervix. Natasha shook as if she was having a fit and was trying to take gulps of air into her lungs. Darmon was a little bit concerned as this was by far the biggest reaction he had ever felt from his sister.

Natasha's legs were locked around her brother and even if he wanted to get away, he was unable to do so. Natasha shook and trembled for over 3 minutes as her orgasm settled. Once, Darmon felt his sister relax a little of her grip on him he started to move in and out of her. Darmon brought his sister to 2 more orgasms with Natasha screaming and moaning loudly before he finally let loose deep inside her. When Natasha felt her brothers cum splash against her cervix, she dug her nails into her brother's back and Darmon felt his crotch get very wet. Brother and sister lay joined together as they recovered. Natasha was panting heavily and sobbing with tears rolling down her cheeks.

"I love you, brother. I'm sure to get pregnant with our child with the volume of seed you leave in me every time," Natasha voiced in a shaky voice.

"I love you too, sis," Darmon replied and tenderly kissed his sister. When Darmon pulled out, Natasha pulled a pillow to her and placed it under her lower back to elevate her pelvis up to keep all her brother's cum inside her.

Darmon moved over to Emily and moved her into a doggy style position. Marcy took his cock in her hand and licked her brother's and sister's cum from his cock. Marcy then used her hand to rub her brother's cock up and down her sister's pussy before teasing Emily by placing Darmon's cock against her rosebud. "My love, I promise you, you can have that hole soon, but I need your cock inside my pussy. I want you to make me pregnant."

Marcy giggled before placing her brother's cock at her sister's vagina opening. She got behind Darmon and used both hands to push him hard into their sister. Emily shrieked as the deep penetration brought her to orgasm. Darmon didn't let his sister recover as he started with hard, deep thrusts. Darmon felt his sister's pussy clamp around his cock a few times as he felt his sister climax. The sounds of flesh-on-flesh sounds were heard and the moans and shrieks his sister would make

after each climax. Darmon kept making love to his sister and felt his cum shoot from his balls up his shaft to cum hard against her cervix.

Emily screamed in pleasure and squirted again before falling forward with Darmon still embedded deep inside her and continued to let out a wail as the pleasure of mating with her brother overtook all other senses. Darmon kissed the back of his sister's neck as they both recovered.

Darmon pulled out of his sister, Emily. She flopped down on the bed with her butt still in the air and moaned at the loss of her brother's cock from her pussy. Marcy, who had witnessed her brother make love to their sisters, tackled him to the bed and straddled her brother's hips. She didn't care that Darmon's cock was still coated in his cum and her sisters. She grabbed her brother's cock, lifted him up and impaled herself on him. She didn't immediately climax this time and it took her just over 5 minutes of up, down and grinding motions to achieve her orgasm. Marcy shrieked and fell forward onto her brother to mash their lips together into a deep French kiss.

Darmon held his sister tight to him as she shook, and her pussy milked her brother's cock. After letting his sister recover a little, Darmon started to move his hips up off the bed to continue making love to his eldest sister. 10 minutes later, Marcy had climaxed twice more and felt her brother empty himself inside her. Marcy lifted her upper body up with her head tilted up into a silent scream that lasted for a few seconds before the sound left her body into a final banshee scream.

Marcy collapsed on to her brother and subconsciously marked her brother. Emily and Natasha crawled into their brother's embrace as the exhaustion of their love making caught up with them; they all fell into a contented sleep. Darmon made love to his sisters again during the night, but this mating was gentler than the fucking they received from their brother yesterday. Darmon made each of his sister's orgasm again with screams and shrieks as he left another deposit of his semen inside each of them. Eventually, sleep claimed them all until morning.

Despite Darmon's morning wood, the girls were sated from last night's activities and jacked off their brother, in a 3-way tug on his cock, in the shower.

The next few days passed quickly with one noticeable difference. Mary and Amber were no longer permitted to drink other than water or soda. The pregnancy tests confirmed to be positive for both of Darmon's aunts. June cried the most in joy, although each of the women cried also. June confirmed that during their man's being away she would arrange for Mary and Amber to get tests done by the family doctor to confirm everything.

It was arranged with Sandy, that Darmon will pick her up from her apartment. Today was the day of departure for Darmon. Everyone was gathered in the living room. None of the women had dry eyes and cheeks.

"Darling, call us when you get there, so we know you got there safely," June said as she held onto her grandson not wishing to let go.

"Of course, I will grandma. I promise!" Darmon replied.

Next up were his Aunt Mary and Aunt Amber. "We're only a 4-hour drive away, honey. If your father does anything, call us and we will be there to sort out the fucker," Amber coldly stated.

"We will not allow him to hurt our baby's daddy, honey," Mary added.

"Trust me, if he did something I'm sure you all would be breaking speed limits to get there as quick as possible. I'm not going to risk antagonizing dad, since my primary goal is in rescuing mom," Darmon smiled at his aunts to reassure them.

Darmon then moved over to his sisters. "Be careful, Darmon. Dad doesn't know you're safe now and might try to do something. Get in and get out with mom," Marcy said.

Darmon put his hand on her cheek, leaned down and tenderly kissed her before replying, "I know, sis. I will bring mom back with me."

After that each of his women kissed Darmon with a deep French kiss before seeing him get into his car and drive off.

Darmon didn't see his sisters collapse and burst into tears. June, Mary and Amber each took a granddaughter or niece and lead them inside to comfort them.

Darmon drove to Sandra's apartment, got out of the car and rang the doorbell. The door was answered with the beautiful Sandy, almost ready. "Darmon, you're early or I'm running late. Doesn't matter either way as I need 5 more minutes to get ready. Come in please and make yourself at home," Sandra said.

Darmon entered the apartment, closed the door behind him and watched as sandy rushed off to finish getting ready. Darmon looked around the room and found it was neat and tidy, not what he would expect of a college student. He sat on armchair within the open plan living space. Sandy came in a few minutes later with some open toed shoes in hand.

Sandy sat on the couch and lifted her feet up to put on each shoe. Darmon wouldn't say he had a foot fetish but if he was borderline then seeing her sexy feet would have tipped him over the edge. Darmon noticed that as Sandy lifted her feet to put on each shoe her dress would open. Darmon got glimpses of pastel blue panties. Darmon's gaze wasn't lost on Sandy.

Sandy went back to the bedroom and retrieved a small travel suitcase, "Okay, let's go I'm ready now." Darmon took the bag from Sandy, and both left the house. Darmon opened the passenger door for her and was granted another look at her panties as Sandy got into the car. Darmon went to the trunk of his car and put the small suitcase alongside his own travel bag. Darmon then went to the driver side and got in. He buckled up and looked over to see Sandy had already done that. The car was started and off they went.

"Sandy, my main goal here is to rescue mom. If you don't think you can handle what we are asking of you then now is the time to speak up. Once we get there then we are committed," Darmon offered Sandy a last chance to stop this.

"If I don't do this, how will you get your mom free?" Sandy asked.

Darmon paused while thinking, "I don't know, but I will think of something. I'm not going to force you to do anything you're not totally ready for."

Sandy was pleasantly surprised at Darmon, who was looking at her also. She looked over at Darmon, laid a hand on his arm and replied, "Thank you for caring about me. Truthfully, I was having doubts, firstly about me being HIV positive as every test has been inconclusive so far and whether this is just a crazy scheme to get girls for your father. I'm willing to give you the benefit of the doubt here and if I feel I'm being duped in anyway then I will insist you take me home."

Darmon turned back to look at the road then back to look at Sandy to see her expression before looking back to the road. "Agreed. I should have gotten you to speak to my sisters who knew what my father was doing behind my back with my girlfriends. Hindsight, huh?" Darmon agreed with Sandy.

They drove for the next couple of hours with small talk about her studies, what each of them did for fun, etc. When an hour was left of the journey, Darmon made a confession, "Sandy, we're about an hour away and I need to come clean with you."

Sandy turned to look at Darmon and sighed and with a bit of an edge to her voice responded, "What? My initial thoughts were correct and you're just a pimp for your father?"

"What, fuck no! I am doing this to rescue mom and the start of dad's punishment; that much is true. The details surrounding the events were half-truths," Darmon defended himself.

Sandy remained silent and Darmon sighed and over the next 30 minutes told her everything up until this point. Sandy was shocked at hearing the full details.

"What the fuck, Darmon. Never in a bazillion years would I have come up with this. So, you're in a relationship with everyone in your family?" Sandy asked, still shocked at what she heard and trying to piece things in her head.

"Not everyone! Mom, is still held captive and I'm not going to lie to you and tell you that I will not try to claim her also," Darmon responded with a shrug of his shoulders.

"Why, what makes you any different than your father?" Sandy accused Darmon.

"Fuck, this would have been so much easier had this conversation happened at home, where you could have spoken to everyone there. Too late for that, now. Dad forced my mom, sisters and even my girlfriends against their will. Not once have I exerted my will on to my grandmother, aunts or sisters. I showed them love and never once did I hold the betrayal of me against any of them. They freely became mine," Darmon continued to justify his relationship with his family.

"Fuck me, Darmon. I'm shocked, but why tell me now?" Sandy asked.

Darmon sighed then continued, "Truthfully, you needed to understand where I was coming from, so that you can back me for the start of dad's punishment. I can guarantee my father is going to send me away on an errand of some sort so he can get you alone or get mom to seduce you for him. Under no circumstances are you to allow yourself to be seduced by mom. As part of the ruse, I will put forth a motion for mom to go collect my sisters. Dad should jump at the chance to get them back, so he can continue his sick game. I will ask you to come with me on this errand and you will politely refuse. Dad will try to bribe you for sex after I'm gone."

"After I take mom back to grandmas. I will tell her everything and aim to claim her as mine. I will send you a text a few days after this has happened. I want to time our return journey to catch dad and you, together. I will be bringing back with me all family members. Dad is going to be restrained, and I will humiliate him by having sex with each of my family members in front of him. After this, you will be given the chance to tell him to get checked as per your condition."

"Fucking hell, Darmon. Remind me never to get on your bad side," Sandy stated.

Sandy then chuckled. Darmon looked over and asked, "What's so funny?"

"Oh, now I understand all the looks the women were giving you and the reactions at our initial meeting," Sandy said before bursting into laughter with Darmon joining in.

The rest of the journey was spent in silence and 25 minutes later they were pulling up outside Darmon's parents' home.

Darmon used the button in his car to open the gates and pulled up outside the front door. He got out and went over to the passenger door to open it for Sandy. A smirk played on Sandy's face as she stared into Darmon's eyes, as she spread her legs to get out of the car, giving him a clear view of her panty covered pussy. Darmon groaned and felt his pants tighten. Sandy let out a small giggle before taking Darmon's hand.

Darmon retrieved their travel bags and placed them on the porch as he fished out his key to enter his childhood house. They entered and Darmon dropped the bags in the foyer before saying loudly, "Mom, I'm home."

Darmon and Sandy waited. It was just over 1 minute later that Evelyn comes out of a door further down the hallway; Darmon knew this was his father's study. Evelyn had messy hair and her blouse was buttoned up incorrectly with the buttons misaligned with eyelets. Evelyn stopped dead in her tracks when she saw her son and a guest. Evelyn knew her appearance wasn't acceptable and tried to smooth her messy hair before trying to hide her blouse with her arms.

Darmon was seething with anger when he saw the signs of some bruising on her arms and face. Sandy was shocked at Darmon's mother's appearance and quietly looked down. Darmon wanted to

rush forward and draw his mother into his embrace, but spotted his father exit his study and this made him hesitate.

Darmon in a whisper addressed his mother, "Mom, please go get cleaned up and meet us in the living room. He can't hurt you whilst I am here." Sandy heard Darmon and realized that he genuinely wanted to save his mother.

Evelyn quickly moved off to one of the bedrooms. Darmon noted it wasn't his parent's bedroom but instead his sister Marcy's bedroom. Darmon left the bags in the foyer and took Sandy's hand and lead her towards the living room. "Hon, let's wait for mom in the living room and then I will make the proper introductions." Sandy linked her arm into Darmon's and was led to the living room. Darmon ignored his father. Edward was equally pissed off at being ignored and glad that Darmon didn't want to address him.

Darmon sat on the couch with Sandy sitting right next to him. Darmon wanted to show his father she was his girlfriend and quietly placed a kiss close to her lips and whispered, "Play along, please!"

"Sandy, this is my home. It's your home too for a while," Darmon said out loud.

"Oh, darling. You're family home is lovely. If I wasn't already, you're girlfriend, I would have fallen for you 10 times over. You're handsome, smart, with a host of other things I like about you," Sandy replied in a very jovial way.

Edward came into the living room and sat in his dedicated armchair. Edward looked over at Sandy and licked his lips and thought to himself, 'Yep, this girl will be riding my cock soon enough.' Edward laughed to himself knowing he was going to 'cuck' his idiot of a son, yet again.

"Darmon, aren't you going to introduce your lady friend?" Edward asked.

"There's no point in doing this multiple times, so let's wait for mom," Darmon deflected for the moment. Edward continued to stare at Sandy, trying to estimate her measurements and see if he can catch any glimpses up her dress. 7 minutes of silence followed before they heard a door open and close and a few seconds later Evelyn reappeared. Evelyn had removed her blouse and skirt for a dress and used make-up to hide the bruising. Evelyn had even applied some basic lipstick and other facial make-up.

Evelyn walked up to her son. Darmon stood up along with Sandy. Mother and son embraced and Darmon felt his mother sigh and relax a little as they hugged. "Honey, welcome home. You never told

me you were coming back and with a guest also." Evelyn moved out of her son embrace and turned towards Sandy, "Hi, I'm Evelyn and this one's mother if that wasn't already obvious." Evelyn gave Sandy a brief hug in greeting.

"Hi, I'm Sandra, but most people just called me Sandy," Sandy replied, then in jest, "And if it wasn't obvious, this one's girlfriend. It's a pleasure to meet you."

Edward got up and took Sandy's hand in his and kissed the back of her hand, "I'm Edward. It's a pleasure to meet you." Edward bent at the waist as he kissed her hand whilst looking up into Sandy's eyes. Sandy felt repulsed at his actions and the tone of voice he was using, trying to be as seductive in the process. Sandy noted that Darmon's father didn't even acknowledge him as had his mother. There was no mention that Darmon was his son at all.

"Honey, why don't you both sit down and let me get us some drinks. Wine okay for everyone?" Evelyn asked. Darmon looked over at Sandy, and she gave him a brief nod.

"That would be wonderful, mom. It was a long journey, and I could do with something to unwind with. Red or White, hon?" Darmon confirmed to his mother and asked Sandy.

"Either is fine," Sandy replied.

"Oh, you both must be starving, let me get dinner started also. Sandy, would you like to join me in the kitchen, and we can drink, cook and talk at the same time," Evelyn asked Sandy.

Sandy looked over at Darmon to almost seek permission. Edward noted that Sandy was submissive and knew with this knowledge it was going to be easy to get her into his bed. Darmon chuckled, "Go for it. I'll take our bags to my room and meet you in the kitchen, in a few." Sandy got up and took Evelyn's hand as she was led towards the kitchen.

Darmon didn't even both looking at his father and got up to collect the bags from the foyer and took them to his bedroom room.

Darmon had promised to call his grandmother and took this time to do that. June was just glad Darmon and Sandy got there without any issues and Edward wasn't causing him any trouble. Darmon reported that he believes his father is going to send him on an errand as per normal and he will be bringing mom back with him. The call ended.

He left both bags on his bed before going off to the kitchen. Darmon watched his mother look into the fridge and decided on white fish pie. With white fish then obvious choice was going to be white wine. Evelyn passed the bottle and corkscrew to Sandy, who was in the process of opening the bottle as Evelyn got out the stuff to make dinner with.

Darmon rushed over to his mother and turned her around to crush her against him. Evelyn started to cry and soak the front of her son's shirt; Darmon didn't care. Darmon just rocked his mother with Sandy watching and she saw how much Darmon cared for his mother.

After a few minutes, Evelyn pulled herself together and pushed away from her son. "Sorry, you had to see that Sandy," Evelyn said as she looked over at Sandy.

Sandy laughed, "Think nothing of it, Evelyn. Truth be told, Darmon filled me in everything and I'm ashamed to admit that I thought he was pimping me out to his father until I first lay eyes on you. I now fully back Darmon in rescuing you."

"Mom, Sandy knows everything. I told her what I suspect dad is going to do and not be seduced by you. Follow me lead, tomorrow, mom. I will take you with me to grandma's and return with the whole family in a few days," Darmon confessed.

"In the interim, is there anything I can help you with, mom?" Darmon asked.

Sandy poured 3 glasses of wine one for each of them and then offered to help also. Even in the brief interactions with Sandy, Evelyn was growing to like the girl. The idea for her to sleep with Edward was leaving a foul taste in her mouth. Between the 3 of them dinner was ready. Darmon and Sandy setup the dining room table, whilst Evelyn went off to call her husband to dinner.

Evelyn knew Edward would be in his study. When she entered, Edward looked up as she told him, "Dinner is ready. Come eat with us."

Edward smirked and before responding to the dinner request, flatly told his wife, "I'm going to send Darmon on an errand tomorrow and you're going to seduce his girlfriend for me."

Evelyn shook her head, "No, not this time. Can you not leave OUR son at least one girlfriend, so that he can be happy?"

Edward laughed, "Why the fuck would I do that? You know I hold his life in the palm of my hand. I will take everything he has and leave him with nothing. What is mine is mine and what is his is mine!"

Evelyn stood up straight and looked her husband in the eyes and flatly told him, "No!"

Edward got up quickly, raised his hand to strike Evelyn, as she said, "If you hit me now and leave another mark on me, then you can count any chance you have with Sandy off the cards. Sandy will see the type of man you are. Do you think she will spread her legs for someone like that?"

Edward stopped his hand inches away from her face and instead grabbed her arm and pushed her towards the door. Darmon and Sandy were seated at the dining room table and both noticed the change in Evelyn, immediately. Darmon was about to get up and kick his father's ass, if it wasn't for Sandy's hand on his arm.

Dinner talk was quiet and light, with questions about what Sandy was doing and how she and Darmon meet. After dinner, Edward went back to his study. Evelyn and the kids, talked further over drinks until it was time for bed.

In the bedroom, to keep up appearances Darmon and Sandy shared a bed, and Darmon was mindful of personal space and even offered to sleep on the sofa in the bedroom which was stopped by Sandy with the simple statement, "What if Edward checks to check on you and see you sleeping on the sofa?" Darmon relented at this and both slept until morning.

After taking a shower, separately, Darmon and Sandy came down for breakfast. Only 3 people were around the dining room table for breakfast, Darmon, Sandy and Evelyn.

True to form, Darmon got the summons from his father. He took Sandy with him to his father's study. Edward was surprised to see Sandy but hid that behind a mask that he would always wear when sending Darmon to camp or an errand.

"Darmon, now that you're here, I have an important task that I've been putting off, and it needs to get done. I need you to out west to a small town slightly further from where your grandmother lives. The errand shouldn't last more than 5 days, maybe a week max. You'll do this for me right?" Edward asked.

"Why? I just got here from that way and now I must go back that way," Darmon faked annoyance. "If I have to then I'm going to take Sandy with me," Darmon stated.

Sandy knew this was the point where she was supposed to not accept that, "Darling, I just got here. I want to stay and await your return. I'm sure this place has lots of interesting things I could do."

"What? But the journey is boring, especially alone. Come on, come back with me, please?" Darmon spoke to Sandy in defeat.

Sandy sighed, "Why not take your mom. I'm sure she would love to see her mother-in-law and both of her sisters-in-laws, plus your sisters are there right now, right? And on the return journey you could return with your mother and sisters. You'll have plenty of people to save you from boredom then, right?"

Darmon was supposed to put forward the motion and could have kissed Sandy for giving him an opening and ran with it, "Yeah, I suppose that could work. Okay, dad, if Sandy wants to stay here to see the sights, then I can take mom with me and kill two birds with one stone. Mom can see grandma and my aunts for a few days before returning with my sisters."

Edward, initially, was pissed at the idea of letting Evelyn go as he was going to force her to corrupt Darmon's girlfriend alongside him but then thought how many times, he could fuck Sandy before they all returned. Edward was gloating inside, knowing that he was going to be balls deep inside Sandy soon.

"I suppose that could work," Edward conceded, before continuing, "You can go prepare and I expect you to leave within the hour. Can you send your mother in here please?"

Darmon and Sandy left hand in hand to his bedroom and as they passed Evelyn in the hallway told her Edward was asking to see her.

In Darmon's bedroom, Sandy was getting nervous. Darmon noticed this and took her hands in his, "Delay dad for as long as you can. He hasn't got anything to blackmail you with, so will try to bribe you. Try to hold out for as long as you can. With a bit of luck, we could time this with my return journey here. So, you may only have to have sex with him once as I catch you both at it." Sandy nodded.

"He won't get violent with you if he plans to take you away from me. Just play hard to get and make him believe you're worth it," Darmon advised.

Meanwhile, in Edward's study, Evelyn was standing before Edward, "Since, you're so adamant to not help me get Sandy then you can fuck off with your son on the errand I am sending him on. You can go visit mom and my sisters and make sure to bring back our daughters when you return. I'm going to fuck Sandy and make her mine whilst you're gone. Remember, your son's life is in the palm of my hand. If you don't want his death on your hands, then you will do as I ask. Get the fuck out of here. You leave within the hour. I need to get my dick ready for that sweet pussy I'll be pounding soon."

Evelyn was disgusted with Edward and any love she had for him was truly dead. In fact, it had died when he forced their eldest daughter to submit to him. The only reason she and her daughters suffered and were continuing to suffer was for her beloved son, Darmon. Evelyn left to pack a travel bag.

An hour later, Darmon and his mother were outside standing by his car. Edward stood back from them all and witnessed Darmon hug and kiss his girlfriend on the cheek, then Evelyn hugged Sandy. Darmon opened the door for his mom and she got in. Darmon then went over to the driver's side and entered his car.

Sandy saw Darmon and his mother drive away feeling very nervous. Edward had a wide smile on his face and told himself, 'Let the seduction commence.' Edward then laughed inwardly, knowing he was going to claim another of Darmon's girlfriends.

Chapter 9

The first hour of the journey in the car returning to his grandmother's was in silence, other than the music playing through the radio. This wasn't because there was nothing to say between mother and son but was due to Evelyn falling into a relaxed sleep.

Evelyn woke up and groggily looked out the side car window then back over to her look at her son. Darmon noticed that movement and turned briefly to look at his mother and smile at her, "Mom, I hope you had a nice nap?"

"I'm sorry, honey. I'm a bad companion on this journey, aren't I? As for the nap, your father wouldn't let me sleep last night. I tried to sleep in the guest bedroom, but he insisted on what he called my wife duties," Evelyn answered.

Evelyn looked over at her son and saw anger etched on his face. "Honey, I had no choice in the matter, and I feared what he would have done to you or Sandy had I refused," Evelyn continues to try and sooth her son.

Darmon sighed, heavily. Darmon took a deep breath to calm his nerves, "Mom, you will never have to put up with that ever again. I came back for you as I promised. From this day forward you are free from dad. I will no longer allow him to hurt you ever again."

Evelyn went silent for a while and then noticed a service station coming up. "Honey, can we stop at the service station coming up please. I could use the toilet and maybe we can get a coffee or something to talk before continuing," Evelyn asked.

Darmon nodded and pulled into the service station. "Honey, can you park in the furthest spot away from any prying eyes," Evelyn asked her son. Darmon was confused as to why his mother asked this but did so anyway.

Darmon parked the car and turned off the engine. Evelyn undid her seat belt and watched as her son did the same. Once both seat belts were undone, Evelyn reached under her son's seat and pulled the leaver to push his seat fully back and then straddled her son. Evelyn had already had sex with her daughters, admittedly forced, so adding another of her children wasn't hard for her. Darmon was shocked and confused with the actions of his mother.

Evelyn sat down hard in her son's lap and started to feel him get hard which prompted her to grind her covered pussy against her son's growing hard-on. "I'm sorry, honey. Since, Marcy turned 18 I have never once had the freedom to do what I wanted. Your father would always force me to do things with Marcy and then your other sisters and your girlfriends. If you would allow me, I want to do something for myself and not be forced into it. I'm going to kiss you, honey. Is that alright with you?"

Darmon croaked out, "Yes!".

Evelyn leaned down and put both hands around the back of her son's head and brought her lips down to her son's. The kiss was tender and sweet with Evelyn moaning in pleasure. Soon the kiss turned into a more passionate kiss and Evelyn forced her tongue into her son's mouth and started to grind her pussy harder on to her son's cock. Mother and son French kissed for a good 5 minutes before Evelyn broke the kiss and moaned loudly as she climaxed. Darmon knew he had to mark his mother and proceeded to kiss, lick and suck on her neck to leave a dark red hickey.

Evelyn rested her head against her son's shoulder and panted heavily, "Honey, thank you for allowing me the pleasure of getting something that I've always wanted. This was my way of thanking you for keeping your promise. I know I've left you with blue balls. I can take care of that for you, I could either use my hand or give you a blowjob, but I think I might be breaking some sort of rule if I did that. Will you let me talk to your grandmother first?"

Darmon was disappointed but remembered the rules before answering his mother, "Don't worry about it, mom. I am sure that after your talk with grandma and if you're still willing then we can see how things go from there. Shall we go get a coffee and talk like you wanted?"

Evelyn nodded and opened Darmon's door to raise her leg to step out of the car. She faced her son and put her hand up the front of her dress and moved her panties away from her crotch. Darmon stared at his mother doing this which made his cock twitch. Evelyn suddenly realized this could be torture for her son, blushed before stammering, "Oh, umm, sorry honey. I didn't mean to cause you any further distress."

Darmon laughed, "Don't worry about it, mom. It's nothing new for me."

Mother and son then went to the diner to order a coffee each and sat in the far corner booth so they could chat. Darmon was the one who opened the conversation, "Mom, I meant what I said before; you're free now and this is regardless of how your meeting with grandma goes."

"Really, honey. God, I have wanted someone to come rescue me from Edward. Am I free?" Evelyn asked quietly.

"Yes, mom. We just needed to find an excuse for dad to believe in letting you leave his side," Darmon answered also in a quiet voice.

"'We'? Also, you mentioned on the phone about 'family love', can you tell me about that?" Evelyn asked to get some answers to some questions that have plagued her for a while now.

"When I referred to 'we', I meant grandma, my aunts and my sisters. We all came up with a plan for dad. As for the 'family love', I would ask that you talk to grandma about that. In the interim let me explain the plan we have for dad," Darmon replied.

Darmon then spent the next 30 minutes explaining the plan in detail. Evelyn listened patiently and asked a couple of questions to get better clarity. Once, that conversation was over Evelyn looked over at her son before saying, "Honey, there is still a chance that Sandy isn't infected and you just threw a

girl at Edward and abandoned her. I'm not happy with that. Had I known this was your plan, I wouldn't have left and would have insisted you take Sandy with you."

Darmon sighed, "And that is the reason I didn't tell you until now. My main goal was to rescue you. I promise, in a few days after certain things happen then I will return to make sure she returns. I asked Sandy to delay and lead dad on. Dad won't hurt her for a few days at least knowing he is going to 'cuck' me again. I need to return in a few days and I will be taking everyone with me then. Dad is going to learn a lesson that day."

"Certain things?" Evelyn asked.

"I can't talk about that as it falls under 'family love' and you really need to have a discussion with grandma first," Darmon said as he shrugged his shoulders.

"Okay, fair enough. You can at least tell me who is in 'family love' as well as yours and theirs feelings," Evelyn sighed, a little disappointed in not getting the answers right now.

"Well, grandma, both my aunts and all my sisters. As for our feelings, I can say without a doubt I love each of them equally and they love me. There isn't any jealousy between them, although I sometimes do get that vibe and look sometimes from my sisters but never from grandma or my aunts," Darmon told his mother.

Darmon paused to give his mother time to process this and to ask any further questions. When no questions immediately were asked, Darmon continued, "You should know that Dad can never action his threat towards me now; grandma will never allow it. Grandma has made me 'head of the family' and that isn't just a title for me as part of 'family love'. It is in fact a title that was grandpas until his death. It really does mean that if I abide by the rules then my position outranks that of dad's. My sisters know this and will never go back to being dad's playthings. I hope you realize that knowing dad's threats are meaningless, means that you are also free of his influence now."

Darmon then laughed, which caused his mother to look at her son in confusion. "Mom, do you remember what you asked me to do and what I told you when I thought I couldn't do it? You asked me to seduce my grandmother and aunts. I would say that mission is accomplished, although, my sisters weren't originally expected to be included. I still saved them and every female currently at grandma's is mine. I'm going to tell you up front right now, following your talk with grandma, I will be adding you to the mix also. Once you are part of 'family love' then dad can never get to you ever again, that I can promise you."

Evelyn looked shocked and looked at her son and in a hurt voice, "Darmon Martin Preston, what makes you think I would allow this?"

Darmon sighed, "Wow, using my full name. Is your anger directed at me because you think you don't have a choice in this? Well, you do! Everyone one in 'family love' had a choice and following your talks with grandma, my aunts and sisters, I think you would make the right choice. Even if you reject this, still know that I would protect and care for you, always."

Evelyn was shocked and stunned into silence and had a lot to think about. She instead stood up and looked at her son before asking, "I have a lot to understand and think about. Shall we continue to your grandmother's?"

Darmon stood up and linked his hand with her, paid for the coffee's and then left the diner. Darmon opened the passenger door and helped his mother in. Evelyn looked at her son's face as she saw he was trying not to look up her dress but failing. Evelyn decided to tease her son with one leg inside and one leg still on the tarmac of the car park giving her son a clear view up her dress to the white panties she wore. "Mom, please don't tease me. It's really hard on me."

Evelyn giggled, "I bet its 'hard-on' for you, honey." Evelyn then got into the car properly before Darmon gently closed the door before going over to the driver's side. He had to re-adjust his car seat before pulling out and driving away. Mother and son arrived at his grandmother's three and half hours later due to some traffic along the way.

Darmon parked the car outside the garage and went over to open the passenger door for his mother. Evelyn knew the next few minutes were going to be chaos and decided not to tease her son. Evelyn remained silent and was thankful that her son also didn't say anything as the nerves were giving stomach flutters. Evelyn took the hand of her son and felt some of his strength.

Darmon led his mother to the front door and used his key to enter. As he stepped into the foyer, his grandmother, aunts and sisters were lined up as they already know when the gates opened to let Darmon's car in, that they had arrived.

Evelyn watched stunned into silence as her mother-in-law came up to her son and French kissed him, this was followed by her sister-in-law's Mary and then Amber who also French kissed her son. What stunned Evelyn the most was when each of her daughters also came forward to French kiss their brother. When she looked at the faces of her daughters she could see tears in their eyes.

After the women all greeted Darmon, June turned towards her daughter-in-law and hugged her and kissed her cheek, "Welcome home, darling. We'll talk soon." Evelyn simply nodded her head.

Mary and Amber then came forward and each hugged her and kissed her on the cheek. Mary was the one that welcomed Evelyn, "Welcome sis. Like mom, we'll talk later and share some exciting news with you." Evelyn had a confused look on her face but also just nodded.

Marcy ran up to her mother crying. Evelyn opened her arms wide to capture her daughter into a tight embrace and leaned in to kiss her daughter on the lips. Marcy turned her head so the kiss landed on her cheek. Evelyn was confused until Marcy whispered, "Sorry mom, not without Darmon's permission. I'm his now as are my sisters."

When Marcy moved away, Emily was suddenly in her mother embrace and crying into her mother's breasts. Evelyn kissed her daughter on the forehead, "Welcome home, mom. Dad didn't hurt you after we left, right?"

Before Evelyn could answer, Emily moved away to be replaced by Natasha. Mother and daughter embraced for a short while and Natasha let her mother kiss her on the forehead and cheek. Natasha suddenly moved away and started to scan her mother from all sides to make sure she was unharmed. "Honey, please stop. Can we talk shortly? I mean with all my daughters to catch-up on events."

"Sure, mom!" Natasha answered for her and her sisters.

Darmon went out to collect his mothers and his bags from the car. June took Evelyn's hand in hers and led her away to her bedroom to talk.

In June's bedroom, Evelyn was led to the couch and they both sat close to each other. June looked at her daughter-in-law before opening this discussion, "Darling, before we get the meat of this discussion, you should know that you're safe here and will not be forced into anything you're not willing to do."

Evelyn sighed and relaxed a little. June then saw the hickey and in a very serious tone asked, "Please tell me that Edward didn't leave that mark on you? If so, was it a lie when you told us that Edward meant nothing to you?"

Evelyn quickly looked at her mother-in-law with a shocked expression, "No, I have no love in my heart for your son." Evelyn then touched where her son had marked her before smiling, "This was left by my son."

June chuckled before responding, "Yes, Darmon does like to mark his women." June then showed her daughter-in-law the fading mark left by her grandson. When Evelyn saw the mark, it brought everything that her son told her into the open.

"I am sure you have lots of questions and I will answer them shortly. First, tell me how things have gone at home and about what you already know and your journey here," June asked in a reassuring way.

Evelyn told her mother-in-law, about the violence Edward was subjecting her to. How he was forcing her to do things and demanding her to call our daughters back. Evelyn told her mother-in-law how Edward was using violence to get her to call her married friends, so that she could seduce them for Edward. Evelyn had tears in her eyes as she told June that on the day that Darmon came home, Edward had slapped her around because she refused to call her friends. How sad and embarrassed she was when greeting her son and Sandy.

"I don't know how Darmon did it, but Edward agreed to let me go and come here with a demand to come back with our daughters. On the way here as a reward for my son, we made out at a service stop. I climaxed grinding myself on him, but he didn't cum. We talked a little about 'family love' but he wouldn't say much, other than to talk to you about it," Evelyn concluded.

"Thank you, darling. Normally, you wouldn't know about 'family love' without being invited; this is complicated due to the actions of Edward. First, I will tell you about the rules and I will answer your questions after that," June stated. June then went over the rules with her daughter-in-law.

After June finished the rules, which included the new one that was introduced recently.

"So, that explains the greetings when Darmon entered the villa. Tell me, mom; is Darmon truly free from his father's influence and Edward can't enact any of his threats against him? Why?" Evelyn asked.

"Yes, Darmon is now 'head of the family' and as such with me being the matriarch of the family, I control the money that Edward has access to. Darmon has unrestricted access. I am your son's woman and if we both abide by the rules then Edward can never hurt him ever again," June answered the first question. "I am unsure what you mean when you asked 'why?'. Can you expand on that please?" June continued, trying to understand what her daughter-in-law was asking.

"Why Darmon? Why do you submit to him? Why does everyone just go along with it?" Evelyn asked a little louder than normal as frustration set in.

June sighed, "Why Darmon? For 'family love' to exist, it requires a male to be lead it. After your father-in-law passed, Edward was going to be asked to fill that position. This was the reason that I wouldn't have done anything if Edward had conquered his family with love. Even though Edward didn't know the rules, he broke so many of them. For this reason, Darmon was the next male heir. You should know that Darmon didn't accept this position without some struggles; it appears you tasked him with seducing me and his aunts that he was finding difficult to accomplish. Darmon only accepted after getting a guarantee from me to rescue his sisters and you."

"As for why I submit to him; the simple answer is love. The family needed him, he loves me and I love him. You will find that his aunts also love him. As for your daughters, Emily freely accepted his love and received it in return. Marcy and Natasha struggled the hardest fearing their brother was just like their father. He proved to them he wasn't and won their love and they in return, his. That should also answer your last question as well," June answered her daughter-in-law's questions.

"It's no secret that your son wants you to join in 'family love' and personally, I think it's a great idea. You don't have to decide right now, talk to Mary and Amber and your daughters. Just don't take too long to decide as one way or another, Darmon aims to go back to see his father's punishment to completion. I've given you the rules and can confirm that each of us have accepted, without any reservations. If you're still not convinced after talking to everyone then have a final discussion with Darmon. You won't regret it, that I can promise you," June concluded. June and Evelyn got up and returned to the living room. Evelyn did spot the ring but decided not to say anything.

When June and Evelyn entered the living room, they spotted Darmon sat on the couch with Natasha straddling his lap and Marcy on his right and Emily on his left. Darmon had his arms around the shoulders of Marcy and Emily. Natasha had her head resting against her brother's neck and shoulder. Evelyn was stunned as she watched her son and daughters so close together.

Mary and Amber caught the slight nod of their mother. "So, I guess it's our turn then," Mary commented. Mary and Amber got up and went to their sister-in-law. Amber smiled and took hold of Evelyn's hand, "Come, sis. Let's go have a chat in our bedroom."

Evelyn looked back at her kids as she was led towards another bedroom.

After the door was closed, Evelyn asked the most obvious and pressing question that came to mind, "Amber said 'our' bedroom. I don't understand..."

Mary chuckled, "Sis, come sit on the bed besides us and I'll try to explain." Mary then sat Evelyn in-between herself and Amber. "Mom and Dad were aware of our relationship after we both came out following Amber's 18th. Edward couldn't handle it and made our lives hell for it, which is fucking ironic especially with what he was making you, your daughters and Darmon's ex-girlfriends do."

Amber then took over to let her sister calm down a little, "It's not that we hated men, just that we felt more of a connection with each other. Dad was the 'head of the family' and didn't mind us being as we were. Mom and Dad accepted that both my sister and I were in love and we would only let dad be intimate with us."

Mary then continued after sighing to relax again, "After dad passed away, Mom was going to ask Edward to be the head, until certain events made that impossible. The thought of Edward having either of us makes us sick and is disgusting. I have to say the love between my sister and I, we thought would be unbreakable and no man could ever come between us. At least that is what we thought until our nephew came along. For the first time in my life, you could say I love another over even my sister. Darmon has given us something that neither dad or Edward could ever have given us."

Amber chuckled, "Yeah, I love Darmon over my own sister also. Evelyn, you should know that Darmon isn't like Edward and hasn't forced or manipulated any of us. What our nephew has given us is a miracle and one that we feared would never happen, especially if Edward became head." Amber then put her hand over her stomach.

Evelyn gasped. Mary giggled, "Yes, both of us are having your son's child, a new life is forming within us. It is another reason why Darmon was chosen, as our family legacy can continue. Darmon didn't force his on us. In fact, it was us that forced it on him. Darmon has a good soul and made sure it was something we both truly wanted."

Amber then continued, "Not sure how your chat with mom went but if you're have any doubts, then let them go. Accept his love and protection, as it would be the best thing you could ever do. We love him and he us. Do you have any questions for us?"

Evelyn was shocked at the news of her becoming a grandmother. Mary and Amber waited patiently, smiling at their sister-in-law. It was a few minutes before Evelyn responded, "First congratulations. Quite frankly I am speechless and not sure how to take it all in."

Mary responded in a serious tone, "Thanks, sis. Both Amber and I have really wanted to have a child. Dad couldn't give us one and we would never have accepted a child with Edward. If you have any concerns or questions later then we will gladly help answer them."

Evelyn laughed this time, "Having Edward get you pregnant would have required a miracle as he had the snip after Darmon was born."

Amber laughed this time, "Thank fuck for that. I would've hated it to have been Edward's. I'm glad mom made Darmon the 'head of the family'."

Once again Evelyn noticed the exact same rings on both of her sister-in-law's ring fingers, as she had seen on her mother-in-law. Evelyn was confused and couldn't ask before being led back.

With that Evelyn, Mary and Amber returned to the living room. This time, Evelyn saw her daughters all sitting opposite Darmon and June. Evelyn was witness to her mother-in-law straddling her son, who was moving up and down gently. Evelyn wasn't sure if grandmother and grandson were fucking because June's dress was covering her son's lap; what she did see was a grandmother and grandson making out using a lot of tongue.

Amber leaned into Evelyn and whispered, "Don't mind them, sis. Mom loves him. You're going to have to get used to seeing sights like that. For now, I get the feeling your daughters need to catch-up with you. Go use one of the girl's bedrooms or even Darmon's."

Evelyn was shocked and was rooted to the spot as she watched her son fuck his grandmother or at least, she suspected this was what was happening. Evelyn looked briefly at Amber and nodded before returning to look at the couple on the couch. Evelyn felt the gusset of her panties get wet after she heard her mother-in-law moan.

Evelyn's daughters spotted their mother, and all stood up. Marcy went over to her mother and gently laid her hand on her mother's arm, "Mom, come follow me."

Marcy led her mother towards Darmon's bedroom. After they entered, Evelyn looked around and didn't see the usual things a girl would normally have in her bedroom; namely make-up and other female touches. "Sweetie, who's bedroom is this?" Evelyn asked.

"Really mom? In a house full of women and we enter a bedroom that clearly doesn't belong to a female. You have only one guess, mom!" Emily answered.

Evelyn was stunned with the sass of her daughter and before she could answer Natasha spoke up, "Come on sis, in mom's defence, this could be two possible options and one of them is a guest bedroom."

When all of Evelyn's daughters laughed, she saw the funny side of things and chuckled. "It's Darmon's, mom," Marcy answered.

Evelyn was about to ask another question but was silenced by Marcy holding up a hand, open palm towards her mother, "Mom, I'm going to pre-emptive a lot of your questions by saying we all did this of our own free will. Our brother did nothing but be understanding and not shy away from giving us his love. He washed away our built-up resentment and showed us that he wasn't at fault here. Dad was the one that was the cause of all this."

"Mom, I love him. In fact, we, his sisters all love him," Emily added. Natasha nodded her head.

"I don't know how much you know, but Emily accepted his love first. Natasha and I took a lot longer but in the end, he won our hearts also," Marcy continued.

Under the conviction of her daughters, Evelyn had to sit down and chose the couch. "I know I sent Darmon here on a mission to prevent Edward from corrupting his own mother and sisters. Still, when all of you came to live here, I never expected you all to move from one incestuous relationship to a different one. I really hoped you would be free to choose your own paths away from incest," Evelyn stated.

Natasha giggled, "And that is exactly what we have done, mom. We chose our own paths with Darmon."

"Our brother, promised to save you and he kept his promise. Nothing you can say will change how we feel. We are a part of 'family love' and are very happy to be part of it. Darmon doesn't force us to do anything we aren't happy with," Emily told her mother.

Natasha then held up her hand with the ring finger towards her mother, the diamond and sapphire ring sparkled in the light, "Mom, have you not noticed these?"

Evelyn looked at her daughters, and each had the same ring adorning their ring finger. Evelyn nodded before responding, "Yes, I saw that June, Mary and Amber had them also. Why?"

Marcy laughed, "Isn't it obvious, mom? This is Darmon's commitment to each of us and a sign of his love for us. We are all his fiancés. You know he has one for you also; whoops, I think I just spoiled the surprise."

"Mom, do you still have some attachment to dad?" Emily asked not really wanting to know if her mother still did.

Evelyn looked shocked and with defiance in her voice, "Honey, for what your father did to me and his family, I cannot forgive. No, I do not have any attachment to him."

"Then give Darmon a chance to win your heart, mom!" Natasha stated, "Trust me, you won't regret it," she continued.

"Are you sure this is what you each want?" Evelyn asked her daughters.

"More than anything else. Mom, if you don't already know he got our aunts pregnant and we each are trying to have his babies also," Marcy told her mother.

Evelyn was shocked at this news but remained silent trying to process everything. "Listen, mom. If you need more convincing then let us send Darmon here to talk with you," Emily concluded.

Evelyn nodded and watched at her daughters got up and left her son's bedroom.

Meanwhile, back at the other house, Edward was getting antsy and wanted to start his seduction. Edward was annoyed that he had to do this the hard way and was cussing his bitch of a wife for not fucking her son's slut first which would have made this so much easier.

Edward went to his son's bedroom and tried to open the door without knocking and found it locked. Edward sighed before knocking on the door.

Sandy was glad she had locked the door especially when she saw the handle move down to open the door to find it locked. Sandy's heart was beating very fast and knew this was the start of her mission. "Yes?" Sandy responded to the knock.

"Honey, it's just us here now. I was just coming to check on you and ask if you wanted to do out for dinner?" Edward asked. "Sandy, come open the door so we can have a civilized conversation. It not polite to converse through a door," Edward continued.

Sandy sighed and got up to unlock the door. When the door was open, Edward saw his son's girlfriend and nearly lost it as he had to fight the urge to push her against the wall and fuck the shit out of her. Sandy saw the look of lust in his eyes and felt the pit in her stomach drop. Sandy was now regretting her decision to perform this task, especially, after learning of how this vile man treated women and the bruises on Darmon's mother when they first arrived.

Sandy smiled at Edward, "Oh sorry about that, it's just a force of habit. Dinner sounds great. When and the dress code?"

"I say we go out for dinner this evening at around 7:30 and that should give you a couple of hours to get ready. As for dress code; dress in a nice dress as if you're going to attend a formal event," Edward smirked looking at Sandy from head to toe and then back up, pausing briefly at her breasts to gauge her bust size.

"Excellent, that would be wonderful. Pity we couldn't make this a double date; me with Darmon and you with your wife," Sandy responded, trying not to vomit with the leering look Edward was giving her.

Edward laughed, "Yeah, pity!" Sandy could see that he didn't mean it and felt he wasn't sincere. Edward then stated, "I'll come back here then; we can take the car to the restaurant."

Sandy agreed with Edward and then closed the door before locking it again. Edward heard the door lock and sighed but didn't let it bother him too much as he went to his study. After entering and seating himself at his desk, Edward unlocked his computer and opened the live feed from his son's bedroom and the en-suite also. Edward was glad he installed hidden cameras throughout the house. Not even his wife and daughters knew about them. Edward watched as Sandy opened her suitcase and laid out on the bed a lovely red evening dress. She also took out some sexy light beige lingerie with matching garter belt and flesh-coloured stockings.

Edward laughed, "The slut knows I'm going to rail her soon and is dressing up for me. She certainly isn't doing this for my fuck wit of a son."

After Sandy laid out her evening attire, she went off the bathroom to have a bath and ensure her personal hygiene was in order. Edward watched and zoomed in on Sandy as she stripped off her clothing. He saw Sandy examine her legs, armpits and spread her legs to examine her pussy. Edward watched as he got his cock out to jerk-off and saw Sandy had a slight stubble of hair covering her pussy. Sandy ran a bath and added bubble bath to the water. As the water in the bath was filling, she walked naked to the bedroom to retrieve her razor and some shaving foam. Edward was moaning in pleasure at the sight of Sandy using the razor on her armpits, legs and her pussy to make it bare of any hair.

"Yes, Yes, make sure it's clean shaven just the way I like it. Soon I will be feasting on that as you suck on my large cock," Edward was moaning and getting close to cumming. "The slut is clearing getting ready for me. Why else would you spend all that time if you're not expecting to get fucked," Edward chuckled. Of course, Sandy and anyone else was unaware of this.

As Darmon entered his bedroom, Evelyn was startled out of her thoughts. Darmon saw the look on his mother's face and immediately went to apologize, "Oh, sorry mom for scaring you."

Evelyn quickly recovered and smiled at her son and patted the space next to her on the bed. "Well, let me congratulate you first," Evelyn started.

Darmon looked confused and asked, "For what?"

Evelyn chuckled, "Really, there are a few things straight away. Should I start with how you have many fiancés or the fact that you are going to make me a grandmother?"

"Oh, umm... I suppose the cats out of the bag now. I was hoping I was going to tell you myself, but it seems my women were too excited to stay silent," Darmon stammered.

Evelyn laughed, "No they couldn't. Everyone keeps telling me how they are happy and it's a good thing and are pushing me to join in 'family love'."

"Well, they're not wrong. I make them happy and they make me happy. I haven't forced them into this or any sexual acts and never will. I would like for you to join us also. I want you, mom! Just know that I would never force you and just ask you to be mine," Darmon stated.

Evelyn sighed, "It not that easy, honey, especially after what I witnessed and found out since I got here. Were you really fucking your grandmother in the living room?"

Darmon's face got hot, "No! Mom, grandma was making slow gentle love with me... I mean we were making slow gentle love. Grandma was happy to see me back and that I managed to rescue you. Just know that regardless of you joining 'family love' and if you live in this house you have to get used to seeing me with grandma, my aunts and even my sisters. There won't be anything primal or forced in our actions. As per the rules, they know I will always service them and if I ask they will service me. I don't want to hide anything from you and hope that I can love you like this also."

"Just know that if you do join in and are claimed by me then you're mine alone. Dad will never lay a hand on you ever again, that I can promise. I will love and protect you forever. Well, I would do that anyway even if you turn me down," Darmon told his mother.

Darmon paused to let his mother process everything she has learned to date. "The choice is yours, mom. I take it grandma told you of the rules governing 'family love' and you probably had chats with everyone... Mom, the only advice I can give is to follow your heart. Just know that I love you and always will," Darmon simply stated.

Evelyn thought about it and wanted it but fear of Edward and how he would react was giving her pause. Evelyn sighed, "Honey, I want to but fear what your father will do."

Darmon took his mother's hands in his then lifted her head so that mother and son were looking directly into each other's eyes. "Mom, forget dad; his punishment is coming. Follow your heart since I know where my heart leads me," Darmon replied to his mother before bringing his lips to his mother's for a gentle kiss.

Evelyn melted into the kiss her son was giving her and pulled her son tighter into her embrace enough to let Darmon feel her hard nipples against his chest, even with all the clothing separating them. Truth be told, Evelyn was already horny from all the love that she had witnessed since arriving and learning how each of his women felt about him. Evelyn started to unbuckle her son's belt.

Darmon put his hands over hers to stop her and broke the kiss to look at his mother, "Mom, you need to be one hundred percent sure this is what you want. After I claim you then you'll be mine and I yours. There will not be any chance for regrets after this."

Evelyn paused before answering her son, "Honey, I've not been surer of anything else. I know what it means to be claimed by you and accept it with all my heart."

Darmon tried one last thing to see how committed his mother was, "Mom, when we go back to rescue Sandy and as part of the punishment for dad, I will be making love to you in front of dad. Heck, I will be showing dad how to truly love a woman and show him how I've taken his mother and sisters away from him. I will also show him that his wife and daughters are mine, now. This will get him angry. I will show him how I felt when he took everything from me and hope he learns a painful lesson."

Evelyn was shocked at what her son was planning but put her hand up to gently cup his left cheek with her right hand, "Not going to lie and say what you have planned isn't a little scary, but this doesn't change how I feel." Darmon shrugged his shoulders in defeat; at least he tried.

Evelyn returned to removing her son's pants and boxers. Evelyn gasped when her son's cock became visible, "Fuck me, I knew you were big when I felt your hard bump grinding against my pussy in the car, but never would I have expected this glorious cock. You're double, if not more, than the size of your father. How the fuck do your sisters take this monster in them?"

Darmon laughed, "Thanks, mom. I'm sure you will find out shortly yourself."

Then Darmon took on a serious tone of voice, "It just pisses me off that my sisters didn't have their hymens due to dad. At least I didn't have to see them suffer when I made them women. Still not being able to have any of my own girlfriend's virginities has me even more pissed at dad."

Evelyn with a look of concern kissed her son hard with every ounce of passion she could muster before breaking the kiss and telling her son, "Honey, don't dwell on that. Just think of the good things in your life now. Your grandma, aunts and sisters are now yours and after today, so will I be."

Darmon put that resentment to the back of his mind and would use that against his father in due time. Just as his mother was undressing him, so did he to his mother. This was the first time mother and son were seeing each other totally naked. Evelyn was amazed at her son's body, especially his cock. Darmon in turn marvelled at his mother's hourglass figure. His mother had breasts that could easily fit into his hands, with dark pink medium sized areolas and hard nipples poking out a good half inch from each globe. Darmon scanned down further and saw that his mother was clean shaven.

Evelyn saw her son's look go down to her pussy and commented, "Your father forced me to always shave as he liked the look. I can change the look to suit my man now, if you want?"

Darmon shook his head, "No mom, it's not how I would like it but more of how you would like it. It's whatever makes you happy."

Evelyn at that point was overcome with so much emotion and knew that he wouldn't force her and would leave any choices up to her. Evelyn knew then, without a doubt, that she would become her son's woman and let him take everything she had to offer. All doubts left her and she now understood how his grandmother, aunts and even his sisters fell for him. The only answer that Evelyn gave to her son was to pounce on him and tackling him to his bed before French kissing him. Darmon was surprised but felt he must have said something that pleased his mother.

Evelyn got on top of her son and grabbed his cock in her hand. Darmon in turn used both hands on his mother's ass to squeeze and pull them apart. Darmon broke the kiss and laughed, "Mom, slow down. This is the beginning of our lives together."

Evelyn looked into her son's eyes and squeezed his cock harder which cause her son to moan, "Baby, I can't help it. I've been horny since you got me into the car, then seeing and hearing how each of your women love you." Evelyn then laughed, "Also seeing your grandmother riding you has me so hot for my own son. As your mother I will see you return to me, literally. I can already see you're a conscientious lover and care about how I feel. I love that about you, baby. I love you, Darmon."

Darmon held one of his mother's breasts in his hand and used the other hand to pull his mother's head down and whispered into her ear, "I love you too, mom. You have no idea how happy it makes me to know you would return my love."

Evelyn moved her head back to capture her son's lips with her and pushed her tongue deep into his mouth. Evelyn was too horny for foreplay and in fact everything leading up to this could have been called foreplay or at least that is what she told herself. Evelyn raised her hips up and used the hand that was holding her son's cock to position him at the entrance to her vagina before pushing down hard to impale herself on her son's huge cock.

Darmon moaned deep into his mother's mouth before his mother broke the kiss to yell out, "FUCKING HELL... *MOAN* WELCOME BACK, YOU'VE RETURNED TO WHERE YOU EXITED ME, MY HANDSOME SON!"

Back in the living room, June laughed out loud, "Our man has now claimed his mother." June then put her hand down into her panties to feel the cum that was leaking out of her that had been deposited not long ago by her grandson. Mary and Amber were equally horny from hearing their nephew claiming his own mother and soon dresses were hiked up and the gussets of their panties pushed to the side as each started to masturbate to the sounds of a mother and son making love.

Darmon's sisters each looked at each other, and each had big smiles on their faces before they too started to finger their pussies and pinch their nipples.

Back in the bedroom, Darmon had his hands on his mother's ass as she rode him hard. Evelyn was panting hard and screamed as an orgasm rocked her world. Darmon made love to his mother for a good 10 minutes as she rode him and made his mother cum twice more before he then took control. Darmon still inside his mother flipped her over so that she had her back and proceeded to make love to his mother in the missionary position.

Evelyn hadn't ever felt this much passion before. Never had she felt like she did now and even when she had a very active sex life with her husband it paled in comparison to how her son was fucking her, correction, how her son was making love to her. Evelyn pulled her legs up and wrapped them around her son's waist and then went back to French kissing her son. Evelyn screamed into her son's mouth as she climaxed two more time. Darmon broke the kiss and continued to make love to his mother, but said loudly enough, "Mom, I'm very close. To claim you as mine, I going to cum inside you."

Darmon looked into his mother's eyes for any signs that she didn't want this but found none. Instead, Evelyn dug her nails and teeth into her son's back and neck which pushed mother and son over the edge. Darmon fired volley after volley of his potent seed into his mother as he pushed hard against his mother's cervix. Evelyn lost it and pulled her teeth away from her son's neck before letting out a wail of a scream, "FUCK ME!"

Mother and son stayed locked together as they both recovered. After a few minutes, Darmon pulled his cock out and moved his mother onto her hand and knees on the bed before positioning his cock back at the entrance to his mother's pussy. "Baby, again? For your father this would be all over a long time ago."

Darmon slapped his mother's ass hard, "Mom, I don't want to hear about, or have you talk about dad as I am making love to you. I know I am better than dad, my sisters have already confirmed that. You're mine now, mom!"

Evelyn winced at the pain from the slap but then realized why her son did that. She knew now that she was her son's and who would want to hear about another man as that man is making love to his woman. "I'm sorry, baby."

Darmon didn't give her a reply and instead started deep hard thrusts into his mother with the loud sounds of flesh hitting flesh that could be heard throughout the villa.

The women in the living room were all panting heavily and each had cum at least twice so far.

Darmon made love to his mother for nearly 3 hours, he had cum inside his mother 3 times and made her cum so many times that both lost count. Mother and son, made love with Darmon behind his mother in a standing fuck, pushed against the wall, doggy style and missionary again. Evelyn rode her son again. Darmon even had his mother on her back with her feet either side of her head as he piled into his mother. Evelyn climaxed the hardest when her son did this as his cock would push hard against her cervix and the angle also ensured her g-spot was stimulated.

Mother and son, exhausted from their sexual intercourse eventually fell into a content sleep which also gave the women in the living room a chance to recover also. As it turned out mother and son missed lunch but were awakened by Marcy, Emily and Natasha. They didn't bother knocking on the door and just entered. The sisters saw their mother and brother locked into a tight embrace and smelt the heavy scent of sex in the room.

Marcy went over to her brother and turned his face up to kiss him hard with her tongue invading her brother's mouth. Darmon stirred awake and saw his sister kissing him and returned the kiss just as hard. Evelyn woke up when she felt movement on the bed and witnessed up close her son and daughter kissing. Marcy broke the kiss and smiled at her mother, "Welcome to 'family love', mom." Marcy then leaned over to kiss her mother hard using her tongue. After the kiss broke, Evelyn was panting hard. Marcy moved away and was soon replaced by Emily, who repeated the exact same thing as her sister did, even the same greeting. Natasha performed the exact same.

Darmon chuckled as he saw his mother with a flushed expression and then went to kiss his mother with a deep French kiss. Soon, Darmon rolled onto his mother and lined up his hard cock with her vagina and pushed in hard. Evelyn let out a loud scream and felt an orgasm rock her body. Darmon then started to make love to his mother again. Marcy pulled the covers off the mating couple, who happened to be her mother and brother, to watch.

It was Emily who eventually asked, "Little brother, as you make love to mom. Can your sisters play with each other?"

Darmon looked over at his sister as he continued to make love to his mother and nodded his head. Natasha then asked, "Oh, umm... Can I sit on mom's face?"

Darmon looked down at his mother to see if she wanted that. Evelyn knew that her son wasn't going to force her to do it and nodded her head, knowing that he left the choice up to her and she loved her son for it. Evelyn nodded her head. Darmon then looked over at Marcy and Emily who got into a sixty-nine position and then back at Natasha before nodding his head.

Natasha stripped off her shorts and panties and moved to straddle her mother's head. Evelyn saw her youngest daughter's pussy descend as she was panting and moaning from her son's hard deep thrusts into her body. Soon Evelyn's moans were muffled when her daughter started to grind her pussy on her mother's face. Natasha put her hands on her brother's shoulder to steady herself as she looked down to see her brother's cock ploughing into their mother's stretched pussy.

Evelyn started to lick and nibble on her daughter's pussy and for the first time since she had been forced to do lesbian things with her daughters was enjoying it. Maybe it was the fact that she or her daughters weren't being forced to perform lesbian acts or maybe it was the love she felt radiate in this bedroom. Natasha started to moan loudly and closed her eyes as the pleasure from her mother eating her pussy was driving her insane. The sensations going through Natasha's body were a lot different from anything else she had experienced before. Natasha understood that for the first time, she was able to truly love and be loved by her family.

Darmon moved his head forward to kiss his sister and he continued to drive his cock deep into his mother's pussy. Natasha suddenly opened her eyes and saw the love in her brother's eyes and accepted the deep French kiss. After a few moments of the kissing, Natasha felt an orgasm crash through her body and shuddered on top of her mother. Darmon loved the expression on his sister's face as she climaxed and vaguely heard both Marcy and Emily also orgasm.

Just then the door to the bedroom opened and June witnessed a mother and her children making love. "Really, I send you girls to go wake your mother and brother and you go and start an orgy without me or my daughters," June gasped.

Darmon chuckled, "Sorry, grandma. I think I might have started it when I mounted mom and my sisters probably got horny."

June laughed, "Oh don't be, darling. I expected something like this happening anyway."

June then watched as Natasha got off her mother's face and June went over to her daughter-in-law. "Darling, welcome to 'family love'. Your son has introduced a new rule and tradition; may I greet you in the family way?"

Evelyn looked over at her son and then back at her mother-in-law and nodded. June leaned down and French kissed her daughter-in-law. This set Evelyn off and a big orgasm shot from her pussy to her breasts and into the kiss. Evelyn's pussy clutched and released around her son's cock, which caused Darmon to push in hard and let his potent semen splash hard against his mother's cervix. Evelyn broke the kiss with her mother-in-law and let out a scream as her body shook and trembled.

Evelyn grabbed her son's head and pulled him into a deep French kiss as she felt her pussy milked her son's cock.

June and her granddaughters watched as Darmon and his mother were locked in an incestuous mating ritual. June had a smile from ear to ear and marvelled, once again, how one gentle young man has brought such joy back into this family.

June waited a few minutes for her grandson and daughter-in-law to recover before addressing her grandson, "Darling, dinner is ready. You probably don't have time to shower right now. You and your mother can spend some time after dinner to freshen up before spending it together. Use this evening and night to bond further with each other as I suspect you might be busy tomorrow. You have a lot of women that need your love."

Evelyn looked over at her mother-in-law and blushed. June and her granddaughters then left them to get up and to the dining room. After the others left the bedroom, Darmon slowly pulled out of his mother's clasp pussy with a pop and Evelyn suddenly felt her son's cum start to leak out of her pussy.

"My sweet darling baby, thank you for showing me what it really means for one person to love another. You should know that everything I have is yours. I love you!" Evelyn told her son with complete honesty.

"I love you too, mom," Darmon uttered before leaning down to tenderly kiss his mother. After that Darmon moved off his mother and got out of bed to put on his sleepwear. Evelyn got out of bed and rushed to the toilet to let her son's cum drop into the toilet bowl. Darmon heard his mother in the bathroom and decided to retrieve the ring for her and stash it in the pocket of his shorts.

When Evelyn returned from the bathroom and got changed, Darmon told his mother to go on ahead without him as he needed to quickly use the bathroom. Evelyn left the bedroom and headed towards the dining room.

The first thing, Evelyn noticed when she got to the dining room were the smiles of her sisters-in-law's, as each in turn, got up to deep French kiss her, which left Evelyn out of breath. "Fuck, how the hell am I going to live with all this love?" Evelyn muttered.

Everyone heard this and giggled. "Don't worry, sis, you'll live and most of the loving will be from Darmon. Welcome to the exclusive group, sis!" Mary replied.

Evelyn was swept away from all the love and emotions running through her and sat at the dining table next to her daughters. A few minutes later, Darmon entered the dining room and gets down on one knee as he reaches into his pocket for the ring case. All except Evelyn knew what was about to happen.

Darmon opened the case and presented the ring towards his mother, "Mom, you brought me into this world so that I can experience the joys that I am currently experiencing. While, our union, this evening, has already bonded us into an unbreakable bond, it has always been that way from my birth through to the present and I hope it will continue into the our future together. While this is not necessary for us to belong to each other, I hope that this will prove to you that my commitment to our life together. While I realize that we cannot legally marry, but I hope you will accept my proposal. Mom, will you marry me?"

Evelyn was stunned as she never expected this and got up from the table to rush into her son's arm and wept tears of joy as she screamed, "YES!"

Darmon took the ring out of the case and removed her current engagement and wedding rings before placing the new engagement ring on her ring finger.

Everyone clapped and cheered. June noticed that her daughters and granddaughters were all about to get up and decided to put a stop to it, "Girls, Mary and Amber. Let the newly formed couple enjoy themselves later. I will not allow the same to happen again after the last round of proposals. I do not want dinner to go to waste this time."

Everyone, groaned in disappointment but remained seated. When Darmon took his place at the head of the table, his mother moved to sit to his right. Dinner was eaten with giggles, laughter and general banter.

Edward did indeed cum as he watched Sandy naked. After recovering he went to his bedroom to shower and get ready himself.

Edward arrived at Sandy's bedroom door at exactly 7:25pm and once again tried the door handle. Edward sighed heavily when he found it locked again, so knocked on the door. Sandy went to the door and opened it to let Edward in and then went to sit on the couch to put on her stiletto shoes.

"You ready, honey?" Edward asked as he admired his soon to be conquests nylon clad feet. "You're going to love this restaurant and far fancier than the dives Darmon might take you to," Edward continued as he sat on the bed trying hard to look up Sandy's dress.

Failing to see the panties he knew she had selected for this evening, Edward got up as Sandy also got up from the couch. Edward held out his hand and Sandy reluctantly accepted it. Edward leaned down as he raised her hand to kiss the back of her hand. "You look heavenly divine this evening, honey. I hope you've brought your appetite as I'm told their juicy thick sausage is one of the main specialty dishes," Edward said with a leering look at Sandy.

Sandy was sickened by Edward but had to play the part and giggled like a schoolgirl to accept the compliment.

Edward didn't want to seduce the girl and instead wanted to just take her, even if it meant raping her but decided against that as he wanted Darmon to catch him balls deep in yet another of his girlfriends and wanted to mock, humiliate and debase his fuck wit of a son. Edward knew the conquest would be all the sweeter if he proceeded to slowly seduce his son's soon to be ex-girlfriend. Edward laughed at this and knew Sandy would leave Darmon for him and his large cock and he will continue to have her unlike Darmon's other girlfriends. Edward had a smirk on his face as he knew his harem would grow and get them to please him, doing lesbian acts.

Edward continued to hold her hand as they went to his fancy car to drive to the restaurant. When they arrived at the restaurant the hostess took them to a semi-private table. Edward had a shit eating grin as other's watched his gorgeous date who had linked her arm through his as they were led to their table.

Sandy and Edward got seated at the table and ordered an expensive wine bottle for the table. "Did you see everyone look at you, honey? You've captivated everyone here, both male and female, me included. I'm glad you accepted this invite," Edward told Sandy with a leering smile.

"No, it is I that should be thanking you for showing me something that I wanted, I mean... I did tell my boyfriend that I wanted to see the sights, so thanks for that," Sandy responded with a radiant smile.

Dinner was excellent and Sandy enjoyed it a lot. Between them they had drank two bottles of the expensive wine and had chatted about various topics, from how she and Darmon meet, plans for the future, and what Sandy expected from this visit to this city. Edward suggested a few places that he could take her since her boyfriend wasn't available to take her.

Sandy accepted the invite. Edward laughed knowing he was breaking down Sandy's barriers and knowing soon he will be 'cucking' his slow idiot son, "Excellent, it's another date then."

Sandy had a confused look on her face but accepted that this was just another way to a means and smiled at Edward before replying, "Yes!"

Sandy was a little scared getting in the car to return to the house on account of Edward drinking, but somehow, he managed to get them home safely. Edward even got out to go around the passenger door to let Sandy out, although he had an ulterior motive doing so, as he knew that Sandy would have to step out one foot at a time which would give him a good look up her dress at her panty covered pussy. Edward wasn't disappointed this time and could just make out the camel toe which caused his pants to tighten in the crotch area.

Sandy just smiled at Edward and accepted his hand, "Thank you!"

Edward led them both inside and before Sandy left to go to her room asked, "Sandy, it's still early. How about watching a movie with me in the living room?"

Sandy paused to consider the request before answering, "Yes, that would be wonderful. I'll just go freshen up and change. Meet back in the living room in 30 minutes?"

"Yes, that would perfect. I'll go get changed also," Edward smiled at Sandy, hoping that he could continue the seduction and with a bit of luck be balls deep inside her and she would be sharing his bed going forward.

Sandy went off to her bedroom and Edward back to his study to spy on Sandy more.

Sandy after entering the bedroom and once again locked the door before undressing. Edward was in his study watching Sandy undressing with his cock out and his hand running up and down the length.

Just as Sandy stripped naked and was going to the closet to get her nightwear out her phone rang, which was placed on the bed as she undressed. Still naked, she went to answer the phone. Edward put up the volume of the live stream but was disappointed in only hearing Sandy's side of the conversation.

"Hello," Sandy answered before pausing to listen to the person on the other end of the call.

"Hi Darmon. Yes, everything is okay. Your father invited me to dinner, and we had a great time," Sandy answered before pausing again to listen to Darmon on the other end.

"Yes, pity you couldn't make it the food and wine were amazing," Sandy continued. Edward watched as Sandy said this whilst putting her hand down to scratch her pussy. Edward concluded that he was on the right track and Sandy was playing with her pussy recounting dinner, wine and stimulating conversation.

"Wow, really. That was a lot faster than I expected. I can't wait to have you back here," Sandy responded to something Darmon had just confirmed.

"Yes, your father has agreed to take me sightseeing over the next couple of days. I suspect the day after tomorrow," Sandy answered a question from Darmon.

"Sure, no worries. I'm going to watch a movie with your father this evening. Bye, Darmon, I hope to see you soon," Sandy concluded before ending the call. Sandy realized after the call that she only had a couple of days to keep Edward at bay and then allow something to happen, so that Darmon could get back, to hopefully prevent her having to have sex with this vile man.

Edward continued to watch as Sandy dressed into her nightwear and then go to the bathroom. Edward really wanted to carry on spying on Sandy, especially, with her using the toilet but knew he had to get ready quickly and be ready for her in the living room.

Sandy freshened up and then left the bedroom before heading to the living room. As she entered the living room, she spotted Edward already there dressing in a vest and boxer type shorts which clearly showed the outline of his cock. Sandy estimated he had a smallish cock and quickly lifted her head to look at Edward. Sandy spotted another bottle of wine and two glasses sitting on the coffee table before a three-seat couch.

Edward smiled at Sandy as she walked in and sat next to Edward on the couch but keeping a respectful distance. "I thought as we watch the movie, we could continue enjoying ourselves with this lovely wine," Edward said to disarm Sandy.

Sandy smiled and nodded her head. Edward poured two full glasses of wine and handed one to Sandy. As Edward passed the glass over his hand caressed Sandy's which put Sandy on alert knowing

full well that Edward was trying to seduce her and probably trying to get her drunk. "Thank you." Sandy smiled in acceptance of the glass.

"What are we watching?" Sandy asked.

Edward chuckled, "I picked out a reasonably reviewed romantic comedy which I think you would like, but if that doesn't suit you then you can pick whatever you like."

Edward knew that this was actually an erotic romantic movie with some of the scenes in this movie semi-erotic and was hoping this with the wine would loosen Sandy up. "No, I'm sure your choice would be wonderful," Sandy replied.

What followed was Edward would continue to top-up Sandy's wine glass and watch her as the erotic scenes played out on the large television. Sandy was indeed feeling the wine and had to admit that the sex scenes were having an effect on her.

Edward thinking now was his chance, waited for another erotic scene before scooting up to Sandy, who had a flushed face. Edward grabbed her head with one hand and moved Sandy's head towards him and went to kiss her. Sandy panicked and pushed Edward away before getting up and running to her bedroom.

"Fuck!" Edward sighed loudly. Edward knew this could happen and was gutted with himself knowing she wasn't drunk enough or horny enough watching the scenes of the movie. Edward got up turned the TV off and went to his study to load the live video feeds of her bedroom.

In the bedroom, Sandy was in a panic. She knew that she had a mission to do and she could have led him on if she allowed this but knew without a doubt that Edward wouldn't have just been happy with a kiss or some fondling, he would want to fuck her, and she wasn't or didn't want to do that. Still Sandy was horny and made sure the door to the bedroom was locked before laying down on the bed and soon one hand was fondling her breasts and the other was jammed into her shorts. Sandy was getting into the rubbing her pussy and started to moan but knew she couldn't be too loud for fear Edward would hear her. For reasons unknown to her Darmon flashed into her mind as she was fantasizing about him touching and kissing her.

Edward was jerking his cock watching Sandy masturbate. "Yeah, you bitch I knew you were horny. You weren't ready to cross the line today, but soon I'll make you forget Darmon and crave my cock only," Edward was panting. Edward timed his strokes to Sandy's hand rubbing and fingering her pussy and shot his weak load over his hand as he watched Sandy buck up off the bed and shudder.

Sandy and Edward both slept peacefully after that. Sandy to dreams of Darmon having his way with her and Edward to the look on his son's face as he was balls deep in yet another of his girlfriend's.

After dinner, everyone greeting the mother and son couple as equal members of 'family love' with lots of kissing and gentle horsing around, especially, from Evelyn's daughters.

"Uhhh, mom. Do I get my son tonight? I've already spent all afternoon with him," Evelyn asked.

June chuckled, "Darling, if you've had enough of our man then I am sure there are lots of others that would love to spend the night with him, me included."

Evelyn was once again shocked that Darmon had successfully seduced his grandmother as per her request or maybe it was June who seduced her son. Still, it didn't matter to her either way. "Mom, no way. I was just making sure that this wasn't going to cause any conflicts," Evelyn confessed.

June looked over at her daughters and granddaughters and could clearly see the lust and passion in their faces, "Darling, do you see the expressions and looks each of our daughters are giving Darmon? They love him and want to be with him, but they also know that it's your time this night. Enjoy your one-on-one time with your son. Enjoy his love. Your life as you knew it is over and forever more will you be your son's woman. Expect a fight tomorrow for his attention, from our daughters and even me. I know you saw him make love to me earlier. When at home, since we are all his women, you may witness any of us making love to him. Especially, your daughters who are all trying to get pregnant."

Evelyn looked shocked again which caused June to chuckle again, "Darling, he's already impregnated his aunts and it's only a matter of time before he gets his sisters pregnant. If you're not taking any form of birth control, then I suspect by this time tomorrow you might also get pregnant with the amount of seed he deposits inside us."

"No mom, Edward had a vasectomy so I've no need for protection and I very much doubt I could get Darmon to wear a rubber," Evelyn replied in a serious tone.

June took on a hard edge to her voice as she also responded, "Darling, OUR man will never wear a rubber. His seed should always be in us or on us and not in the tip of a latex thing."

Evelyn got scared at the tone June used and slowly nodded her head, "I understand mom."

As a group they watched a movie together with Darmon's sisters fighting to grab his cock and sit next to them. Natasha even managed to jump into his lap and pushed the crotch area of her short to the side to rub her pussy along her brother's cock. It was June that saw what was going on and decided to caution her granddaughter, "Natasha, sweetie. Refrain from taking your brother inside you. Your mom has priority over Darmon this night and his seed needs to be inside your mother and not you today. Be patient and if you ask him nicely tomorrow, you could get his seed then."

Natasha groaned in frustration but knew it was mom's time with her brother but did manage to rub her clit with her brother's glans until she climaxed loudly. Emily pushed her younger sister off and soon replaced herself in her brother's lap. Emily after rubbing the glans of her brother cock against her clitoris also had an orgasm. Emily also wailed out a loud moan. June, Mary and Amber all giggled as they watched Evelyn pay more attention to her son and daughter's action than on the movie they were watching.

Marcy saw her chance and pushed Emily off before sitting on her brother's lap. Marcy raised up and was ready to impale herself on her brother on account of how horny she was but changed her mind when she saw her grandmother shake her head and tell her outright, "Don't!"

Marcy sighed and proceeded to rub her pussy and clitoris over her brother's glans until she climaxed. Marcy screamed loudly and shuddered as the orgasm ripped through her body. Evelyn watched as each of her daughters climaxed over her son. Evelyn knew that their father had never managed to make them orgasm like that. Evelyn was horny beyond belief now and got up, pushed her daughter to the side and took off her shorts before taking her son deep into her body. Evelyn screams in delight as her son went balls deep into her. Darmon wasn't silent either and uttered loudly, "Fuck, mom!"

June, Mary and Amber couldn't contain it any longer and soon had their own hands down each of their nightwear shorts, caressing and playing with their own pussies.

Evelyn didn't wait long before she was riding her son. After about 10 strokes, she climaxed over her son's deeply embedded cock and shook as if she was having a fit. Never had she experienced this level of excitement, Edward had never managed to get her to cum this hard ever. Evelyn was facing her son and kissed him hard and deep as she continued to ride her son through her orgasm. Evelyn felt another orgasm start just as soon as the other ended. She was screaming out loudly and didn't care who heard her. Her son's cock caused her to orgasm again and Evelyn jammed her pussy down hard on her son's cock as she dug her nails into her son's hair as she French kissed her son.

After recovering from her orgasm, she got up and straddled her son with her back to him and took her son deep into her body, again. Evelyn was moaning and panting heavily as another orgasm built up inside her. June saw a chance to get in on the action and moved over to her grandson's head and said loudly enough so that her daughter-in-law could hear, "Darling, do I have your permission to ensure your both climax together?"

Darmon nodded his head and June smiled before getting down between a mother and son's legs. June put her head down to lick her grandson's cock as it entered his mother's vagina. This new sensation soon had mother and son near to orgasm. As soon as June captured her daughter-in-law's clitoris between her lips, sent Evelyn over the edge. Evelyn let out a banshee scream with her pussy clamping down hard on her son's cock which pushed him over the edge. Darmon fired jet after jet of his cum deep inside his mother with a loud wail himself.

It took mother and son well over 10 minutes to recover, but they did hear the other women all panting heavily from their own orgasms.

After catching her breath, Evelyn giggled, "Is it always like this?"

Amber laughed, "Yes, sis. This is just the beginning of what you can expect."

June got up after making herself climax and then took control again, "Girls, time for bed - go shower and get some sleep. I suspect it's going to be a busy day tomorrow." Marcy, Emily and Natasha grumbled but obeyed their grandmother.

June then addressed her daughters, "Mary and Amber, I'm sure you will get some time with Darmon tomorrow. For now, shower and bed. We will talk about something important tomorrow." Mary and Amber smiled and went off to their bedroom to lay in each other embrace as sleep claimed them.

June then turned towards the mother and son pair, "Darling, I hope you're okay with that just happened, Evelyn. Always seek permission from Darmon if you want to be intimate with someone else in 'family love'. For now, go to Darmon's room, shower and spend the night together."

Evelyn just nodded and accepted that what her mother-in-law did was to help her son claim her womb with his seed and knew without a doubt that she will soon have her son's baby growing in her belly.

Mother and son, left hand in hand. June tidied up a little and then went off to her own bedroom. June was so happy that her grandson had claimed every single female member of his household and

wondered who else Darmon was going to add later to 'family love'. June went to her bedroom knowing that sleep wouldn't come easy this night either.

Chapter 10

Mother and son entered Darmon's bedroom. "We should take a shower and get ready for bed," Darmon said.

Evelyn stripped naked, picked up her nightwear and placed them neatly folded on the couch. Darmon's eyes were on his mother's form as he also stripped naked. Evelyn had a smirk on her face as she watched her son get hard, "Baby, it pleases me to know that my old body can entice a young man."

Darmon chuckled, "Mom, you're one of the sexiest women I know. As for your age or you being old, have you really looked in the mirror, mom?"

Evelyn giggled, "I'm just teasing you, baby. I'm glad for your reactions to my body and for your love. I've always loved you as my son and now I love you as your woman, lover and fiancé. Let's brush our teeth and take a shower together."

Darmon and his mother were at the sink with Darmon behind his mother towering over her head and his hard cock resting on his mother's lower back above her ass cheeks. As the mother and son pair were brushing their teeth the movement was causing them to rub up against each other in delight. Soon both entered the shower, once the temperature was just right.

Evelyn took the washcloth, applied shower gel and proceeded to wash her son's back. Evelyn was humming in pleasure of being intimate with another without the need to have sex. Evelyn recalled that if this had been Edward in the shower with her then she would have already been forced onto her knees with a cock shoved down her throat. Evelyn chuckled to herself and knew the night was still young and she would probably have a cock down her throat.

After Evelyn washed her son's back, she gently turned her son around and washed his front but for now avoiding her son's cock. When it was Evelyn's turn to get washed, Darmon lathered the washcloth and washed his mother back. Darmon leaned down to kiss his mother's neck and proceeded to give his mother a hickey on the other side of her neck. Evelyn was moaning in pleasure. After washing his mother's back, Darmon turned his mother to face him and washed his mother's front as he leaned down to tenderly kiss her.

Evelyn was moaning in pleasure and reached out to grasp her son's cock but was stopped by Darmon. Evelyn was confused and thought she had done something wrong. "Mom, I'm sorry to stop you but I feel we should talk a little before taking this to the bedroom," Darmon answered his mother's confusion in a very serious tone.

"About what, baby?" Evelyn inquired.

Darmon moved back from his mother to stop any temptation on his part before replying, "First let me apologize for taking so long to come rescue you. Also tell me what dad has done since I left."

Evelyn moved forward and placed her hand onto her son's cheek and looked up at him before responding, "Darmon, it doesn't matter about the delay; the fact that you came back to fulfil your promise is all that matters."

Darmon visibly relaxed and then continued to ask, "Mom, if I ask some questions would you be totally honest with me even if you think your responses might hurt me?"

Evelyn paused for a few seconds whilst looking into her son's eyes and simply nodded and sighed, "Yes, baby. I will, even though I would very much like to save you from any anguish."

"Mom, know that anything you tell me will not detract from how you make me feel. I just need to understand dad's mindset and try to figure out what made him do what he did," Darmon responded. Evelyn continued to hold her son's cheek and look directly into his eyes.

"Mom, did dad abuse you or made you do things before he corrupted my sisters?" Darmon asked.

Evelyn pondered the question, "Yes, I think your father was bored with our sex life and would try to force me to do things that would get him excited. I know the next question is what, so I will answer that also, even if it is embarrassing and degrading to me. Your father got bored with regular sex, even anal when I gave that up to him. He would start to make me wear a butt plug from dawn to dusk and the size got bigger over time. He then started to fuck my ass with larger items, from dildos to fruit and veg."

Evelyn then got quiet before responding, "After that he would insist we take a shower together, where he found a new fetish for wanting to urinate on me, covering my body from head to toe in his

pee. When he got bored with that, he wanted to defecate on me. I put my foot down on that and suffered my first beating from him."

Evelyn watched as her son's face screwed up in anger, she wasn't sure if it was due to his father wanting to defecate on her or for the fact she got beat up when she refused. Evelyn moved her hands to hold her son's as she continued, "You recall, I had already told you about him peeing on me. When I continued to refuse him defecating on me, he then turned to forcefully fucking my ass with a view to coating his cock in my excrement and then would pull my hair hard so that as I screamed, he would push his cock into my mouth and force me to lick him clean."

"After that he forced me to seduce Marcy and then blackmailed her to doing his bidding. All sexual acts that he would perform on me would be subjected to Marcy and this includes urinating and making us lick his cock clean after being in our bowels," Evelyn continued.

"Emily and then Natasha were forced in the same way. Your father would delight in making me and your sisters do lesbian acts for him. At first, we refused and got beat for refusing before blackmailing us again by telling us he would have you disowned and killed. I and your sisters love you, even before we became your women and didn't want you to suffer. This of course caused a strain on your sibling relationship," Evelyn sighed recalling the history.

Darmon was getting angrier and Evelyn pulled her son into her embrace before continuing, "Your father does hate you and wanted everything you had. He got us to corrupt your girlfriends and took everything from them that should have been yours. We were powerless to stop it and could only look on in pity as each time it happened you became single again. What pissed me off the most was that every time this happened, your father would gloat and fuck me and your sisters hard and debase you as being, and I quote, 'a big fucking cuckold'."

Darmon moved his hand out of his mother's hands and clenched his fists. Evelyn sighed heavily and tried to sooth her son, "Honey, you asked me to be honest and I am, even knowing how this was going to affect you. I knew this would hurt you and for that I'm sorry."

Darmon with some will power that he didn't know he had, relaxed his clenched fists and tried to put on a calm expression before telling his mother, "Thank you, mom. You're not at fault here; dad has a lot to answer for. What happened after my sisters left to come here?"

Evelyn kissed her son on the lips to try and calm her son before continuing, "The first few days were okay, and your father continued to do those things I mentioned before. Only this time it was just to me, and I was happy that your sisters were spared that. A few days passed and Edward was getting antsy, so tried to force me to call your ex-girlfriends, so that he can fuck them if he didn't have access

to your sisters. They all refused even if offered a lot of money. This always resulted in your father being more forceful with me and he would get pretty rough with me during his sexual assaults."

Evelyn paused to see how her son was taking this revelation before continuing, "The week before you came home unexpectedly, your father was trying to force me to call my friends over, so that I could seduce them for Edward to fuck. I continued to refuse and would always be on the other end of a beating. That was how you and Sandy saw me that day. He even said that I could swing with my friends' husbands if it meant he could fuck my friends. I continued to refuse until you and Sandy came along to get me away."

"Baby, promise me that you would go rescue Sandy. She is a good girl and doesn't deserve whatever Edward has planned for her," Evelyn pleaded to her son.

"I promise mom, we all will venture the day after tomorrow. During a toilet break this evening I called her and told her how things were progressing here and that we will be there for her in a couple of days. Anyway, all the pieces are in place now for dad's punishment," Darmon promised.

"Mom, can I ask one other question and then I will stop?" Darmon asked.

Evelyn looked into her son's eyes and nodded. "Did you fuck or were made to fuck anyone else?" Darmon asked and dreading to know the answer.

Evelyn paused a few seconds before answering, "Honey, he forced me to fuck my daughters, your sisters and your girlfriends. If you mean did Edward, make me fuck another man, then I can tell you that I always refused although he wanted to see me with another man. Trust me honey, I've never taken another man into me other than you since being married to your father."

Darmon's shoulders suddenly slumped in relief. Evelyn saw this and knew he feared that someone else had defiled his mother and woman, "Baby, I'm yours now and you don't have to be wary of another taking what is yours. I will never go back to your father and will always be at your side in whatever capacity you need, I could be the nurturing mother when you require it, lover when you need my company, your wife who will always be at your side or the mother of our children."

Darmon leaned down overcome with emotions and kissed his mother deeply with all his strength and support. Mother and son then decided to make out in the shower. Neither wanted to make love in the shower, so both got out, dried and walked naked hand in hand to Darmon's bed.

After both were under the covers, Evelyn scooted up close to her son's side and nestled her head against his chest, "Honey, I didn't want to tell you that and wanted to spare you the pain of knowing. I was content in knowing I am yours and you mine going forward. Trust me, I love you and am yours totally."

Darmon turned to look at his mother, tilted her head up and told his mother how he felt, "Mom, I love you too and knowing you have accepted my love and the love of those in 'family love' has taken a big weight off my heart."

"Mom, it was a heavy talk we just had and if you're not feeling the need to continue then I understand. Just remember at least for this night you have exclusive access to me. Can I make a selfish request?" Darmon said.

"Baby, for this relationship to work then we both need to compromise sometimes, so ask away," Evelyn replied.

Darmon took a long deep breath before asking, "Mom, can I ask you not to go on any birth control? I want to get you pregnant with our child."

Evelyn laughed, this confused and made Darmon angry thinking she thought this was an unacceptable request. "Baby, is that all? I never intended to go on any form of birth control. You've already made your aunts pregnant, and your sisters want to get pregnant with your children, so why would I want to be any different from them? Some may say, I already have 4 beautiful children, but I've always wanted more. It was your father that didn't want anymore. So, to answer your question properly, 'honey I want to have your children'," Evelyn finally gave her son the answer to his question.

Darmon relaxed and turned to face his mother, "Mom, thank you. Would you like us to make love? I know this afternoon we only had vaginal sex, and I would love for some oral with you and if you're willing, maybe, some anal. I know dad was always wanting anal with you, so I'm asking that with some reservations as it's possible you don't like that."

Evelyn chuckled, "Honey, with you I already told you that all of me is yours. Have you asked your sisters, grandmother and aunts about that and what did they say?"

"Well, it was grandma that taught me about anal sex, and I have had anal sex with her a number of times now. I've not done that with my aunts yet, but I doubt they would object. As for my sisters, Marcy teased Emily with my cock at her rosebud and Emily confirmed I could have that after she gets

pregnant. Marcy and Natasha haven't expressed a desire, but that might be on account of me not trying. I don't want to do anything to my sisters that they don't want," Darmon replied.

"Baby, talk to them. They may have some hang-ups due to Edward but if you're patient then I expect they will allow it," Evelyn responded.

Darmon laughed, "Yeah, communication is key for any relationship. I'll ask them when I think the time is right. For now, mom, you ready to get pregnant?"

Evelyn giggled, "Oh baby, yes I am and if you don't get me pregnant then we're going to have a lot of fun trying. Actually, even if you do get me pregnant then we will continue to make love, forever; that I can promise you."

Darmon didn't need to respond with words and instead leaned down to nibble his mother's earlobe and then trailing a wet tongue down her neck passed her collar bone to the centre of her chest above the valley her breasts were making. Evelyn was initially giggling at the feeling of her son's wet tongue this soon turned to a soft moan as her son gently dug his teeth into the flesh above her breasts. Darmon looked up into the eyes of his mother, "I seriously love you, mom." Evelyn let out a moan of pleasure hearing these words from her son.

Evelyn moans turned into gasps as her son used his wet tongue to circle each of her globes, avoiding the nipples but made sure to lick and nibble the underside of each breast. Darmon moved in-between his mother's legs as he moved to capture her left nipple into his mouth. Evelyn moaned loudly and wrapped her legs around her son's back and pulled him up to kiss her with a deep wet French kiss. The kiss went on for several minutes and after the mother and son couple separated, Evelyn looked into the eyes of her son and said with total conviction, "Baby, I so fucking love you. Will you please lick my pussy?"

Darmon held his mother's left cheek and then chuckled, "If you hadn't stopped me with that kiss, I would be feasting on you right now, mom."

Evelyn sighed heavily and knew this was true, but her emotions needed to be let out and was overjoyed it was her son that was bring this out of her. Evelyn giggled as she pushed her son's head down and moaned in pleasure as Darmon managed to capture her right nipple on the way down to suck and gentle bite the nipple. Darmon then continued to trail his wet tongue to her belly button as he dipped his tongue inside. Evelyn moaned loudly before grabbing her son's head again and pushed him down towards her pussy.

Darmon didn't want to disappoint his mother so gracefully allowed his mother to push his head down. Darmon nostrils flared at the heavenly scent of his mother's secretions and made him lightheaded with an overpowering urge to just dive in and eat his mother to several orgasms. Instead, he used a lot of willpower and what he had since learned from his grandmother, aunts and sisters in how to pleasure a woman. Darmon blew on his mother's pussy. Evelyn tried to grab her son's head again to push him into her pussy, but Darmon resisted and instead kissed, nibbled and licked either side of his mother's vagina.

When the panting, groans and moans of his mother caused her to shout out, "FUCK TEASING ME, BABY. FUCKING EAT MY PUSSY," Darmon dove in to swipe his tongue from the base of her pussy up to her clit. Evelyn climaxed harder from her son eating her pussy than she had with anyone else, which included her daughters and her son's ex-girlfriends. Evelyn raised her butt off the bed and shouted out, "FUCK I'M CUMMMIINNGG!" Evelyn shuddered and squirted on her son's face which was a first for her.

Darmon's other women all heard the shouts as mother and son were making love. Each had their own hands fingering their pussies. June was laughing as she played with herself knowing that Evelyn had totally fallen for her grandson and then corrected herself by telling her that all his family had total succumbed to him. June knew then that she would do anything for her grandson with a view to protect him and our 'family love'.

Darmon didn't let his mother recover and continued to eat his mother out and even went down to lick and push his tongue against her rosebud which caused Evelyn to shriek out as another orgasm ripped through her body. Evelyn wasn't sure if it was the taboo nature of things or that her son was just that good, but she had never felt as close to someone else as she did with her son right now.

After the third or fourth orgasm, Evelyn had to push her son's head away from her pussy and ass. Darmon chuckled at his mother's expression and the sheen of sweat covering her body. Darmon moved up to hold his mother in his embrace as she panted and moaned whilst trying to catch her breath.

It was a good 10 minutes before Evelyn eventually relaxed enough to stop twitching from her intense orgasms that seemed to crash into one another; just as one stopped another crested over the one that was just fading.

"Fuck me, baby. How the fuck did you do that? I've never felt anything like this ever," Evelyn asked.

Darmon kissed his mother on the forehead and just shrugged his shoulder as best he could whilst holding his mother, "I don't know, mom. Maybe grandma taught me too well or maybe it's a dream come true for me to have you in my arms, knowing that soon I will return to your body and be inside you again."

Evelyn didn't answer her son and instead moved her head up to tenderly kiss her son. "I hope you're not tapping out mom as I haven't put my seed into you to start our baby together," Darmon taunted with a chuckle.

Evelyn laughed at her son's taunt and then returned his taunt with a promise, "Baby, you may have exhausted me from eating my pussy, but that was only a battle. Don't expect to get any sleep tonight, darling. I intend to win this war!"

Darmon chuckled at his mother's word, "Bring it on then, mom!"

Evelyn didn't give her son any chance to object or lead the way forward; this wasn't because Darmon didn't want to but to see how his mother was going to bring him to his knees. Evelyn started by kissing her son tenderly and bit his lip before giving small pecks to the chin, neck and upper chest area. Evelyn then blew gently on each of her son's nipples, watching them get stiff before extending her tongue out to swipe at both of his nipples in turn. Darmon moaned when his mother took his left nipple between her teeth and pulled her head back, letting the nipple go when she thought it would cause her son a lot of pain.

Evelyn did this for a few minutes before laying quick pecks to her son's stomach until she reached her son's pubic mound, "Baby, I don't mind the hair you have around your cock and balls but would you one day allow me to shave you?"

Darmon chuckled as his mother was playing with his balls, "I don't mind, but I do have a question for you though. I've left the choice for you to keep your pussy bare or grow your hair back, so which will you choose?"

Evelyn looked up at her son to look into his eyes with a lot of love shining in her own eyes, "Baby, I know you won't force me and I would like to keep it bare, if you don't mind."

Evelyn watched as her son smiled and nodded before she pulled gently on his scrotum which brought a moan and wince from her son. Evelyn moved her head down and captured each testicle into her mouth and sucked on them hard. Evelyn then grabbed her son's legs and pushed them up so that balls were up higher. Darmon thought that his mother really wanted to go to town on his balls and prepared himself for it but gasped when his mother moved further down to lick and tease her son's anus.

"Fuck mom. What the heck are you doing?" Darmon gasped out.

Evelyn giggled, "Winning this battle and eventual war, baby."

Evelyn then took her son's shaft in her hand and moved her hand up and down her son's cock as she rimmed him and used her other hand to pull on her son's balls. Darmon had never experienced this type of sex before and wondered why his grandmother hadn't taught him this. Evelyn alternated between rimming her son and sucking on his balls all the while jerking her son. After a good 10 minutes of this torture, Evelyn sensed her son was close to an orgasm. She put a finger that was pulling on his balls into her mouth to wet it before moving up to capture her son's cock into her mouth and at the same time drove the finger she lubricated into her son's anus to massage his prostate.

Darmon let out a scream as his balls erupted and sent out his seed to flow into his mother's sucking mouth. Evelyn giggled to herself as she gulped down every single drop of her son's cum. When Darmon was drained, she lifted her head from her son's cock and giggled, "I saw that is one battle apiece, baby."

Darmon pulled his mother up and French kissed his mother. Darmon was initially hesitant knowing his own cum might still be in his mother's mouth but was overcome with emotions and decided to just do it. Evelyn was surprised at first but soon fully made out with her son and knew her son was the one person in her life she couldn't let go of.

Mother and son, rested for a bit and held each other and basked in each other's company. Evelyn let out a contented sigh which prompted Darmon to ask, "Mom, I suspect that you never expected us to be together like this but I'm glad it happened. I hope you're happy."

Evelyn looked up from her head resting on her son's shoulder and replied, "Baby, I've already been forced to fuck my daughters and adding you into the mix wasn't something I expected; especially knowing how Edward would've never allowed you close to me or your sisters. Let's just say that at least this time I wasn't made to do it for someone else's pleasure. I'm having sexual intercourse with my own son and don't have one speck of doubt whatsoever."

After resting a little more, both mother and son continued the sexual war. They made love, in various positions with Evelyn having multiple orgasms. Darmon came one more time with his cock pushed hard against his mother's womb as he fired his potent seed into her. Darmon had one last thing he could do that he hoped would tip the scale in his favour for this war and after ensuring his mother had orgasmed with his cock spurting his cum instead he pulled out and moved his mother onto all fours.

Darmon moved over to his bedside cabinet and opened the door to retrieve some lube. Evelyn was watching her son and saw the lube in his hand and thought to herself, 'Oh, God. My son is going to fuck my asshole.'

Before Darmon took his mother's ass he asked for permission, "Mom, I know dad would always fuck your ass and that of my sisters. Do I have your permission to make love to you anally?"

Evelyn simply replied, "Baby, I told you already that everything I have is yours. If you think this will make you win then let's see, shall we?"

Darmon opened the lube and let out a big dollop onto his finger and rubbed it around his mother's rosebud before pushing a finger in. Evelyn moaned as her son's finger entered her asshole. Darmon pulled out and coated two of his fingers with lube before pushing them into his mother again. Darmon then moved his fingers apart to stretch his mother's anus. Evelyn continued to moan in pain mixed in with pleasure.

Evelyn had always hated Edward taking her ass but somehow relished the thought of giving this up to her son, willing. Darmon removed his fingers and used more lube to coat his cock before lining up with his mother's asshole, "Mom, this is the last chance you have to stop this; after I entered you here then you will officially be my 3-hole wife as well as my own biological mother."

Evelyn didn't reply but pushed her ass back to take her son's glans into her asshole. Both mother and son moaned at the same time before Evelyn commanded her son, "Baby, fuck mommy's ass. I want you to fuck me hard!"

Darmon plunged in deep, to the root of his cock and Evelyn let out a scream of pain and pleasure at the same time, "FUCK ME, BABY. YOUR COCK IS THE BIGGEST THING I'VE HAD IN MY ASS. POUND THE SHIT OUT OF ME, DARLING!"

As Darmon pulled out so that only his glans remained inside his mother, he thrust forward again hard with the loud sound of flesh bouncing off flesh and the wails of a mother enjoying getting fucked hard. Darmon was making love to his mother anally. Mary and Amber were busy French kissing each other and had their hands inside their own pussies listening to mother and son making sweet love. June couldn't take any more of this and decided to get up and see if one of her granddaughters wanted some company. June tried Marcy's bedroom first and found all the sister in their eldest sister's bedroom room. The sibling sisters were each kissing each other with tongues out in a three-way kiss.

June chuckled to herself as she watched her granddaughters playing whilst listening to their mother and brother making love. Marcy looked up and saw her grandmother and used a finger with the come-hither signal. Soon, the females all paired up, with Marcy and June locked into a deep French kiss and Emily with Natasha doing the same. Each had their own hands deep inside their own pussies.

Back in the bedroom, Evelyn screamed as she had an anal orgasm as her son continued to pound her hard. Evelyn's asshole clenched hard on her son's shaft and prevented him from moving in and out. The milking of Evelyn's ass along her son's shaft caused Darmon to explode. As Evelyn felt the bursts of cum coat her bowels, she climaxed again with a shriek that could wake up the dead and fell flat on the bed with her son still deeply embedded in her ass.

It took well over 15 minutes for both mother and son to calm down and catch their breath. Instead of being on top of his mother, Darmon had moved to his side with his mother becoming the little spoon whilst staying deeply embedded in her ass. After both recovered, Darmon was the one that broke the silence, "So mom, who actually won the war?"

Evelyn laughed causing her son's cock to dislodge from her asshole to slurping sounds as Darmon's cum leaked out of his mother. "Let's call this one a draw, baby. The war is an ongoing thing," Evelyn replied with some embarrassment as her son's cum exited both her pussy and ass.

Darmon chuckled, "I can live with that. Let's go take another quick shower to clean up. If I'm going to make love to you again later tonight or in the morning, then I want my cock clean for you, mom."

Mother and son then went to take another shower with them only making out. Once clean and dried, Evelyn cuddled up to her son and fell into a very contented sleep. June and her granddaughters did eventually go back to their own bedrooms once they knew mother and son were done for the night. Sleep came to all and instead of an alarm clock to wake everyone, the loud sounds of a couple making love achieved the same results. June recalled how much she had missed this; actually, she had to correct herself, this was way beyond what she had experienced with her husband and daughters. June knew this was what true 'family love' should be.

Sandy got up early the next morning after dreams of Darmon had her fingering her pussy twice more that night. Sandy was cursing her luck and her cheating ex-boyfriend as she had to admit to herself that she might be falling for Darmon despite his current loving relationships. Sandy, when she first learned of 'family love' was confused as each of his women were his flesh and blood. When she learned that he managed to claim his mother in the telephone call yesterday, she was amazed at how his grandmother, aunts, sisters and now his own mother are his women.

Sandy wore a robe over her nightwear and went off to the kitchen to see what she could make for breakfast. Sandy opened the fridge and saw eggs and bacon and got them out to place on the counter. Sandy then opened various cabinet doors to find a pan and cooking oil. She used her phone to play some music and was singing along with the songs as she started to cooking breakfast. Sandy decided to make some for Edward, despite her having to fend off his advances and hoping that she didn't blow this mission.

The smell of eggs and bacon cooking roused Edward from his slumber and in his fogged mind thought it was his wife getting breakfast ready. Edward decided to just venture in his boxer shorts and vest to the kitchen. As Edward entered the kitchen, he was scratching his balls over his boxer and was surprised to Sandy in a robe cooking. Sandy had looked up when Edward entered and notice where his hand had been.

"Good morning," Sandy said.

Edward remembered the night before and decided to try and play it cool, "Yes, good morning, sweetheart! I hope you had a wonderful evening and night's sleep." Edward recalled the live stream yesterday and knew he had a good evening and pleasant dreams of how he was going to fuck his stupid son's ex-girlfriend.

Sandy cringed inwardly when Edward called her 'sweetheart' but put a smile on her face and she answered, "Yes, it was very nice. I spoke to my boyfriend yesterday and then had such pleasant dreams about him last night." Edward was a little disappointed that she wasn't thinking of him as she fingered her pussy yesterday evening.

Sandy looked over at Edward and smiled, "Please go wash your hands and then take a seat at the table' breakfast is about done."

"Yes, darling," Edward responded with a chuckle. Edward really hoped she wasn't going to be just like his wife after he claimed her; always nagging to do this or that. Edward then chuckled to himself on how he was going to break Sandy as he had done to Evelyn and his daughters. Edward did go to the kitchen sink to wash his hands and brushed past Sandy on the way.

Once they were both seated, with eggs and bacon on plates in front of them, it was Edward that broke the silence, "Sandy, listen. I had a little too much to drink last night and things got a little out of hand."

Sandy noted what Edward just said lacked an apology but decided to answer anyway, "Yeah, you just surprised me. Darmon is my boyfriend and with both of our partners away I understand that things, just happened. Please note that I am Darmon's girlfriend and not yours."

Edward smiled as he knew the conquest of Sandy was going to go his way and she will be his girlfriend with Darmon witness to his cock deep inside her fertile pussy. "Listen, how about when we go out later to sight see I give you \$1000 as spending money, just don't tell my wife or Darmon about it and what happened."

Sandy still didn't hear any apology and paused to ponder this; she knew that Edward was going to try to bribe her to have sex and had to play her part. "Oh, you don't need to but extra spending money for a college student is welcome, even if it is a bribe to keep me silent," Sandy answered with a smile.

Edward knew then she could be bribed and wondered how much she wants to part her legs for him. They both ate in silence after that, and after they finished Edward excused himself. Sandy sighed and put the empty plate and pans into the dishwasher before returning to her room to shower before getting ready.

After the new traditional greetings where everyone kissed everyone. June motioned for the girls to move to the living room as she asked her grandson to go shower and get ready for the day as she planned a trip to the mall to celebrate a new member to 'family love'. Darmon wasn't stupid and knew the women wanted to chat, probably about yesterday and getting all the details from his mother about the sexual encounter. Darmon went off to shower and get ready.

In the living room, June opened the conversation, "Evelyn, darling, one of the stops will be to get your ring engraved as we all have ours. Also, I wanted to gift our man with something also and was thinking of a titanium locket or small book type locket with each of our names engraved in it."

Evelyn smiled at her mother-in-law, "Really, how are the rings engraved, and I think that is a wonderful idea, mom."

Mary was the one that responded, "The inside of each ring is engraved with Darmon's name with a plus and then our own name. Either side of the sapphires on the ring is the letters F and L."

Emily then piped in, "Mom, F and L for 'family love', but to everyone else it is 'forever love'."

Evelyn was stunned at how detailed this was and it made each ring unique, "Who's idea was that?"

Marcy sighed, Amber chuckled and it was Natasha that answered her mother, "Really mom. Do you even have to ask? Our brother, your son thought of it and I kind of like it."

Evelyn laughed, "Yeah, sorry, honey that was a stupid question."

June then looked over at her family and knew each of them including herself would jump at this, "So that we can buy the gift for Darmon, I need a volunteer to keep him distracted." To say this caused an uproar would be an understatement as everyone, including Evelyn volunteered. In the end after a heated discussion, it was decided it would be Marcy.

June then took command again and decided to push everyone forward, "With that decided, all go shower and get ready. We leave in 1 hour."

Everyone went off to shower and get ready. As Evelyn walked away, she was walking a little stiff with legs spread apart slightly. It was Natasha that had to ask, "Mom, why are you walking funny?"

It was Evelyn's turn to chuckle before responding, "Now who is asking a stupid question. Your brother is a fault to both our stupid questions." Amber burst into laughter as she heard this exchange.

Just over an hour later, two cars were heading off to the mall.

Edward was again spying on Sandy in the bedroom and bathroom. Yesterday, he missed the chance to watch her on the toilet and didn't want to miss this chance. Edward turned the volume up to hear Sandy's urine hit the side of the pan and splash into the water. Edward had his cock out and was jerking himself off to a fetish he had since he blackmailed his family; while he didn't like to get pissed on, he like to watch his wife and daughters piss and on more than one occasion watched as Darmon's girlfriends would do that same. Edward's fetish was to see each of his women being degraded as he would pee on them.

Edward watched as Sandy used a bunched-up wad of toilet paper to dry her pussy before dropping the paper into the bowl. Sandy then opened her legs wide to examine her pussy to check for any stubble; Edward groaned loudly as he shot his weak load over his hand. Sandy then got up flushed the toilet and washed her hands before getting completely naked and entering the shower.

40 minutes later, Sandy was applying her make-up. Edward after his orgasm left to go clean up and get ready himself knowing that Sandy wouldn't be showing anything new. Another 15 minutes later there was another attempt at opening the door which caused Sandy to jump before a knock could be heard. Sandy got up and went to door to open it.

"You ready, sweetheart?" Edward asked. Sandy smiled at him but inwardly dreaded how she was going to fend off his advances today. Sandy knew that she had to give in a little to keep Edward fixated on the prize; her!

"Yes, nearly done. Come in and wait, I shouldn't be more than 5 minutes," Sandy responded.

Sandy returned to putting on her make-up whilst Edward sat on the couch watching her. Sandy was a little uncomfortable but didn't let it show. Sandy watched in the mirror as Edward would stick out his tongue and lick his lips. Edward was unconsciously doing this whilst deep in thought of how tasty she would be after he broke down her defences.

Sandy was dressed in casual clothing, more for comfort than style and Edward decided to impress his date by dressing in a smart dress suit without a tie. Edward held out his hand and helped Sandy up then moved closer to her as they left the house.

Edward started off by showing her some of the landmarks in the city and held her hand as they ventured into a museum and then they went off to the designer shopping mall, so that Sandy could spend her bribe money.

Darmon and his women all arrived at the shopping mall and the first thing they did was head off to the jewellery store to get Evelyn's ring engraved. Susan spotted Darmon and his women and went over to him immediately, "Good morning, Darmon. How can I be of service today?"

Before Darmon could reply, June spoke, "Susan, this is Evelyn and she would like to get her ring engraved as per ours."

June then turned to her grandson, "Darling, why don't you look around and see if something catches your fancy or better yet take Marcy with you and pamper her a little." Marcy knew this was her cue for her to take her brother away so that a gift could be brought for her man, her soulmate, her brother.

Marcy linked her arm through her brothers and lead him out of the store with a giggle, "You heard her, you need to pamper me."

June waited for Darmon and Marcy to leave and out of earshot, before returning her attention to Susan, "Honey, as well as engraving Evelyn's ring we would like to find a locket of some sort in the shape of a book that opens up. It needs to be made from titanium and will need to include all his women's names in it."

The male clerk who had previously lost out on a big bonus just watched as Susan was going to make another commission from another sale. Susan brought out some lockets that were various sizes and designs. All of Darmon's women, excluding Marcy, looked over each one and chose a design that they were all happy with.

As Susan took the details of Evelyn's ring engraving and then all the details of each woman's name, she commented jokingly, "Wow, how does Darmon satisfy each of you and how do I get in on the action?"

June looked at Susan and in a commanding voice asked, "Are you really being serious here?"

Susan had only asked in jest but saw a chance and took it in both hands as rejection wouldn't change anything, but the thought of being part of something grand was something she had to try. "Umm, yes!" Susan answered meekly.

June looked over at her family, and all she saw sure was uncertainty but with a hint of fun mixed in with their expressions. "Honey, if you are totally serious then can I ask you something?"

Susan nodded as June continued, "Are you currently in a relationship with anyone be it male or female?"

When Susan shook her head, June asked the next question, "You don't have to answer this but might go against you if you don't. Are you a virgin?"

Susan sputtered and coughed at the question and then looked into June's eyes to see that it was a serious question before responding in a very quiet voice, "Yes!"

June's next question made her legs feel like jelly, "Why?"

Susan took a deep breath before answering, "I might put on a show of being a bubbly outgoing woman but I'm really a shy woman and most don't pay attention to me thinking I'm already dating."

Evelyn asked the next question, "How old are you, honey?"

Susan answered, "26."

June then continued, "Darmon needs to know of your intent and each of his women have the power to veto as well as Darmon has the final say if all his women agree. There are somethings that could make you forgo your request and this could be discussed later, if Darmon and we all agree. In the meantime, for the engravings of our names in the locket, leave enough space to add a few more names, later."

Susan recovered and focused on the task at hand.

Edward took Sandy over to some expensive designer stores and Sandy was treated like a queen. As Sandy was trying on some new fancy dress in the changing room, one of the male clerks moved closer to Edward and made a comment, "It's so nice to see a father spoil his daughter."

This caused Edward to laugh loudly and then looked at the male clerk before telling him, "No that is not my daughter but my date and if spoiling her allows me to fuck her tonight then that is small price to pay."

The male clerk smirked and then said, "Ahhh, an escort. Maybe, pass me her number after you've finished with her. I would love to get a piece of that!"

Edward spun to face the clerk, "Listen here asshole. She is neither and hooker or a whore. I aim to claim her for myself and have her legs wrapped around me."

The male clerk muttered 'sorry' before quickly running away.

Sandy modelled the dress for Edward who gave her compliments and, in the end, the total cost of the items she liked was over \$3000. Sandy was shocked at the price and tried to leave them until Edward insisted that he would get all the items for her as gifts. Edward knew that the more she was indebted to him, would make it that much easier to eventually get into her panties.

After that with purchases in hand, they both went off to an expensive restaurant for lunch.

Marcy led her brother away from the jewellery store and decided on window shopping and just look at dresses, shoes and handbags. Darmon held Marcy's hand and was patient with his sister during this time. Brother and sister spent time together, laughing and enjoying themselves. 15 minutes later, Marcy needed to go to the bathroom, "Darmon, I need to use the ladies room. Come with me please."

Darmon followed his sister to the public toilets in the mall. Marcy purposely avoided the more congested toilets and picked one that was least used. "Please wait here for a moment," Marcy asked her brother. Darmon watched as Marcy entered the Ladies bathroom and thought should he use the gents even though he didn't need to yet. As Darmon was contemplating this Marcy returned and grabbed her brother's hand to drag him towards the bathroom.

Darmon was confused and always wondered how the Ladies toilets differed from the Gents and was sort of disappointed in that the only difference was the lack of urinals. Darmon did notice a faint pleasant smell, one that was a lot better than the gents. Marcy dragged her brother towards one of the middle stalls and pulled her brother in with her. She locked the door and turned around to lower the toilet seat before pushing her brother to sit down.

"Sis?" Darmon questioned Marcy who had a glazed look in her eyes.

"You heard what grandma said, you're to pamper me. I need my brother's cock in me. Do you have any idea how horny I've been listening to your make love to grandma, our aunts, our sisters and yesterday to mom. I can't wait any longer," Marcy confessed.

Darmon chuckled, "You know the rules, sis. You have only to ask me and I will service you. I hope you're ready to get impregnated." Marcy's only response was to forcefully pull her brother's head up before attacking him with her mouth. For the next several minutes all that could be heard was the slurping sounds of tongues duelling with saliva being swapped between the siblings.

As Marcy continued to kiss her little brother, she reached down to release her brother's belt and buttons to his khaki shorts. Darmon used his hands on the back of his sister's legs moving up to cup her pantie covered butt. Darmon squeezed each globe of his sister's ass which elicited moans from his her into his mouth. Marcy eventually managed to get her brother shorts undone and pushed her hand into his boxers to grasps his already hard cock. Marcy squeezed her brother's cock, and it was Darmon that moaned this time into his sister's mouth.

Marcy broke the kiss and fished out her brother's cock from his boxers before whispering into his ear, "Little brother, if we had more time and a place to relax I would let you eat my pussy as I sucked your cock. For now, let me be the greedy slut that I am to take you in my mouth."

Darmon used both hands to grasps his sisters head and made her look up towards him and uttered the words that made Marcy swoon, "Sis, you are neither a whore or a slut. To me you are a soulmate. I will not hear you debase yourself believing it will make me hornier. I am not our father to get off on things like that. I love and want you in your natural state as my wife to be and my partner."

Just then they heard two females enter the public Ladies toilets chatting about shopping and the dresses they both liked. Marcy got on her knees and put a finger to her lips to signal silence. Marcy brushed the hair from the side of her face to expose her mouth as it descended on her brother's cock. Darmon had to stifle a moan as Marcy took half of his cock deep into her mouth. Darmon did let out a moan as his sister used her tongue to poke the hole in his glans; this alerted the two who entered.

"Did you hear that?" One of the females said.

"Yeah, hello, is everything okay in there?" The other female asked.

Marcy with some disappointment let her brother's cock leave her mouth before replying, "Yeah, sorry. I've got period pains and the cramping is a little uncomfortable."

"Oh, I know the feeling, do you want me to go get you something for the pain?" The first one that spoke asked.

Darmon saw Marcy's face had a mix of annoyance and mirth knowing she was having public sex with her brother whilst trying to have a conversation with strangers. Marcy then grunted before answering, "Thanks but no thank you. It should pass soon."

Darmon heard the cubicles either side of them open, close and locked before hearing the rustle of clothing being undone and pushed down. Marcy went back to taking nearly the entire length of her brother's cock back into her mouth as she heard the flow of pee from the females in the cubicles either side. The knowledge that the siblings were getting intimate with each other in public was too much for Darmon and he had to let out a few gasps and moans.

"Oh, you've got it bad this time, dear. I hope you recover soon and you should head home to rest" The second female said.

Marcy continued to bob her head up and down on her brother's cock as she heard the flushes of the toilets and both females going to sink to wash their hands and dry their hands on the automatic hand dryers. Once the women had left, Marcy popped her brother's cock out of her mouth with a loud pop and then giggled, "Fuck my panties are soaked. I need you in me now little brother."

Marcy got up, hiked her dress up and moved the gusset of her panties to the side before straddling her brother. Marcy bobbed up and down a few times until the angle of her brother's cock was just right to impale herself fulling to the root. Marcy wanted to scream as an orgasm made her shudder and instead sunk her teeth into the neck of her brother to keep quiet. After Marcy had recovered slightly, she noticed that she had marked her brother with a bright red hickey.

Brother and sister were thankful that no one else entered as they made love, as the sounds of sex could be heard throughout the Ladies toilets. The squelching sounds of the couple mating, with the panting and moaning grew too large for Darmon to continue much longer. Darmon wrapped his arms around his sister's waist and held her down as he fired his cum deep into his sister's clenching pussy. Marcy would have screamed in pleasure had it not been for Darmon locking his lips with hers as she climaxed feeling her brother's seed deep inside her.

After the siblings recovered it was Darmon who whispered his true feelings, "I so fucking love you, big sister."

Marcy had tears in her eyes as she also responded to her brother's feelings, "Little brother, I am yours now and forever. I have eyes only for you. I truly love you also, Darmon."

Before dismounting her brother, Marcy got a wad of toilet paper ready to catch any of her brother's seeds as it flowed out of her. Marcy quickly pulled up and off her brother's cock with a loud pop

before quickly putting the wad to stop any mess. Marcy quickly bent down to lick and clean her brother's cock before standing up to readjust her clothing. Darmon put his cock away and buckled up again as Marcy had just finished wiping her pussy and moving her panties back into place before lifting the lid of the toilet to drop the messy wad into the bowl. As she straightened up, Darmon grabbed both of his sister's arm and pinned her against side of the toilet cubicle before French sister's her hard.

After the kiss, Darmon reflected how this could have been seen by his sister as him forcing her to kiss him, he stammered an apology, "Oh, umm. Sorry about that. I was just so overcome with desire that I wanted to make sure you were aware of my claim on you. I didn't mean to force that upon you."

Marcy giggled, "No need to feel that way. I kind of liked it. I know I am yours and you can do whatever you like to me."

"Still, I don't want to make you feel like you were being forced," Darmon continued to try to atone for what he just did.

Marcy put her hand against her brother face, "I know you wouldn't do that. Your reactions were all part of our love making. If it helps in your remorse, then I can say that what you did just told me how you feel about us. None of your women would hold that against you."

Darmon face showed how relieved he was to know this. "So how do we get out of here undetected?" Darmon asked.

"Just wait here and if the coast is clear I will come back to take you with me," Marcy answered.

Soon, Darmon and Marcy returned to the jewellery shop. Just over an hour had passed since Marcy led her brother away. What struck Darmon strange was the looks that each of his women was giving him except for Marcy and the strange side-ways looks Susan was giving Darmon. Also, for some odd reason, Susan was trying to avoid him. Darmon wasn't sure what he did or what his women might have done to make Susan act this way. He resolved to get to the bottom of this, later.

Soon Darmon and his women were returning to the villa with Evelyn admiring the engagement ring, after the engraving.

Sandy and Edward were taken to a vacant table and seated. Edward once again ordered an expensive wine bottle for the table as Sandy was looking over the menu. Both ordered a starter, main and deciding on dessert later.

The waitress soon returned with the expensive wine and poured a little for Edward to taste. After Edward confirmed acceptance, the waitress then poured two full glasses, then left.

Edward waited until Sandy had taken her first gulp of wine before asking, "Are you enjoying yourself, sweetheart?"

Sandy looked up after placing the wine glass back down before answering, "Yes, the city is great and I've enjoyed the sights you've shown me so far."

Edward chuckled, "This is only the beginning. While Darmon is away, I can show you many delights and new experiences." Edward then put on a leering smile knowing what new experiences he wanted to show her.

"Really, I would love that. It's just a pity Darmon isn't here to show me and let us experience the joys that come with it," Sandy replied knowing this was playing into Edward's seduction plans.

Edward laughed, "Yeah, pity but that doesn't mean you can't experience the joys anyway, right?"

Before letting Sandy reply, Edward then continued, "Listen, do you love Darmon?"

Sandy was shocked at the question and then remembered her dreams from last night and what she had asked as part of the payment for doing this task. Edward noted the pause and knew he could corrupt this woman, if given the chance. Sandy took a deep breath before replying, "Yes, I think I do. While our relationship is relatively new, I feel there could be something there."

Edward sighed, "You know any money that Darmon has is given by me. Have you not enjoyed the fine dining that we have had so far? Did you not enjoy the clothes and accessories that you got? You know if you want you can have all of these and more."

Sandy put her hand to her mouth before whispering, "What do you mean?"

Edward then changed his voice to a low seductive tone, "I want you to be mine. Forget Darmon and this life could be yours. You will never have to worry about money, and I would pay you each month a stipend of \$5000 to spend however you wish."

Sandy gasped and put on a shocked expression, "I am not a prostitute to be bought with money and besides what would your wife think?"

Edward chuckled, "How would a lover gifting his lover gifts make you a whore or hooker? As for my wife, let's just say we have an open relationship, and she allows me to fuck other women."

Sandy knew of his relationship with his wife and daughters but put on shocked look on her face, "Open relationship? So, Evelyn is allowed to fuck other men, right? As in an open marriage!"

Edward laughed loudly which drew the attention of some other patrons of the restaurant before answering, "Hardly, no other male is permitted in our relationship. Any of the females I bed, she beds with me."

Sandy let out a loud gasp and was nearly ready to leave the table but a look from Edward stopped her. "So, you want me just as a fuck buddy for you and your wife? Why the big seduction? Are you trying to compete with your son?" Sandy knew the last statement was the one that would annoy Edward the most.

Edward took on a stern look and voice to match, "No, not just a fuck buddy as you put it. I want you to be a second wife to me and share the same bed as me and Evelyn. There was no big seduction plan, I just wanted to show you the difference between a life that Darmon could give you and one with me."

Edward then laughed again before responding to the last statement from Sandy, "Really, Darmon could never be at my level, and you know it. Darmon has already lost without even being invited to play this game."

Sandy got up, "Excuse me, I need to use the Ladies room."

Edward chuckled, "Don't run away, sweetheart; I know where you currently live!" Edward let Sandy leave and knew maybe today or even tomorrow she would be spreading her legs for him.

Sandy was upset and knew this was exactly as Darmon had foretold. She got to the Ladies room, found the furthest empty cubicle and entered. Sandy put the toilet seat down and sat on the closed lid before fishing out her phone.

Sandy called Darmon. Darmon was in the car with his grandmother and aunts on the return home. The phone rang a couple of times before Darmon answered it. He noted it was from Sandy and put the phone on speaker so that his grandmother and aunts could hear.

Sandy was relieved to hear Darmon's voice, "Sandy, is everything okay? Dad hasn't hurt you right?"

Sandy paused before replying, "No, he made his move as you predicted. He wants me but not just as a one night stand this time. I think he wants to claim me."

Sandy heard over the mobile and recognized it as being June's, "Honey, this wasn't exactly how we planned this."

Sandy blurted out, "I know and it's got me confused."

"Nothing has changed, Sandy. Put him off for tonight with the excuse you need to think about it and then allow him to believe he has won tomorrow. I alongside the others will be there before 12:00pm, can you put him off until then? If we get there in time then you might not have to suffer too much," Sandy heard Darmon's voice confirming the plan was still in place.

Sandy sighed before replying, "Okay."

"Sweetie, if you don't want to have sex with that pig of a man, then don't. I think you can still infect him a different way, if your blood mixes with his. I suggest biting your tongue so that you bleed and as you kiss Edward bite his tongue to draw blood and let your blood into his system," Sandy heard Mary tell her.

Sandy was glad that she didn't have to go through with allowing that man to enter her body other than his fingers and tongue before replying again with, "Okay!"

"Stay safe, Sandy and I'll see you tomorrow," Sandy heard Darmon say before the phone call ended.

Sandy straightened her clothing before returning to the table to see Edward with a smug look on his face. "Will you let me think on it for the rest of today and I will give you an answer tomorrow?"

Edward chuckled and knew he had her, before saying in a soothing voice, "Yes, of course. Although, I think we both know how the answer will go tomorrow."

The rest of the meal was eaten in silence and Sandy forgo dessert as she wanted to go back to her room and lock the door. After the meal ended, Sandy asked, "Edward, can we please return? I don't feel like I want to continue the sightseeing right now."

Edward looked over at Sandy and went to take her hand, but Sandy moved it away. Edward sighed, "Yes, of course. Get some rest and maybe later you would you like to enjoy another movie night with me?"

Sandy shook her head, "I'm not sure that is a good idea with how my thoughts are in a jumble right now."

Edward drove them both back and Sandy went off to her room to throw herself on the bed whilst Edward went off to his study to spy on her to gauge her reactions.

In the car, Darmon with his grandmother and aunts, he addressed his grandmother, "Grandma, can you please ensure that the security and the means to subdue dad whilst he is being branded is in place. I want to leave before 8am tomorrow and will see his punishment commencing."

"Of course, darling. I will have everything prepared and ready for when you want to leave," June answered her grandson.

When they got home, Darmon called everyone into the living room. Once everyone was gathered there, he opened with, "Tomorrow, we all leave here at 8am to head back. Dad's punishment starts tomorrow."

Marcy, Emily and Natasha all cheered knowing their father was going to get the karma he deserved. Mary and Amber had big smiles on their faces and giggled knowing and seeing the pain and hurt on their brother's face in the same way he had done to them.

Evelyn looked scared and was quiet and hoping that she didn't have to return so quickly. Evelyn was hoping to learn and be a part of 'family love' before having to return home. Then Evelyn recalled the promise she got her son to make and understood this was also to rescue Sandy. June had a look of concern on her face; Edward was a bad son, but could she face him as his punishment commences.

Chapter 11

That evening Darmon and the members of 'family love' were sat in the living room. A sombre mood had settled over the group. June was just finishing off a phone call to the security team and made sure an additional car was available.

"Darling, the security detail and additional car have been arranged and will be here by 6am tomorrow for any last-minute changes. I just need to call my friend who is a retired nurse to ensure that Edward is out cold for part of his punishment," June told her grandson whilst looking in his direction.

After a brief pause, June continued, "Darmon, are you sure you want to do through with this? Once you start there is no going back. Please promise me that you won't kill your own father." Darmon saw tears fall from his grandmother's eyes and he got up to draw his grandmother into his embrace.

"Grandma, if he tries to hurt any of you then I will be forced to protect my family, and I would have to include Sandy in that, even if she isn't mine or family; the fact she wants to have my child is enough. But I will promise you that I will not kill my own father," Darmon told his grandmother in a soothing voice. "Everyone, please sit down someplace and I will go over the plan," Darmon asked.

Everyone sat on the couches or on the floor on cushions. Darmon waited for everyone to settle but remained standing.

"If you don't already know, Sandy called; it seems dad has made his move which has prompted us all to leave here at 8am tomorrow to be there before 12pm. Pack for a day or two nights stay there as, if grandma is willing then, this will be our new family home," Darmon started to explain his reason for the sudden return home.

June looked at her grandson before giving him an answer, "Darling, this villa is yours and if you wish to make it our new family home then it will bring me great joy. You are the 'head of the family', where you go, we go. It's as simple as that."

Darmon looked at his grandmother with clear relief in his expression, "Thanks grandma. If I haven't told you and in fact all of you that 'I love you' today then please accepts it now." Darmon looked at each of his family members and saw each acknowledge his statement.

Darmon paused for a few seconds before continuing, "When we get there, everyone with the exception of the security team and I will enter. I want you all to remain in locked cars, if for whatever reason things don't go according to plan. I will call or send a text message to Sandy in the morning, so that I can catch dad with Sandy and have the security team detain him. This will rescue Sandy and ensure dad is cuffed to something that will prevent him from moving. I will, initially, question dad before calling each of you individually, pairs or as a group. Each of you will have a chance to say whatever you want before I take you all in front of dad. I especially want him to see me claim his mother, my grandmother and his wife, my mother. I want to see the expression he makes when he sees I've won and he has lost."

"After that, grandma, your nurse friend will administer whatever to knock him out, for the tattoo artist to brand him. Oh, I forgot, has the tattoo artist been informed of this?" Darmon asked.

Mary was the one that responded, "Yes, honey. I knew your emotions would be all over the place and took that task upon myself."

Darmon looked over at his aunt and smiled at her, "Thank, auntie. Any questions?"

Amber was the one that asked a question, "Honey, is the plan still for Sandy to reveal to Edward with regards to his infection?"

"Yes, auntie," Darmon responded.

Darmon waited for any more questions and when none were voiced, he sighed before saying, "If you think of any later then please voice them tomorrow before we set off. I suspect our emotions are a little strung out right now and I doubt I could successfully service any of you tonight. My apologies! Grandma, will you share my bed tonight. Everyone else please get some rest as it's going to be emotionally draining day tomorrow.

With that everyone quietly moved to their own bedrooms whilst June went with her grandson to his bedroom. Once in the bedroom, Darmon got naked and under the covers. June watched for a moment and got naked before joining her grandson.

June looked at her grandson with a raised eyebrow. "We're not going to make love tonight, grandma. I just needed your comfort tonight but if you feel uncomfortable then we can get into our nightwear."

June chuckled, "No that won't be necessary. I was just wanting to understand your reasons."

This time it was Darmon that laughed, "Grandma, for the past month I have been naked each night with a different member of 'family love'. I've kind of got used to sleeping naked now and feeling a naked female form pressed against me, you could say it's become second nature."

June didn't reply and just cuddled up to her grandson, "I've missed just being next to someone you love and just enjoying their body heat."

Darmon held his grandmother closer to him before he asked, "Grandma, After I have questioned dad, I will be bringing you in first, followed by my aunts, then mom and finally my sisters. I am not sure if I should bring in my sisters in as a group or individually."

June remained quiet so Darmon continued, "You know I will be making love to you in front of dad, right? If you don't want to be exposed to your son, naked then tell me now so that I can change plans."

June this time did look up at her grandson's face, "Darling, the thought of exposing myself to another man, especially my son, does cause me some concern but I equally know that this is punishment for Edward to show him the consequences of his actions."

Darmon took in a deep breath and let it out before continuing, "Grandma, you will only ever have to do it once. After dad watches us make love, with love instead of being coerced then I can promise you that he will never get to see any of those in 'family love' naked or me making love to them."

June sighed, "I'll do it for you, darling. My love for you is absolute. I love you with every fibre of my body."

Darmon lifted his grandmother's head up to kiss her tenderly before confessing, "Grandma, thank you for making me 'head of the family' and being invited to 'family love'. Without you and what you've taught me I don't know where I would be now. Just know that I'm willing to do anything for you and everyone in 'family love'. I love you and them equally."

After that both grandmother and grandson, slept peacefully in each other's embrace.

Sandy wasn't having a relaxing time. She had locked herself in her room and was crying whilst laying back on the bed. Edward was spying on Sandy and was getting bored as all Sandy was doing was laying on the bed crying. Edward took some glee in that Sandy was crying and believed they were tears of her confirmed loss of innocence as she became his. Edward chuckled as he thought of how Darmon was going to react knowing he lost yet another girlfriend. Just the thought of 'cucking' Darmon was getting Edward hard. Tomorrow was the day that he would fuck Sandy in each of her holes; Edward was playing how this would go in his mind.

Sandy's anguish was powerful and almost made her get her bags ready and leave the house; she reasoned that for one night she could find a hotel or something. The only thing that prevented her from doing this was the baby she knew she would carry in her belly one day. Sandy knew that if she bolted now and abandoned the mission then any chance of that would also disappear. Sandy knew that every interaction with Edward made her cringe and she didn't want to allow that vile man into her body.

Sandy was too stressed and missed dinner and wasn't even sure if Edward had knocked on her door or had order something to be delivered. When Sandy thought she could cry no more tears, she got up and used the bathroom to clean up and get changed into her sleepwear. When she returned, Sandy just got under the covers and thought of Darmon. Sandy wasn't sure why her thoughts always seemed to linger on Darmon. Subconsciously, her mind was picturing Darmon and her as husband and wife with her belly large with their baby growing inside her. Tears fell from her eyes as she knew this was just a pipe dream and cursed fate for falling for the wrong man; the asshole who wasn't satisfied with her and decided to sleep around.

When Sandy had no more tears to shed she exhausted herself to sleep, after she finished crying. Edward at that time was once again spying on Sandy and saw her crying herself to sleep. Edward knew she was vulnerable and as such would be a lot easier to manipulate to get into her pussy, ass and mouth.

Sandy woke up from her phone pinging with a message. Sandy was confused a little and had to wipe the sleep from her eyes. Sandy was hurting inside and couldn't understand why her mind was torturing her with dreams and images of her being Darmon's knowing that relationship could never happen. Sandy felt it in her heart that Darmon's incest relationships with his family wouldn't be the reason that this dream couldn't come true, it was her infection that prevented this.

Tears rolled down Sandy's face as she picked up her phone and opened the message that was sent by Darmon. Sandy read the message: 'Sandy, we're on our way. I expect for us to be there between

11:45am to 12:00pm. Do what you must and infect dad, but stay safe.' Sandy simply replied with 'okay'.

She got out of bed and put on a robe before heading off to the kitchen. When she got there Edward was waiting with a confused look on his face.

"Good morning," Sandy said.

"Good morning, sweetheart!" Edward responded before continuing, "I thought you might still be sleeping a little longer and thought I could get breakfast done. I have to admit watching Evelyn and you do it yesterday, I thought I could handle it but have to admit defeat."

Normally, Sandy would have joked or laughed at that statement but not today. "Here, I can finish off," Sandy offered. Edward moved away and sat at the dining table as he watched Sandy cook.

Edward was impatient and wanted to push forward with getting an answer, "So sweetheart! Have you come to a decision?"

Sandy sighed and looked up from heating up the oil in the pan, "Really, you're pushing for an answer before I've even had time to wake up or eat breakfast?"

Edward chuckled, "Yeah, why not? We both know how you would answer and truthfully, I am itching to spending all day, today, in each other's company."

"How can you be so sure of my answer?" Sandy asked.

Edward watched as Sandy put the bacon in the pan and heard the sizzle before answering her question, "Sandy, you're a smart woman and you already know the life you can have with me against that with Darmon. Look at what I am offering you and then ask yourself what Darmon is offering you. You can see how a smart woman should answer."

Sandy moved the cooked bacon to the plates and cracked eggs in the same oil as the bacon was cooked in. "Before I answer, I have some conditions," Sandy told Edward to push for time and will only submit to Edward under her conditions. Sandy reasoned that if she just accepted then it could flag up something fishy for Edward.

Edward smiled at Sandy and knew she was his now regardless of her conditions, "Fine, what are your conditions?"

Sandy moved the eggs from the pan to plates and made two full plates of eggs and bacon before taking them over to the dining table. She placed one in front of Edward and sat opposite Edward with her own plate. "The first condition is that Darmon can never know."

Edward started to eat and over a mouthful of food answered, "Okay!"

Sandy then took a bite of her own breakfast, swallowed and drank some Orange Juice before continuing, "Second condition, is that I remain Darmon's girlfriend and not yours." Sandy knew this one was going to cause a stinker.

Edward expression grew tense before he replied, "Not going to happen. How the fuck do you expect you would answer him when I call you to my bed, so that I can fuck you all night long? The only way for you to easily share my bed is for you to be Darmon's ex-girlfriend."

Sandy sighed, "Okay, I can see your point then let me break up with him overtime."

Edward thought about this and added his own condition, "Okay, I can live with that, but you are not to get fucked by him in any hole. You will be my girlfriend, and I will not have Darmon laying a hand on what is now mine. You could always use that as a pretext to breaking up, as in lost interest in sex with him."

Sandy put on a shocked expression and understood how devious this man is. "Fine. The third condition is that we take this slow. For today at least I will not allow you to enter my mouth, pussy or ass with your cock. For today, we can make out and you will have to settle for second base only today."

Edward paused a moment to consider this condition and relented knowing that he shouldn't rush things and building up to taking her fully has its own rewards. Edward read in-between the lines and knew that Sandy wouldn't perform oral sex on him but that didn't mean he can't do that to her. Edward chuckled to himself knowing that after he eats her pussy to orgasm, she might just forget her condition and let him fuck her.

Edward sighed before responding, "Fine! So, we start straight after breakfast?"

Sandy shook her head, "Not right away, I have certain things I have to do to prepare for this." Sandy looked at her phone and saw it was 10:30 and then responded to Edward, "Give me an hour and then come to my bedroom."

Sandy put the plates and pan in the dishwasher before leaving Edward sitting at the dining table, heading back to her room. Edward waited a few minutes with his mind running wild with how he was going to take Sandy and give her pleasure like she has never experienced before. Edward got up and went off to his study to see how Sandy was going to prepare herself.

Three cars were on their way to the other house. The car that was driven by Darmon had his mother and sisters; another car had June and her daughters alongside Lauren who was June's retired nurse friend. The final car had the security team which consisted of two big, muscled men.

In Darmon's car; Darmon was deep in thought at what he could expect when they got there. Darmon had sent the message when they left, to inform Sandy and confirm their expected time of arrival. Evelyn in the passenger seat next to her son was looking at her son and then back over her shoulder at her daughters.

"Baby, everything's going to be alright," Evelyn said just to break the silence.

Darmon sighed, "I hope so, mom. I'd be lying if I said I wasn't nervous. The confrontation between dad and I is something that is inevitable."

"Darmon, you won't be doing this alone. You know we all love you and would have your back," Marcy said to sooth her brother but inwardly she, also, was dreading what was going to happen. She knew that so many things could happen or go wrong.

"Thank sis. Without out all your support and that of grandma and my aunts, I doubt I would be able to do this," Darmon uttered.

Darmon then sighed before confirming the plan, "Mom, and my beautiful sisters. You know I want to make dad feel as I did when he took things away from me. Not that my sisters were ever his, but you mom were. I will make him witness our love making. The impact of me taking his wife is going to hit dad a lot harder I suspect. I intend to cum inside you mom and let him see the cum leak out of you. I hope each of you are okay with that?"

"Baby, I am yours now. I'm not going to say I'm not frightened but will do whatever my man, my son wishes," Evelyn told her son. Evelyn then chuckled which prompted all her children to look towards her. When Evelyn noticed the looks, she continues to chuckle as she responded, "Just the thought of my own son conceiving our child together as my husband is witness to the deed is making me wet already." Evelyn's children then saw the funny side of it and let out chuckles or giggles.

In the car with June the conversation was a little more subdued as Lauren wasn't aware of 'family love'. Mary was the one driving this time. "So go over what is happening again, June, so I am not one hundred percent sure of things," Lauren asked again.

June sighed, "Darmon, my grandson, is going to confront his father as he suspects that Edward has seduced or in the process of seducing another of his girlfriends. He's asked for the moral support of his family during the confrontation. This has happened each time Darmon has had a girlfriend. Edward would send Darmon away before he would seduce them; this was confirmed by my granddaughters who caught their father fucking their brother's girlfriends. Darmon laid a trap this time for Edward and we are off to spring this trap."

"Okay, so this is revenge against his father? So why am I involved?" Lauren asked.

"Auntie Lauren, this isn't about revenge and more about accountability for Edward's actions. My handsome nephew has had no less than 6 different girlfriends and each time he was sent away, his girlfriends would break up with him after he got back. It is suspected that in each case, Edward would bribe, try to seduce or blackmail them into his bed. Sandy, Darmon's current girlfriend hatched a plan with him and they have been in contact with each other. Isn't it wonderful, that Sandy is willing to potentially sacrifice herself for her boyfriend," Amber answered.

Mary knew the main question about why she was there hadn't been answered so piped in, "Auntie Lauren, your task is simple. Darmon aims to catch his father in the act and after Edward is secured Darmon wants to get some answers before you will use whatever means you have to knock Edward out for a few hours. Darmon wants to try and prevent this from ever happening again and wants to brand or tattoo his father to let others know of his traits."

Lauren paused to consider this before then asking, "What of his wife? I mean how would she feel about her husband being branded?"

June then looked over at her friend before answering, "Evelyn has suffered through his infidelity and can't stand her husband anymore. She is looking to divorce Edward and cares not about any branding. Evelyn loves her son and understands the pain he has suffered since she also feels it when Edward beds another."

Mary then told Lauren the plan, "Auntie Lauren, Darmon wants to confront his father alone and asks us all to wait in the cars until he calls us. After each of us, in turn, tells Edward how we feel about his actions then you will be called in to administer whatever to knock him out."

Lauren then nods and the car travel after that is in silence.

Edward was disappointed to see that all Sandy did was get naked, brush her teeth and run a bath. Truthfully, Edward didn't know what to expect as he had never bothered to wait or watch his wife or daughters prepare for the day's activities. Edward had some high notion that Sandy would be making sure her pussy and ass were clean and making sure she was shaved in all the right places. Edward got bored quickly and decided to go take a long shower to make sure his cock was totally clean in-case things progressed that far.

Sandy had got out of the bathtub, dried and then went to put on some sexy lingerie. Sandy chuckled to herself and thought Edward wouldn't even notice or care what she had on and probably would rip and tear them off her anyway, still she knew Darmon was on his way and wanted to dress nicely for him even if it was a lost cause.

At exactly 11:30am, she was sitting at the foot of her bed as she saw and heard the door handle tried to be opened. Sandy had locked the door again to prevent Edward barging in to ruin her bath and to claim his prize early. There followed a knock on the door to which she responded, "Just a moment!"

Sandy got up and moved to unlock the door and open it. Edward was standing in the door frame, naked and sporting a below average erect cock. Edward smirked as Sandy looked at his cock and chuckled, "While you want to delay the inevitable, I just thought I would show you my large cock to show you what you could be having inside you today."

Sandy felt like she wanted to vomit but put on a shocked face and pampered to Edward's ego, "Fuck that would split me in two and would be the largest I would have but still I want to delay that."

Edward took his cock in hand with just his thumb and forefinger to wave it around as he took a step closer to Sandy, "We both know that you won't be able to resist for long. Just imagine this cock stretching your mouth wide open, not to mention your pussy and ass."

Sandy took a step back away from Edward's pathetic cock and inwardly chuckled that she wouldn't probably feel him at all. This wasn't because her pussy was too wide and more so that she doubted she could clamp her pussy tight around him even if she would have allowed him entry.

Edward moved quickly and far quicker than Sandy had expected as he pinned Sandy against the open door and forced his kiss on her. Sandy was stunned and didn't react quick enough and Edward managed to grab her left breast and squeeze hard before she managed to break free.

Sandy fake giggled and got out of Edward's grasp, "Why the rush? Darmon's not due back for a few more days, right? We have all the time today and tomorrow and we can see how things go."

Edward chuckled and let Sandy go and watched her shake her butt as she walked away. Edward cock twitched at the sight. Sandy scanned her watch on her wrist to note the time and prayed that Darmon got here without any delays. Sandy noted the time was now 11:38am.

Edward responded in a low seductive voice, "I suppose, so where do you want to start?"

Sandy knew this was the time and recalled the plan Mary had outlined and bit the side of her mouth to draw a small amount of blood. Sandy could taste the slight metallic coppery taste of her blood, "Why don't you come here and kiss me, my new boyfriend."

This instantly made Edward even hornier, and he moved quickly to capture Sandy's lips with his. It surprised Edward when Sandy opened her mouth and took his bottom lip into her mouth and bit down on it drawing blood. Sandy then used her own blood to push against his open lip and French kissed him to make sure her blood was in his system. Edward was initially shocked and after he came back to his senses pushed Sandy off him so that she fell on her back on the bed. "You bitch. I'm going to take that as your overriding passion for this union and note that you like a little bit of rough sex," Edward spat out.

Sandy was giggling knowing her blood was now mixed with his and this enraged Edward more and he threw himself on to Sandy. He didn't care for the expensive and sexy lingerie and ripped them off Sandy's breast and put his hand into her panties before pulling his hand back to tear them to shreds, "If that is how you want to play it slut then I'll take what is mine with or without your permission. Sandy got scared as this wasn't the plan and fought to protect her pussy and ass from Edward's cock entering her.

All 3 cars arrived at the same time and parked just outside on the driveway in front of the garages. Darmon looked over at his mother and sisters before getting out as the two security team members also exited their car. All the women in the cars watched as their man went into the house with the security team and all had on expressions of concern.

Darmon motioned for the security team to be quiet and listened to the sounds of something happening. Darmon heard the muffled shrieks from his bedroom and rushed towards the sounds with the security team a step behind.

Darmon flung open the door to see Edward on top of Sandy who was struggling. Darmon had a look of anger planted all over his face as he ordered, "Pull him off her and detain him."

The security team went into action, and each pulled on either side of Edward's shoulders to forcefully pull him off Sandy. Edward as he was being pulled off shouted, "WHAT THE FUCK? WHO THE FUCK ARE YOU?"

Sandy saw Darmon once Edward was pulled away and got up quickly, crying, to his side, "Darmon, your father forced me. He was going to rape me."

Edward heard this and continued to shout, "YOU LYING BITCH. YOU'RE MY GIRLFRIEND NOW AND WANTED ME TO FUCK YOU. LET GO OF ME YOU BASTARDS IF YOU WANT TO STAY ALIVE."

Darmon looked over at the security team, "Take him and secure him to an armchair in the living room. It's down the hall to the left and I will join you there shortly."

Darmon waited for the team to leave with a shouting, cursing and fighting Edward towards the living room. Darmon then looked at Sandy naked and got concerned, "Sandy, did he hurt you? Did he fuck you?"

Sandy instead of answering right away put her head into his neck and cried with Darmon trying to comfort her, sobbing she replied, "No to both questions. He was about to rape me as you entered to save me. Thank you for keeping your promise."

Darmon pulled Sandy away from him which caused Sandy to blush when she realized she was naked. Darmon moved away to retrieve her robe and draped this over her body. "You can either come with me as I question my father or wait here until I call for you. You can even stay for the whole event, but you should know that you will be witness to me humiliate and degrade my father as I make love to all of my family. It doesn't bother me either way and the choice is your alone to make."

With that he left Sandy to ponder if she should go to the living room now or later or even if she wanted to witness Darmon with his women.

When Darmon entered the living room, he found his father secured with handcuff by the wrists and ankles to the heavy armchair that Edward always liked. Edward continued to curse and swear whilst trying to break free from his bonds.

"Is he secure without any danger of breaking free?" Darmon asked the security team.

"Yes, and none, sir!" The one named Karl answered.

"Excellent. You can wait outside near your car as I need to have a private talk with my father. Karl and Tony, I know you're hired by my grandmother, but I would like to continue using your services in protecting my family. If you're willing then maybe we can discuss this later," Darmon spoke in a calm neutral voice.

"Very well, sir. Your grandmother already has us on retainer and has already foreseen this need. Maybe, if we do a good enough job then we can discuss a bonus or even just enjoy a drink or two with you, sir!" Tony responded before both Karl and Tony left. Darmon's women saw the security team leave and watched as Karl gave a quick thumbs up which seemed to relax them a little.

In the living room, Darmon turned to sit on the couch facing his father and remained silent. Edward continued to struggle to break free without success and glared at Darmon whilst continuing to curse. "So, dad, here we are! Do you have anything to say?" Darmon asked his father with a smile.

Edward continued to shout and curse which prompted Darmon to get up, "If you can't have a civilized conversation then I'll let you stew here for a bit as I go comfort Sandy."

Darmon was looking past his father and was looking at Sandy as he said this. Darmon moved to walk away before he was stopped by Edward with loud voice, "Wait!"

Darmon turned to his father with a smirk on his face, "So now you want a civilized conversation?" This taunt caused Edward to curse again and shout. Darmon smiled at his father and moved away,

"Or maybe not. Are you upset because you got caught or that once in your life, you have to have a meaningful conversation with your SON, dad?"

Edward realized that Darmon meant to keep him locked up until he either calmed down and had a conversation with him or maybe both. Edward called Darmon back, "Son, come back here and let's talk."

Edward heard Darmon chuckle behind his back, "Really, maybe that is the first time ever you have called me by that title. Okay, let's talk then." Darmon returned to sit down on the couch again as he looked at his father whilst smirking.

Edward sighed, "Whatever Sandy tells you is a lie. She came on to me strong and seduced me."

Darmon took a deep breath, "Right, who do you think you're fooling. You call this a meaningful conversation and then open with a blatant lie. I think you do need some timeout. Let's go over this again in a few hours. While I have the freedom of this house, you'll be stuck in your favourite armchair unable to move."

"Wait! Wait! Wait!" Edward blurted out.

Darmon looked over at his father and asked calmly, "Why? So, you can continue to lie straight to my face? You should know that I know far more than you think and if you try to lie to me again, I will leave you locked in that armchair for a day and night without food or water. IF YOU THINK I'M NOT SERIOUS THEN I DARE YOU TO FUCKING TEST ME!"

Edward finally saw the true face of his enemy and knew Darmon would do just as promised. "Okay! Okay, I seduced Sandy," Edward blurted out in a rush.

"Why?" Darmon simply asked.

"Because I wanted what was yours and I showed her the difference our stations in life are. I promised her a life of luxury and all she had to do was be mine," Edward responded.

Darmon threw up his hands then told his father, "Finally, a truth. Why?"

Edward looked confused, "What do you mean 'why?'?"

Darmon sighed, "Why did you do it?"

"Why not? I've always hated you as you were an unwanted child. I saw how your mother and sisters doted on you instead of me and I resented you for taking that affection away from me," Edward continued.

"Oh, I see. So, you've done all this because you were jealous of me?" Darmon asked.

Edward reflected on what Darmon just said and concluded that deep down it might have been jealousy, "Yes, maybe, I don't know."

"Fine, jealousy can be a power motivator but let's talk about my other girlfriends. Did you fuck them all, so that they in the end broke up with me?" Darmon calmly asked his father.

"Yes, I've hated you since you were born. I never wanted you. After your mother refused to abort you and then doted on you, I decided after you got your first girlfriend that I would fuck her and make her leave you. After finding how easy it was to bed one I did it repeatedly," Edward confessed.

Edward thought this news would have angered Darmon and was shocked at the calm expression he had on his face. "Thank you for confessing to that. So, tell me how you were going to explain keeping Sandy as your plaything to mom?"

Edward let out a laugh, "That fucking whore and slut would be alongside me fucking Sandy all night long."

Darmon's anger flared up and he got up; right fist clenched and drove it hard into his father's stomach. Sandy gasped from the side as Edward coughed in pain, "If you ever say anything derogatory about mom again then the next one will be a kick to your balls."

"I've heard enough of this. Sandy, can you confirm what Edward just said at least concerning you?" Darmon asked motioning for Sandy to come sit beside him.

"Yes!" Sandy responded before moving towards Darmon. Darmon took out his phone and sent a text message to his grandmother. A few minutes later, June walked into the living room to see Edward tied up and Sandy sitting next to Darmon on the couch.

Edward looked up and asked, "Mom?"

Darmon patted the couch to his right where the place was empty and June came over and sat down. June then looked over at her son who was naked and cuffed to the armchair. Edward saw the stern expression on his mother's face, and this made him slightly apprehensive. June looked at Edward and opened with, "Edward, I already know what you have done and I mean all of it. I know what you have done with Evelyn and your daughters and all of Darmon's girlfriends."

Edward quickly looked over at Darmon to see if he knew what he had done to his wife and daughters. One look told him that Darmon knew everything and the pit in his stomach dropped. June continued, "What I need to know is why you did it?"

Edward didn't look at his mother and instead continued to look at Darmon, "Why, huh! When dad knew of his illness, he had hinted at some sort of secret and was preparing me for the position of what he called the 'head of the family'. He wouldn't tell me anymore than that and said you would tell me in time after his passing. It got me curious and I did some digging and found out that he was fucking you and my sisters. With that knowledge, I wasn't sure how he managed that, so I forced Evelyn to try and seduce the girls and then eventually blackmail them using Darmon to achieve that."

June nodded as Edward continued, "As for Darmon's girlfriends. I got Evelyn or one of the girls to seduce them if I couldn't bribe them with money. In the end each of his girlfriends succumbed to my cock."

June sighed, "It's called 'family love'. That is governed by rules. You were indeed destined to be the next 'head of the family' until your sins came to light. Had you conquered your wife and daughters with love and understanding, I wouldn't have done anything, and your place would have been set as per your father's and my wishes. One of the rules of 'family love' is no outsider unless invited can be a part of 'family love', especially if they belong to someone else. You brought in and fucked each of Darmon's girlfriends and this is what brings us here today. You violated that rule regardless of you knowing the rules or not. All you had to do was be patient and everything could have been yours."

"Me, your sisters, your wife and even your daughters would have willingly become yours if you had been patient. Darmon, whom you've hated, wouldn't have known and he would've been content in a loving relationship with his girlfriend. Your actions stopped this from happening and your threats against Darmon have no merit with me being the matriarch of the family and as such I have named my grandson 'head of the family'. He now has everything that could have been yours. The money you lorded over everyone is now Darmon's to control if he abides by the 'family love' rules."

Edward was shocked and started to thrash about in his restraints as June used her hand on the side of her grandson's head to move it towards her before tenderly giving her grandson a passionate kiss. June heard Edward scream and shout, "MOM, DON'T DO THIS. I CAN CHANGE; I CAN ABIDE BY THE RULES IF YOU TELL ME THEM. MOM STOP!"

This was the first time that Sandy was witness to 'family love' and her breathing came in sharp short breaths as she had a front row seat to a grandmother and grandson making out. June broke the kiss and looked over at her son, "Sorry, honey. It too late for that. Darmon is now 'head of the family' and gains everything that come with it. One of which is me."

Edward continued to curse and shout as his mother was fully making out with his son. Edward closed his eyes but couldn't stop the sounds from reaching his ears and he heard his mother moan loudly in pleasure and even heard a whimper and soft groan from Sandy. Edward heard the rustle of clothing being removed and loud panting from his mother with sucking sounds. Edward opened his eyes briefly and was shocked to see his mother's dress was down to her waist and Darmon was sucking on her neck to mark her as his. Edward closed his eyes again.

Edward throat got sore from the screaming and shouting he was doing until he was forced to listen to the sounds of his defeat. With the loss of sight the sounds of sex surrounding him, and his other senses became sharper; his hearing and smell were sharpened. His immediate thought was how the fuck had he been so stupid? All he had to do was be patient and it was something his father was always telling him when he pressed for further information. Why hadn't he listened? Was it too late and could he still become the 'head of the family'?

Edward heard squishy sounds and opened his eyes again to see Sandy was watching Darmon and his mother whilst she had two fingers inside her pussy. June taunted her son as she was overcome with the desire to make love with her grandson, "Honey, watch as your son makes love to me and understand what you've lost any chance of. Keep your eyes open and see how a real man takes care of his woman."

Sandy got a good look at Darmon's cock as June removed his t-shirt and shorts and was amazed at the size of it. Sandy thought Darmon genes must come from his mother's side of the family as he looked to be more than twice the size of his father and a lot thicker.

Edward's attention went back to Darmon and his mother who were now naked. Darmon moved to stand in front of his father and asked his grandmother to kneel. Darmon was looking directly into his father's face as his grandmother took his shaft in hand and opened her mouth to take in his cock. Edward watched as his mother took Darmon's cock deep into her mouth and compared the size of Darmon's cock against his. Sandy had a noisy orgasm as she watched Darmon getting a blowjob from his grandmother. Edward looked briefly at Sandy before returning to look at his family members.

June bobbed her head along her grandson's cock for 5 minutes before Darmon tapped her on the shoulder, "Grandma, you know I love your blowjobs but I think dad needs to see my seed enter your pussy and your womb."

June got up off the floor with her grandson's help and then moved over to the couch before laying back and spreading her legs wide. Sandy moved to the side and knelt beside the couple as she saw up close as Darmon got on top of his grandmother and push his cock in. June let out a banshee scream that was muffled with Darmon's mouth covering hers. Soon Darmon was moving in and out of his grandmother and Sandy next to them was again fingering her pussy.

Edward saw the love that his mother was showing and got hard when she saw his mother wrap her legs around Darmon's ass. June was using her legs to pull her grandson in deeper as she raised her butt off the bed. Grandmother and grandson made love for a good 20 minutes before Darmon pushed in hard and held himself deep inside as he shot jet after jet of his seed into his grandmother's pussy.

Darmon remained deeply embedded inside his grandmother as he raised up slightly then said loudly enough, "I love you, grandma."

June giggled and responded to her grandson's confession, "Darling, I love you too." June then looked over at her son and saw her son was hard and was nowhere near as large as her grandson was, "Do you see that, Edward. That is how a real man makes love to his woman. When was the last time you told Evelyn you loved her?"

Edward couldn't recall the last time he did, maybe it was well before Darmon was born.

10 minutes later, June got up and pointed her pussy towards Edward so that he could see Darmon's cum drip out of her pussy before June got dressed and saw Sandy was a mess on the floor. "Oh, you poor dear. Do you need any help cleaning up?" June asked Sandy who just shook her head.

"Wow, that was intense. Are you okay, June?" Sandy asked concerned for the woman.

June chuckled, "Why wouldn't I be, sweetie. My man just made love to me and left his gift inside me. I am beyond happy and more than okay. Darling, shall I send in Mary and Amber now?"

Darmon didn't bother getting dressed and neither did Sandy as he nodded towards his grandmother. June left and Sandy moved closer to Darmon. "I didn't expect that and it was far more exciting than

even my dreams could muster. I thought I wouldn't be able to accept this but seeing the love in this relationship has me reconsidering what I believe between right and wrong."

Before Darmon could answer, Mary and Amber arrived. They saw a naked Edward cuffed to the armchair and an equally naked nephew sitting next to Sandy, who also happened to be naked. Amber chuckled, "I see mom started the fun already."

Edward was again stunned when he saw his sisters enter and asked, "Mary, Amber!"

"Wow, did you suddenly remember our names, big brother? Were no longer, 'sluts', 'whores', 'dykes', 'muff divers' or any other derogatory names?" Mary addressed her brother with venom in her voice. Edward recalled how he had called each of his sisters these names when they came out.

Amber laughed, "Who cares about that now. Can't you see this is a naked party and even has an element of BDSM where our brother is cuffed, with him being tortured watching as all around him have sexy fun." Amber immediately started to undress, which quickly prompted Mary to do the same.

Mary then asked her nephew as she directed him to stand facing his father, "Honey, will you please stand here. Sandy, you can come up also if you want, but I'm sorry I can't touch you. You can watch and play with yourself if you need to."

Amber then took her nephews flaccid cock in her hand, "Edward, do you see this flaccid cock which is even larger than your erect needle. I won't touch yours but love to touch and play with Darmon's. Honey, did mom lick you clean after you cum inside her?"

Darmon shook his head before Amber got onto her knees and sucked in her nephew's cock into her mouth. Mary looked down at her sister licking and sucking on Darmon's cock, so she captured his mouth with hers into a deep French kiss. Mary broke the kiss to ask her nephew, "Honey, I hope you have enough stamina to make love to both of us."

Darmon chuckled, "Oh auntie, you know I do. I won't cum inside either of you as I want to save that for someone special." Edward looked over at Sandy and thought Mary meant Sandy was the special one. Once Darmon was hard, Amber pulled his cock out of her mouth after tasting Darmon and her mother's juices before standing up.

Amber then looked over at Edward, "You're a fool you know that? Dad accepted our relationship and got to make love to us. Darmon didn't even question our relationship and just asked for certain

concessions which were easy to allow. He's made love to both of us to ensure we're both carrying his child in our bellies. Mom, us and anyone else you desired could've been yours." Amber pointed with a wave of her hand over her body and that of her sister's and then over Sandy's body.

Mary held her nephew's cock in her right hand and pointed it towards Edward, "I'm glad that you fucked up. I have more fun with this huge cock than I would have had with whatever you call that thing. You're a big fucking hypocrite you know that? All this time you called us names for being lesbians and what the fuck do you do? You make Evelyn and your daughters into your lesbian slaves."

Amber giggled, "You just stay put as you watch our MAN make love to me and my sister. Sandy, honey, you okay with this right? I assume you watched as Darmon made love to mom, right?"

Sandy nodded and responded, "Yes, I saw Darmon make love to his grandmother and am happy staying to watch."

Mary noticed that Edward was hard again, "Oh look at our pathetic brother, getting off on watching his son make love to his aunts. How would you like us, honey?"

Darmon directed the women, "Sandy, go sit on the couch, you're free to play with yourself however you wish. Aunt Mary and Amber, on all fours in front of dad. I want him to see my cock go deep into each of your pussies." All the women obeyed the instructions.

Darmon then got behind Mary and before he lined up to enter their pussies an evil thought occurred to him, he leaned down and whispered so that only both of his aunts could hear his words, "Aunties, dad would always fuck mom's and my sisters anally. Are you okay with me making love to you both there?"

As if in unison they both replied, "Yes!"

Darmon continued to whisper, "Sorry, aunties. I don't have lube with me, but I will ensure you're both wet enough to take me." Mary and Amber didn't know how Darmon was going to do that but moaned at the anticipation of the deed.

Sandy watched as Darmon passionately kissed both of his aunts before kissing down Mary's back until he reached her ass cheeks. Darmon used both hands to spread open his aunt Mary's ass cheeks and looked at the puckered rosebud. He leaned down to swipe his tongue over her rosebud which caused Mary to moan at the sensation. Darmon continued to lick and poke his tongue at his aunt's rosebud and continued to do this for a few minutes until Mary shrieked into an orgasm. Darmon

chuckled as his aunt fell forward before he moved over to his other aunt. Amber was horny from watching her nephew eating her sister's asshole and it only took a few minutes of playing with her rosebud before she too had an orgasm.

Darmon chuckled and decided to taunt his father, "You see dad, I haven't even made love to them and already both have had an orgasm. This is the difference between forcing someone and having them loving submitting to both theirs and their partner's desires. Instead of me fucking their assholes, I will make love to them. If they weren't already pregnant then I would insist on taking them in the pussy."

Edward grunted and pulled against his restraints, "I've hated you for a reason and this just reinforced that belief. If I could go back in time, I would drown you and be rid of this shit show now."

Amber got angry and got up off the floor and moved over to her brother and slapped him hard across the face, "I told you that only one man can have Mary when you tried to take her. Darmon is that man and I will not hear you belittle him or wish harm on him."

Darmon laughed, "See how protective they are of me, dad? Come back here my sexy aunt as we have unfinished business. Aunt Mary are you ready?"

"Yes!" Mary responded. Darmon licked and spat on his aunt rosebud before wetting his hand in saliva then coating his cock with his saliva. Darmon moved forward and put his glans to his aunt anal opening and started to apply pressure. Mary's body naturally resisted until with a pop Darmon's glans entered his aunt. "Fuck honey. Are you trying to shove a baseball bat into me?", Mary groaned and panted out as Darmon allowed her to adjust to his size.

"I'm sorry, auntie. I know this is the first time I've taken you there and we should've practiced this beforehand," Darmon said concerned that he wouldn't be able to get his cock inside her without proper lube.

"Oh, honey. For you I would do and allow anything. You can push more in now," Mary confessed and asked. Darmon pushed harder and felt three more inches slid into his aunt which caused his aunt to utter the word, "FUCK!" Darmon waited a few minutes each time for his aunt to adjust and relax until he was balls deep inside his aunt's bowels.

Soon, aunt and nephew were pushing and pulling on each other, and they continued to make love for 5 minutes before Mary let out a wail as she had an anal orgasm. Amber laughed when Mary collapsed to the floor as she blacked out. Darmon laughed also, "Who knew auntie would faint from an anal orgasm also."

Amber chuckled, "Oh she is going to get teased about this, later. Gently pull out of her, honey and come make love to me now."

"I hope you mean anally as I don't want you to get an infection with our baby growing inside you if you want vaginal sex. I don't mind, taking your pussy but you will need to let me go wash my cock before I do that," Darmon reminded his aunt of the dangers of vaginal sex right after anal sex.

Amber giggled, "I mean you can have my ass, honey."

Darmon proceeded to lick and coat his aunt Amber and himself as he had done with his other aunt, Mary. This was the almost the same experience for Amber where her nephew would pause every so often to let her adjust until he was fully making love to his aunt, anally. Instead of blacking out as Mary did, Amber shook and shuddered as a powerful orgasm rocked her body. Poor Sandy on the couch was close to losing her mind from the number of orgasms she had experienced.

After Darmon pulled out, he sat beside Sandy who looked with glazed eyes at Darmon. It had taken Mary 10 minutes before she recovered and came back to life. Darmon knew that he had to go wash his cock if he planned on making love to the next person. After Amber got up off the floor, Darmon asked her, "Auntie, I know you're probably exhausted but do you think you can get us some water to re-hydrate as I go wash up. Sandy, it looks like you can do with a quick wash also, come with me."

Amber went off to the kitchen and Darmon led Sandy to his bedroom and into his bathroom. Darmon turned on the water in the shower and when it was at the right temperature he got in and motioned for Sandy to join him. Sandy was hesitant at first and then smoothly stepped in with Darmon. Sandy wasn't sure what this meant for her and was trying to figure out why Darmon was giving her hope when everything was hopeless. Darmon saw Sandy's hesitation before soothing her, "Sandy, don't read too much into this. Call this a reward for being there to see how my family love me and I them. You've sweated a lot and could use a warm shower."

Both Darmon and Sandy washed the sweat off their bodies and Darmon made sure his cock was totally clean as he still need to put his seed into his mother. As Darmon and Sandy were drying themselves off, Sandy's phone pinged a message. When Sandy opened her phone, she saw multiple missed calls and a few text messages.

Sandy sat down to read the messages and then listen to the voice messages. Sandy read the first message and started to hyperventilate which caused Darmon to panic and rush over to her. Sandy dropped her phone onto the bed and grabbed a hold of Darmon. Darmon's anxiety got the better of him, and he picked up the her phone to read the message:

'Sandra, please call the office when you get this message, as the latest test results have been completed and you will be given the all clear following the next test. The latest tests have come back negative. A final test will need to be conducted. Therefore, call the office to arrange an appointment.'

Darmon got up and pulled Sandy up off the floor so her feet were dangling off the floor before he kissed her on the lips. Sandy was already in shock and Darmon just added to it. "That is good news, right?" Darmon muttered.

Sandy nodded, "Only if the next test is also negative."

"Don't worry about it now, think positive. Of course, we need to keep this a secret for now and you still need to convince dad you infected him," Darmon advised. Sandy just nodded her head.

Darmon and Sandy walked naked back towards the living room. Amber had brought a large jug of ice-cold water and 5 glasses and a drinking straw for Edward to use.

Darmon and Sandy both thanked Amber for the drink and drained their glass of ice-cold water in one go. Edward was subdued and accepted the water using the drinking straw from Mary who was fully clothed now. Both Mary and Amber had dressed to prevent their brother from seeing them naked.

Sandy sat further away from Darmon, who had Mary and Amber on either side of him. "Aunties, I'm sorry if I've made you sore and I promise next time to use proper lube," Darmon commented.

Both Mary and Amber giggled before Mary spoke up, "Next time, huh? I'm sure I can speak for my sister when I saw we're both looking forward to it. Let's relax a little before we leave for your special guest."

Darmon nodded and moved Mary over to straddle his lap as he kissed the side of her neck before leaving his mark, like a badge claiming his aunt as his. Mary moaned and after Darmon left his mark French kissed her nephew with a lot of pent-up emotions. Mary moved back to the side and Edward saw how Darmon marked his women. Amber was next, with Darmon leaving his mark on her neck. "It surprises me every time you leave your mark on me where everyone can see your claim on me," Amber moaned in delight.

A short time later, Amber left to refill the jug and put their glasses into the sink before returning with a few fresh glasses. "I love you, aunt Mary and Amber. Make sure to take care of yourselves and our babies," Darmon stated to his aunts before they left.

Mary giggled, "We love you too, honey." Edward was watching this exchange and thought it was all too corny for his liking and thought fuck it, if his sister whores are happy, then it's no skin off his bones. The fact his mom opened her legs for Darmon had left a bitter taste in Edward's mouth, but still he could live with that, maybe or at least until he can get the upper hand again before bending them all to be his.

Darmon was having a little pleasant chat with Sandy that went on for close to 20 minutes before Evelyn walked into the living room. Edward's head looked up and was shocked to see his wife enter. Evelyn was equally stunned as she spotted Edward cuffed to his favourite armchair and was shocked when she spotted her son and Sandy equally naked on the couch.

"Mom, come sit beside me," Darmon patted the couch to his left as Sandy was seated to his right this time.

"You know mom I would have made dad suffer a little less had he asked about you and my sisters during my talks with him. Not once did he ask and I didn't offer him any information either. If you have anything to say to dad now would be the good time to do it," Darmon continued.

Evelyn looked towards her son and then back to Edward and paused to collect her thoughts.

"Edward, following this intervention on your behaviour and for what you've subjected on me, our daughters, Darmon's girlfriends which includes Sandy here and especially to my son; I will be filing for divorce with infidelity as the cause."

Sandy gasped and Darmon chuckled, "Wow, mom. I didn't expect you to, straight up and open with that. I expected a slow build up to that. You have my respect, mom!"

Edward was shocked at hearing this from Evelyn and never did he think this would be a consequence to his actions. Edward always thought he could control Evelyn and it was something she craved being a big submissive. The fact that Evelyn was sat next to her naked son and his naked girlfriend didn't even register in his brain.

"Don't do this, Evelyn. I can change, I mean we can change. I won't ask you to call your friends anymore and I won't beat you either. All you have to do is not divorce me and call our daughters back." Edward choked out.

Evelyn turned on her husband, "Really, you call that change? You still get to do your disgusting things with me and our daughters and all you would have to lose is the extra pussy you would try to get."

Edward realized this wasn't going to be enough and tried to think of something different, he choked out, "Evelyn..." before he was cut off.

"Too little, too late for that Edward. I kept tell you it was wrong to do whatever you wanted. You used our own son to blackmail me and our daughters to be your sex slaves," Evelyn cut off Edward's sentence with venom in her voice.

Edward was shocked into silence before Evelyn continued, "You see, I don't love you anymore. You lost that when you forced yourself upon me and our daughters. There is no going back from this. I found love with another man and he loves me unconditionally."

"Who?" Edward asked with a voice that was more a sob.

Evelyn got up and pulled her son to his feet before wrapping her arms around her son and kissing him with a lot of passion with tongues pushing and sucking into each other's mouths.

Edward shouted out, "NO! NO! NO! NO!" Edward went into a fit as he tried to break the restraints. "YOU CAN'T DO THIS. YOU'RE MY WIFE AND MINE. YOU HEAR THAT? YOU'RE MINE!" Edward continued to shout.

Evelyn broke the kiss and looked at her husband, "Not anymore! I'm with the one man that will never betray me and our love." Darmon looked over at his father and smirked at him.

Edward watched as Darmon pulled up and off Evelyn's dress until she was left in her bra and panties and open toed comfort sandals. "HE CAN HAVE MY WHORE OF A MOTHER AND MY DYKE SISTERS. JUST LET ME KEEP YOU!" Edward continued to thrash about and shout.

Evelyn looked over at Edward again, "Darmon, is the 'head of the family' and with it all the benefits that come with it. I'm his now Edward. If you didn't hate him so much and left him alone then I might have considered it, but you didn't. You got greedy and wanted to take everything away from him. How does it make you feel when your own son is now taking everything that was yours away from you?"

Edward was sobbing, cursing and continued to try and break his restraints, "DARMON YOU LEAVE YOUR MOM ALONE YOU HEAR I ADMIT DEFEAT YOU CAN HAVE EVERYTHING ELSE BUT LEAVE ME EVELYN"

Darmon let out a big laugh, "Yes, now you can see how I felt when I found out you had fucked my girlfriends. Mom's mine now and won't ever be yours ever again."

Edward watched as Darmon pulled the straps of Evelyn's bra off her shoulders and then reached behind her to release the clips before pulling it away from his mother's breasts. Darmon took his mother left breast in his right palm and fondled it. Darmon marked his mother as his as he had done with his grandmother and aunts.

Edward went into a fit as he shouted, "STOP! STOP! STOP!" Edward saw Darmon get onto his knees and hook his fingers either side of her panties and then pull them down. Sandy was getting a little scared with how Edward was reacting and didn't feel the pleasure she had previously due to the distractions of the shouting and thrashing of Edward.

Darmon pulled his mother's panties to the floor and his mother stepped out of them before he leaned in to smell his mother's scent. "Mom, I'm going to eat your pussy and after you cum I will make love to you and gift you with my life-giving seed," Darmon asked and promised his mother.

Edward continued to thrash about and slumped in the armchair in defeat when he saw his wife raise her leg over her son's shoulder and Darmon dived in to feast on his mother's pussy. Evelyn moaned in pleasure and told her son, "Yes, baby. Eat mommy's pussy and afterwards make a baby in me."

Edward was finally silent and foaming at the mouth as he closed his eyes and heard the scream of his wife as her orgasm hit her.

Chapter 12

Evelyn shook and shuddered as an orgasm rocked her body and she let out an ear-piercing shriek. Sandy looked at Edward foaming at the mouth and finally go silent with his eyes closed. The screams of Darmon's mother started to get her horny. Sandy felt great glee in the knowledge that Edward was getting a taste of his own medicine.

"Oh baby, my sweet baby. Mommy loves you so much," Evelyn panted, heavily. Evelyn then looked over at her soon to be ex-husband, "Open your fucking eyes and see how much better sex is when being made love to instead of your pathetic two minutes and then I'm done, shit!"

Darmon continued to lick and eat his mother's pussy as she was scolding his father. Edward's eyes remained shut and this angered Evelyn. "I SAID OPEN YOUR FUCKING EYES, EDWARD," Evelyn spat out.

Sandy was even more turned on with how much power Darmon's mom was exuding and started to play with her breasts and rub her labia. Edward opened his eyes and saw his son continue to eat his wife, "Please stop! Why are you doing this to me, Evelyn?"

Now that Evelyn had Edward's attention, she looked down at her son eating her pussy and put a hand on her son's head as she ground her pussy harder into his face, "Why you ask, huh? If you could take what was my son's, then why can't he be allowed to take what was once yours? Your actions forced each of his girlfriends to break up with him after you fucked them, right? Well, payback's a bitch, your son has taken what was once yours and made it his and guess what, your actions have had the effect of me breaking up with you."

Evelyn moaned loudly as Darmon attacked her clit and drew it into his mouth to suck hard. Evelyn trembled in delight, "Fuck, your son is a far better pussy eater than you've ever been in our marriage."

Edward started to sob and with a downward glance asked, "Evelyn, will you please stop this. You've made your point. I can change. I won't degrade you anymore and will leave our daughters alone. I'll do whatever you want."

Evelyn moaned, panted and then laughed, "Edward, I don't need your permission to do whatever I want. I guess, I am doing just doing what I want for a change. I'm going to be my son's woman going forward."

Evelyn screamed as another orgasm made her legs feel like jelly and would have fallen if not for Darmon supporting her weight with his arms either side of her hips. Darmon got up and picked his mother up and placed her next to Sandy on the couch. Evelyn opened her eyes and looked into the bright eyes of Sandy, "Hi sweetie. I hope Edward didn't hurt you. You don't mind if I lay here next to you, right?"

Sandy shook her head, "No Evelyn he was about to rape me, but Darmon saved me and I don't have a problem with you next to me."

Evelyn smiled at Sandy before saying, "That is good. My son always keeps his promises. Sweetie, Darmon is going to make love to me with a view of planting his baby in me, I hope this doesn't cause any problems."

Sandy looked at Evelyn and took Darmon's mother's right hand into hers, "No Evelyn, I am happy for you and know Darmon will put his baby in me too, one day. I've watched him make love to his grandmother and both his aunts and it doesn't bother me watching him impregnate you either."

Evelyn gazed into Sandy's eyes, "You're a good girl, Sandy. Baby, I'm ready for you and Sandy if you want you can suck my nipples as my son makes love to me."

Darmon shook his head, "Mom, that is not permitted as Sandy hasn't been invited to 'family love'. I'm sorry Sandy for now you can watch and play with yourself, but my women cannot touch you or you them."

Evelyn recalled the rules and sighed, "Sorry, Sandy!" Sandy just nodded but did wonder what these rules were and then wondered how to go about getting an invite especially if her next test results also come back negative.

Darmon looked down at his mother and confessed, "Mom, you are one the most beautiful women I know. You have no idea, or maybe you do, of how much you make me happy. I love you, mom."

Sandy swooned at the love between mother and son, no correction between a man and his woman. Sandy had a tear form in her eye and drop down her cheek and she sobbed. Darmon and Evelyn heard Sandy and got concerned. When Sandy noticed, she confirmed why, "Sorry, Darmon's confession was sweet and I wish someone would love me like that."

Evelyn this time held Sandy's hand and told her, "Oh, honey. I'm sure that all your dreams will come true."

Edward made gagging sounds and when Evelyn looked over at her husband, "That is why you're a fuck up, Edward. Do you think you would be in that position if you had told me and our daughters how much you love us instead of forcing us? No, Edward, all you think of how to get your kicks and dick wet."

Edward reflected on his approach and doubted he could have gotten his daughters that way as they doted on their little brother too much; no, he did what he had to do to fuck them. Edward watched as his wife then turned back to their son and tell him, "I'm so glad I'm yours now and forever. I love you too my handsome son." Sandy gasped in joy next to them and her nipples got hard without even touching them.

"Mom, you ready to make love?" Darmon asked as he looked down at his mother with her legs spread wide and his rock-hard cock ready to return to his mother.

Darmon turned to look at his father who had tears falling down his cheeks before letting his anguish out with a shout, "DARMON DON'T DO THIS. I'LL NEVER THREATEN YOU AND LEAVE YOU ALONE!"

Darmon laughed as he pushed forward with his hips and his cock slid into his mother with a loud slapping sound when his pelvis collided with his mother's. Both mother and son heard a wail from Edward as he was witness to his life ending. Darmon chuckled, "What's up dad? Didn't you want to see another man fuck your wife? Well, open your eyes and see another man, make love to her instead of just fucking her. Did it ever occur to you that once she had the taste for a cock bigger than yours, she wouldn't return to you?"

Darmon flexed his cock inside his mother which made his glans rub up and down against his mother's cervix, this caused Evelyn to shriek as another orgasm made her shudder and lift her butt off the couch. Darmon taunted his father, "Hey, dad? Have you ever made mom cum like that? I haven't even stroked my cock into mom yet and already she's had an orgasm."

Edward started to thrash around in his armchair again and shouted, "YOU FUCKING BARSTARD. I'M GOING TO KILL YOU WHEN I GET FREE!"

Darmon laughed at his father, "Hey mom, maybe dad thinks you're faking the orgasms. Wrap your legs around me and hold on to me tightly." Evelyn did as her son asked and yelped when Darmon picked up his mother whilst she was still had her son's cock deeply embedded in her. Darmon walked them over to stand about a foot away from Edward and moved so that Edward had a clear view of his cock entering his mother.

"Don't let go of me, mom. I'm going to make love to you hard and fast and give dad a close-up view of the action," Darmon advised his mother. Darmon then turned to Sandy, "Sandy, if you want to get a better look come and lay down beneath us as I make love to mom." Sandy quickly got up and lay down facing up and had a perfect view of Darmon's cock entering his mother's pussy.

"WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS? WHY ARE YOU TORTURING ME?" Edward was shouting and having a fit as he tried again to break free of his restraints.

Darmon used both his hands on his mother's hips and pushed and pulled his mother on to his cock. Evelyn started to moan and pant with the force of her son's thrusts. Darmon was panting also and decided to answer his father, "Mom, needs a real man in her life and I'm giving mom exactly what

she needs; that is why. As for torturing you, did you enjoy it when you did it to me? Did you call me a 'fucking cuckold' as you got rougher with mom and my sisters each time you made me single again?"

Edward now felt the same pain of being a 'fucking cuckold' that he enjoyed calling Darmon after he fucked each of his girlfriends. Edward wanted to look away and when he looked down, he saw the glazed look in Sandy's eyes and heard her panting as she was fingering her pussy again. Edward tried to look to the left and right and even up but even if he tried to block the images, he could still smell and hear everything.

Evelyn shrieked as another orgasm rocked her body and looked over at Edward, "You fucking better open your eyes and watch as I am being made love to. You made me and my daughters watch you, as your fucked us and fucked Darmon's girlfriends."

Edward continued to keep his eyes closed and shouted, "STOP! PLEASE STOP! I'M SORRY! I'M SORRY!" The mating pair didn't stop or care and continued to mate which only made Edward continue to try and break either the armchair or the cuffs.

The strain of holding up his mother for a prolonged period got Darmon tired, but he was still happy that he had lasted just over 10 minutes, so far. Evelyn was a mess and had lost count of the number of orgasms she had. Sandy below them was panting and near exhaustion with her pussy sore from all the rubbing. Sandy had also lost count of her orgasms.

Darmon started to grunt and his cock expanded inside his mother. Evelyn knew she was again close, as was her son. A few more minutes passed before Darmon pushed in hard and fired his potent seed into his mother. Evelyn felt the blasts from her son's cum hit her cervix which caused her to scream as an orgasm hit her hard. Edward at that time had opened his eyes and his cock got instantly hard as he watched his wife spasm and squirt; this was the first time he had ever witness his wife doing this.

Sandy below them watched Darmon's cock twitch as he fired his cum inside his mother and then her face got splashed with a clear liquid and realized that Evelyn had just squirted. She watched with her mouth open as Darmon's cum leaked out around his cock to drop down into her open mouth. Sandy closed her mouth and tasted both Evelyn and Darmon's juices which cause her to scream out as the most powerful orgasm she ever experienced shot through her whole body.

Darmon walked over to the couch on shaky legs and placed his mother gently down on the couch, "Mom, rest up for a moment. I just need to take care of Sandy and then I'll be back." Evelyn unwrapped herself from her son and stayed spreadeagled trying to catch her breath. Edward witnessed his son's seed leak out of his wife's pussy, or should that be soon to be ex-wife now?

Darmon returned to Sandy and picked her up in a princess hold before taking her to his bedroom. He placed her on his bed to rest. Darmon returned, filled her glass with cold water and then returned to place it beside her on the bedside cabinet. Darmon leaned down to brush the hair away from Sandy's face and then gave her a gentle kiss on the forehead, "Rest here for now Sandy. I'll be back later to check up on you."

Sandy groaned in pleasure and Darmon heard Sandy say quietly, "I love you, Darmon." Darmon filed that away for later as he needed to get back to his mother.

When Darmon returned, he saw his father was slumped in the armchair and went over to his mother to make sure she was okay, "Mom, you okay? Come closer and let us cuddle."

Evelyn complied with her son's request and then stated, "Baby, what did you do to me? I've never felt this good before."

Darmon chuckled, "Mom, all I did was make love to you and showed you how your man, your lover and your son should treat his woman and mother." Darmon looked down at his mother and saw her close her eyes before promptly falling asleep.

Darmon picked up his phone which just so happened to be within arm's reach. He sent a text message to his sisters and his aunts to come to the living room. A few minutes later, both his aunts and sisters entered the living room.

Darmon looked up at his sisters and aunts and asked them, "Aunt Mary and Amber, can you please take mom to my bedroom to clean her up and try not to disturb Sandy who is also resting in there?" Darmon saw the looks in his aunts' faces and he shook his head, "Just make sure she is okay and please leave the cum I gifted mom in her. You know mom wanted to get pregnant as dad was witness to our mating. I think she might be after this session. Fill another glass of water and take that with you in-case mom needs a drink." Mary and Amber, gently lifted Evelyn up off their nephew and took her away to Darmon's bedroom.

In Darmon's bedroom, Mary quietly said, "Fuck me. What has our nephew done to poor Sandy over there and to his own mother?"

Amber giggled and quietly replied, "I don't know. I hope Darmon didn't break the rules with Sandy. In any case, what he did to his own mother looks like they had a great time."

Back in the living room, Darmon poured himself another glass of cold water and drained it in one go. Marcy made a comment, "I think we need to open a window of something, it reeks of sex in here!"

Emily and Natasha giggled but did open a window or two to let in some fresh air. Emily looked over at their father. Edward hadn't even noticed his daughters or sisters enter the living room.

Natasha came up to her brother, "Hey, little bro. Did you break dad?"

Before Darmon could reply he heard Marcy say loudly, "Hey dad! You alive there. You're not even going to say hi to your daughters?"

Edward looked up and noticed his daughters and started to cry which prompted Marcy to ask, "Hey little bro. What did you and mom do to dad?"

Once again before Darmon could respond it was Emily who interrupted, "Who fucking cares. Did he care about our suffering when we kept asking him to stop? Did he care about our feelings as he raped us?"

It was now only dawning on Edward how much he had fucked up as not even one member of his family stood up for him. He now knew how the hatred he had for Darmon was now subjected on him and he resigned himself to his fate. The one person he hated the most was the one person that could save him or condemn him. Edward looked up with a pleading look at his son, "Darmon, I know I've wronged you and I'm sorry. I can now relate to your pain and suffering. Can't you just let things go and I promise if we can go back to just being a family I won't ever take your girlfriends ever again?"

Marcy had a shocked look, "Fuck me, you've broken dad. High five, little bro!" Marcy raised her right hand, and Darmon struck his own hand against his sister's.

Darmon turned back towards his father before answering him, "Dad, all I had ever wanted was a father-son bond with you and when I thought you had finally acknowledged me, you used that to get my girlfriends and used mom or one of my sisters to do it."

Darmon then paused for a few moments before continuing, "You know after what you did and kept on doing, I wanted to punish you with something a lot more extreme than this. You can thank grandma for saving you from that. Here's a little truth for you, Sandy knew you were going to seduce her, just as I knew when I had another girlfriend that you would try to fuck her after sending me away."

Darmon watched his father's face, and he just sat with slumped shoulders, "Here's another truth for you. My last girlfriend before Sandy, I came home early from camp and saw you fucking her as you made her lick mom's pussy. I also saw my sisters in a daisy chain, which I suspect you forced them to do also."

Edward recalled that encounter and how he had used Darmon to force his family to do those sexual acts. Darmon continued, "Since, I'm in a good mood after making love to mom let me tell you another secret. Mom saw me and found me later in the park, I was upset and lashed out at mom until she calmed me down before letting me know what you've been up to and how you were using me to blackmail them. Mom told me how you wanted to corrupt your own mother and sisters and asked me to seduce them before you forced mom or my sisters to do it. I won't bore you with the details of how that went as you can already see grandma and my aunts are mine."

Just then Evelyn returned with Mary and Amber helping her. They found Evelyn's clothes and got her dressed. "Honey, we just come back to collect Evelyn's clothes and also to allow her to see her daughters before we return to your room," Mary said.

Evelyn went over to her daughters and kissed each on the lips and then went to her son and deeply French kissed him. Amber to the side, chuckled and asked her nephew, "Honey, what did you do to the poor girl resting on your bed? She keeps mumbling 'I love you, Darmon' You didn't make love to her right?"

Darmon looked over at his aunt and sighed, "No auntie, I didn't. I think Sandy is suffering from too many orgasms and I seem to be the primary cause of them as I made love to grandma, my aunts and then mom. It's something we will discuss later. Mom can confirm I haven't touched Sandy." Evelyn got dressed and nodded to show her son was telling the truth. After his aunts were satisfied, Evelyn led her sister-in-law's back to Darmon's bedroom.

"Oh, right, where were we," Darmon asked aloud to get his mind back on track. "I remember now," Darmon uttered before again directing his attention back to his father.

"So, dad you want to go back to being a family, right? We can't since then you would have to continue to hate me and you think mom will just allow herself to go back to you as if nothing happened? Would my sisters suddenly lose their memories of what you did to them? No dad, you destroyed our family and now must live with the consequences," Darmon continued from where he left off explaining how things went and are moving forward.

Edward knew this was the case and understood there was no coming back from this. Darmon watched his father and saw the defeated expression on his face. Edward decided to remain silent.

Darmon then looked over at his sisters and asked, "Do any of you wish to add or say something to dad?"

Marcy came forward, "Dad, why did you do it? I love mom and thought that when she came to me it was to bond as mother and daughter and do some fun things, after I came of age. When mom told me what you asked her to do, I rebelled against it until you used the one thing to blackmail me into doing your bidding."

Edward directed his gaze to look into his eldest daughter's eyes and corrected her, "Honey, it wasn't blackmail as I had nothing incriminating against you unless you and your mother had an intimate relationship but you continued to reject that, so I used the one thing that I thought could sway you. I used the threat against your brother to make sure both you and your mother bent to my will. Once, I knew this threat could make you do things you weren't comfortable with. I made you and your mother do lesbian acts and subjected you to the same enjoyable things I was doing to your mother, at least they were enjoyable for me. I used the love you had for your family, especially your brother to allow me to fuck you."

Edward knew that if he used the recordings he made from the cameras then he could use that as blackmail material, but then that would expose everyone to the knowledge of his hidden cameras and decided to play dumb.

Marcy anger grew even if her father was being truthful, she moved up to her father and slapped him hard. "You took my virginity that I wanted to give to someone special and all for what? So, you could boost your ego, knowing you couldn't tell anyone for fear of them calling the police and taking glee in forcing an incestuous relationship with me."

Edward looked at his daughter with sadness, "Yes, I was so happy that I got that. I was the first for your mother also. Then I was your first and first for Emily and Natasha later."

Marcy took a step back and then asked her father, "After you forced me into that relationship then why did you make me hate my brother by continuing to tell me that it was my brother's fault I was suffering?"

Edward took a deep breath, "I wanted Darmon to suffer. If you believed it was his fault, then you would resent him and it would have caused a rift in your relationship. I used that against you and him and manipulated you into doing whatever I wanted."

Emily and Natasha were listening to this conversation and each got very angry after each revelation. The sibling sisters now understood that Darmon was never at fault, and their resentment had been

misdirected; it should have always been directed at their father. Each sister in turn turned towards Darmon, hugged and French kissed him as they told him 'Sorry!'

Darmon smiled at his sisters, "It doesn't matter now. I think I have proven my worth through my actions. You should know that 'I love you' all equally."

Emily then piped in, "Dad, I hope you understand your lot in life now. You may have taken our virginities, but our brother has claimed our hearts and the rest of our bodies. We're members of 'family love' and Darmon is the 'head of the family' and as such we are bound to him in far more than just a physical relationship you had with us. Our brother is going to make love to each of us to seal are commitment towards each other as we all alongside mom will make you into a grandfather."

Darmon chuckled and added, "Hey, I've already cum in grandma and mom, I'm not sure I could cum in all of you today. Dad, with his screaming and shouting and thrashing about has me stressed out. Will you all settle for an orgasm each, with me using my cock, so that dad can see for himself that you're mine and I yours."

Natasha sighed, "Fine, but you owe an extra cum inside both Emily and me. It seemed our sister got greedy yesterday."

"Fine by me!" Darmon answered.

"Hey, that's not fair as I want to get pregnant as much as either of you do. We can discuss this later but for now Darmon how do you want to do this," Marcy asked acting hurt.

Darmon looked over at his father who knew what was coming and it finally dawned on him, on how Darmon had claimed every single female in the family. Edward after watching, hearing and smelling the sexual acts of how Darmon had taken his mother, sisters and his wife had resigned himself to witness Darmon now take his daughters. Edward thought he could control the situation but now conceded that he'd lost everything.

"How about my beautiful sisters, all get undressed and then get down on hands and knees before dad, so that he can see my cock go into each of you. I won't ask you do any lesbian acts as I feel that would be a reward for dad and not a punishment," Darmon ordered.

The sibling sisters all got undressed and got cushions for each to use as padding for their knees as they got down on all fours. Darmon moved behind his sisters' asses and started from eldest to youngest. Darmon grabbed Marcy's ass and fondled it and then leaned down to plant little kisses to

each cheek and then run his tongue from her rosebud down to her vagina. Marcy moaned in pleasure as her brother was giving her some oral before taking her pussy. "Yes, little brother. Let dad see how you're not afraid to lick my ass and eat my pussy. Dad would always get mom or my sisters to do it and rarely did it himself and if he did it was purely by accident."

Marcy felt her brother take her labia into his mouth and suck on each lip before taking both into his mouth and parting the lips with his tongue as if he was going to give a French kiss, in a way that would be true and instead of the upper lips he would be using her nether lips. Marcy started panting heavily and started to move her butt around to get more stimulation. Marcy's dominate side came out, "Darmon, if you don't move up and stick your cock into me then I'll fucking get angry. You have 10 seconds to comply and if you don't react fast enough then I will push you down and take your cock into me and not let you go until you cum inside me."

Darmon chuckled and moved up to position his cock at his eldest sister's vagina but didn't push in yet, "Is that a promise, big sis?" Marcy let out a small scream and was just about to get up and attack her brother when she felt her brother's hands on her hips and push his cock in hard and deep. Marcy screamed as she climaxed. Darmon grunted as his cock was gripped in the vice hold his sister's pussy had on him.

Emily and Natasha were getting horny and placed a hand on their own pussies to strum their clits to prime themselves for their brother. Darmon when he felt his sister relax the grip her pussy had on him a little, started with deep hard thrusts, this caused Marcy to whimper and moan loudly as her brother's glans was battering her cervix. Edward watched as Darmon made love to Marcy and got hard; Edward was still a man after all.

Darmon leaned down and took his sisters right wrist into his right hand and then her left wrist with his left hand before pulling both of her arms back which left Marcy only on her knees as her brother continued to pound her. Marcy was helpless under the assault of her brother and screamed as another powerful orgasm shot through her body. Darmon gently returned Marcy to floor so that his cock was still embedded in his sister, but she now was resting her head on her arms whilst she panted heavily. Darmon pulled out of his eldest sister with his cock still glistening with Marcy's juices, moved behind Emily.

"Emily, my sweet, gorgeous sister, do you need me to help prime you before I make love to you?" Darmon asked his sister.

Emily just shook her head and replied, "Watching you make Marcy cum like that and hearing you make love to her has me already so wet for you. Make love to me brother, I'm so horny right now."

Darmon used his cock to tease his sister a little by rubbing his glans over her pussy lips and used his cock as a bludgeon to slap her ass cheeks and clit. Emily was moaning in frustration until Darmon took pity on her and lined up his cock to his sister's vagina and pushed himself inside her in one single deep thrust. Emily let out a loud moan and uttered the words, "Fuck! You're so deep inside me."

Darmon had made Marcy cum twice and thought it only fair to make Emily cum twice also. Darmon used long deep thrusts and after 5 minutes of this Emily let out a wail as the first of her orgasms rocked her body. Darmon then held onto his sister's hips and pulled backwards so that Emily was now sitting on her brother's lap as Darmon pushed his hips upwards to continue making love to her. After a few minutes of this Emily recovered enough to take over for her brother and used her legs to pull up and drop down again onto her brother's cock. Emily reached her peak again after 5 minutes of the couple mating this way. Edward watched his middle daughter squirt as the orgasm had her spasm as if she was having a fit.

Darmon held onto his sister's breasts and fondled them as she came down from her climax. Emily looked at her brother over her shoulder and Darmon saw the glazed look in her eyes before he gave her a kiss on the cheek. Darmon pulling his sister off his cock and then turned towards Natasha and saw the excited look she was giving him.

Natasha giggled like a silly schoolgirl and was chanting, "My turn! My Turn! My Turn!"

This prompted Darmon to chuckle and respond, "Yes, my sexy sister. How about I eat that pretty pussy of yours first and then maybe you would like to ride me, so that dad could see my cock enter and exit you."

Natasha quickly moved to lay on her back on the cushions she had been kneeling on and spread her legs wide for her brother. Edward this time watched as Darmon built up the tension in Natasha, unlike how he had just dived in when he went down on his own mother. Darmon started at his sister's left foot, he kissed and licked each toe and then moved over to her ankles then up the inside of her legs, nibbling along the way. When Darmon got to her pussy, he kissed her pubic mound before going down her right legs until he ended up kissing and licking the toes of her right foot.

Emily giggled, "I think our brother has a foot fetish."

Marcy chuckled and shushed her, "Don't knock it until you've had our brother do it to you. You can see Natasha is already squirming."

Darmon left her feet and moved up to kiss his sister's stomach and put his wet tongue into her belly button which caused Natasha to moan and pant in arousal. Darmon looked at his sister's face and decided to take pity on her and moved his mouth over her pussy and gently blew his warm breath over her labia and clit. When Natasha felt the warmth of her brother's breath on her pussy, she lifted her butt off the cushion and used her right hand to grab her brother's head and mashed her cunt against her brother's face.

Darmon chuckled to himself and knew he had gotten his sister so hot that she took matters into her own hands or hand in this case. Darmon opened his mouth and attacked his sister's pussy, he would jab his tongue inside her vagina, then lick and suck on her labia. Natasha moaned in pleasure and was on the verge of having a strong orgasm when her brother moved down a little to kiss and probe his tongue against her rosebud. Natasha let out a scream of pleasure, in orgasm, when her brother managed to get the tip of his tongue inside her sphincter. Darmon pulled his tongue out and then went back to sucking on his sister's clit to prolong her orgasm.

Natasha after a few minutes had to push her brother's head away from her pussy and lay panting heavily on the cushion she was resting on. Natasha whilst panting and trying to catch her breath whispered, "Little brother, you can do that to me anytime you like. I'm yours forever!"

Darmon moved up and cuddled with his sister as she recovered with her head resting on his chest. Once, Darmon noted that his sister had recovered enough he turned to her and asked, "So, sis, you ready to make love now? You want to ride me, or should I make love to you in the missionary position?"

Natasha looked up at her brother and moved up to kiss him with a lot of passion and moved over to straddle him. Natasha continued to kiss her brother as she used her right hand to lift her brother's cock and line it up with her vagina before dropping down to impale herself fully on him. Natasha let out a loud moan into her brother's mouth and started the up down rocking motion and sometimes she would pause to grind her clit hard into the base of his cock. Darmon placed his hand on his sister's ass and helped guide her as they made love.

Darmon was getting close to an orgasm himself and knew that if he came inside Natasha the other two would get jealous, so tried hard to control himself. Natasha was close to an orgasm herself and started to take her brother's cock with longer deeper thrusts and she lasted another 10 stokes before her pussy clamped down hard on his cock. Natasha lifted her head up to the ceiling and let out a scream as the orgasm took over her body. Darmon lost the battle to not cum and fired his seed directly into the deepest part of his sister's vagina. When Natasha felt her brother's seed inside her it set off another orgasm where Natasha collapsed, twitching, on to her brother's chest.

Edward watched and noticed the white foam at the base of Darmon's cock and knew that Darmon had just seeded his sister. This was too much for Edward, throughout the day, he had witnessed

Darmon make love to his grandmother, his aunts, his own mother and now each of his sisters; Edward's cock exploded and let out a feeble load.

Marcy noticed her father cum and laughed at him, "Dad, got too excited and came over himself."

Emily looked over at her father and laughed also before looking back at her siblings making love and then noticed Darmon's cum leaking out of her sister and she let out a scream of annoyance, "Natasha, you bitch. You made our brother cum inside you. That's cheating and not fair at all!"

Darmon lifted himself up but stayed deeply embedded in Natasha, "Emily, how about you get an exclusive night with me soon and I will promise to only let my seed enter your womb."

Emily looked over at her brother and asked, "That's a promise, right?"

Darmon smiled at his sister and responded, "Yes, it's a promise." Emily immediately cheered up.

Darmon looked over at his father, "Dad, get a good look at my sisters as this will be the last time you ever seem them like this." Edward didn't respond or even look up from his lap and seeing his shame as his cum spotted his pubic mound.

Darmon then turned towards Marcy and Emily, "Marcy, Emily. Please get dressed and then help your sister here before heading towards my bedroom and sending Sandy here please." Darmon pulled out of Natasha with a pop and watched as his cum started to ooze out of his sister's vagina.

Marcy and Emily got dressed and helped their sister get up off the floor and get dressed also. Darmon, also, decided to get dressed and wait for Sandy to join him on the couch. The room reeked of sex, and he got up to open more windows to air out the room and just got back to the couch when he saw Sandy, fully dressed, entering the living room. "Sandy, I hope your little rest has helped relax and recharge you a little," Darmon said as he held out his hand to help Sandy sit down next to him.

"Yes, I'm feeling a lot better. Your mom and aunts are very protective of you and asked me so many questions," Sandy stated.

"I would ask you what they asked but that can probably wait until another time. It's time if you still are okay with going through with this," Darmon asked to confirm if Sandy was still wanting to reveal her secret.

Instead of answering Darmon, Sandy took a deep breath and then turned towards Edward who still had his head down. "Edward, can you please lift your head up and look at me," Sandy asked Edward.

Edward looked up at Sandy and then said in a voice with a little edge to it, "Why? He's already fucked my mom, my sisters, my wife and my daughters. You want me to witness him fucking you also? My world is already destroyed, so showing me what I was about to get is the last nail in my coffin."

Sandy corrected Edward, "No, Darmon didn't fuck his women, he made love to them and they to him. As for him making love to me, that is something I would love to happen but can't..."

Sandy paused a little and just as Edward was about to ask, 'Why?' she continued, "I'm going to tell you a story. There was once an evil man who didn't care for his only son and did everything he could to either ignore him or make his life a living hell. The young man had three doting sisters and a doting mother, but the evil man took them away from him. Every time, the young man found happiness it would be torn from him by the evil man. It was only by chance that the young man found out what his father the evil man was doing and decided on a plan."

Sandy continued her tale, "After the last time the evil man took something from the young man, he decided to get revenge and punish the evil man. He decided to take everything the evil man had for himself and succeeded but that wasn't enough for the young man, as he still wanted to punish the evil man. So, he came up with a plan that would be a sure-fire way to punish this evil man. He asked his aunts to find a suitable person to pose as his new girlfriend. The young man alongside his girlfriend came to his birth home to rescue the young man's mother and leave his girlfriend there for he knew the evil man would try to seduce her."

Sandy looked over at Edward to check for any reactions to her story before continuing, "The young man's girlfriend knew this was going to happen and sort of allowed it knowing her boyfriend was coming back to rescue her. You see the young man's girlfriend can't have sex with him because her ex-boyfriend was a piece of shit and infected her with HIV."

Sandy reverted to herself, "You see Edward, had you had sex with me then you would have contracted HIV, but I didn't want your puny thing near my pussy, mouth or ass. There were other ways I could infect you and that was to allow my blood to mix with your and enter your system. I bit the side of my mouth and bit your lower lip as you forced a kiss on me. Edward, you should probably be very careful who you fuck now and would strongly suggest make sure you go and get checked for the HIV infection."

Edward's mouth dropped open in shock, and he tried multiple time to speak but nothing would come out. Darmon looked over at his father and laughed, "You see dad, I knew you couldn't resist trying to get another of my girlfriends, so came up with this plan. If you don't believe me, Sandy can produce evidence that she is attending a sexual health clinic and has ongoing bold tests. Since, I've been here, have you seen me kiss or touch Sandy in any sexual way and did you hear me and your sister tell her that they either can't touch her or allow her to touch them?"

Edward tried to recall all Darmon's interactions with Sandy whilst he was there to view them and concluded that he hadn't seen any intimate moments. Edward started to panic and started to thrash and fight against his restraints again, "YOU BITCH! WHAT THE FUCK HAVE YOU DONE TO ME?"

Sandy sighed and responded in a calm voice, "Now! Now! Edward. You brought this upon yourself because you were thinking with the wrong head. Darmon told me that Evelyn believed that you felt threatened by him and it's only your own actions that have made him succeed over you. All you had to do was leave Darmon with his girlfriend, he wouldn't have been any the wiser with regards to your actions with your wife and you raping your daughters."

Edward started to hyperventilate and knew everything that Sandy had just said was true. Edward knew his own hubris was the root cause here, he believed with the money he had access to made him untouchable. Edward believed that his threat to disown, beat up or have Darmon killed would keep his wife and daughters in line. Edward now understood his folly and the biggest mistake he made was getting greedy and fucking Darmon's girlfriends.

Darmon looked over at his father and made a comment, "Dad, the rest of the family knows Sandy is infected with HIV and agreed to this plan to infect you. Even if mom and my sisters returned home, they would avoid you like the plague and wouldn't share your bed ever again. I would advise you to not sleep with anyone else, unless you want to infect them also. If you did that and they found out, then expect some lawsuits filed against you. With this I have now taken everything away from you. I have taken the money that you flaunted, I have taken all the pussy you forced for yourself away from you and potentially any future pussy from you."

Edward screamed and had tears in his eyes, "YOU FUCKING BASTARD. HOW DARE YOU DO THIS TO ME? I'M GOING TO KILL YOU!"

Darmon sighed, "If you didn't hate me so much and threatened to kill me even before today then things may have turned out different. Don't get me wrong, I would still have grandma, my aunts, mom and my sisters but you would have been able to live a happy life even if you didn't have your family around. I wouldn't have come up with this plan, and you wouldn't have been infected."

Edward continued to curse, shout and thrash around as Darmon got out his phone and sent a text message to his grandmother and another to Karl and Tony to return. "Sandy, will you go to the

bedroom and fetch my mom and aunts please?" Darmon asked. Sandy nodded, got up and walked towards the bedroom to fetch Darmon's family.

Sandy returned with Evelyn, Mary and Amber at almost the same time as June and Lauren entered with Karl and Tony a step behind. Edward continued to curse, shout and try to break his restraints.

Lauren noticed Edward was naked and cuffed to the armchair. Lauren had an expression of distaste and concern on her face which Darmon noticed. "I'm sorry, auntie Lauren for this sight. Dad was just about to rape Sandy when the security team detained him and brought him here and then secured him. I've called each member of his family to get some answers for his actions and some of the things dad learned have had a negative effect on him. Would you please administer whatever you were going to give him to calm him down and sedate him for a few hours," Darmon addressed Lauren to explain things.

Lauren looked over at June who nodded her head to do as Darmon asked. Lauren sighed and brought out a few things from a bag she had carried in with her. Edward saw something was about to happen and panicked. "Karl, Tony can you please help hold dad down, so that auntie Lauren doesn't hurt him," Darmon asked the security team.

Karl and Tony grabbed Edward and pushed him back into the armchair to prevent him from thrashing about. Lauren came closer with a needle attached to a syringe that contained some sort of substance and Edward's eyes got very large and had a frightened look on his face. Karl helped straighten and hold his arm out so that Lauren could administer whatever was inside the injection. Lauren then administered another injection with a different substance. Within minutes, Edward was out cold.

Darmon looked at Lauren and asked, "Auntie Lauren, how long will dad be out for?"

Lauren once again looked at June before turning her gaze back to Darmon then answered, "Anywhere, between 2 to 5 hours."

Darmon smiled at Lauren, "Thanks, auntie Lauren." Darmon then directed his attention to his sister Marcy and his grandmother, "Marcy, can you please take auntie Lauren to a vacant guest room. Grandma, please go with them then stay with her. Marcy, you can come back if you want to."

Marcy and June nodded before leading Lauren away. Darmon then addressed his mother, "Mom, can you get a pair of dad's shorts and a vest or t-shirt?" Evelyn nodded and went to Edward's bedroom to get those items.

Darmon then turned towards Karl and Tony, "Dads, going to be out cold for a while and we need to release him from his restraints since we need to get him dressed before we leave for the tattoo parlour, you can get the address from aunt Mary and then use Satnav to meet us there. Dad will be traveling in your car."

Karl and Tony went into action to release the cuff's Edward was bound with and were just finishing when Marcy and Evelyn returned. After Edward was clothed, they all got into their cars with Sandy going with Mary and Amber. All cars arrived and parked up at the tattoo parlour 10 minutes later. Karl and Tony carried Edward in and placed him on the table that the artist directed them to.

"So, what type of tattoo we doing here?" The tattoo artist asked.

Darmon stepped forward, "Hello, my name is Darmon. I won't bother introducing everyone here but the one on the table is Edward. You see, as well as a prank I am punishing Edward for transgressions against many people; I won't go into detail about that as I don't feel it is relevant. I was thinking of the universal stop sign, you know the one that is red and has the circle cut at the edges on eight sides. Instead of the 'STOP' wording, I would like for you to draw a small penis with an 'X' superimposed on the penis and the words 'HIV Positive' under it."

Darmon heard Sandy gasp and both of his aunt's chuckle. Darmon looked over at his sisters, and all had open mouths, he wasn't sure if this was in awe of him or shocked at what he requested.

The tattoo artist chuckled, "Not sure what sins this man has committed but man you certainly take it to the next level. Names, Buck by the way."

Darmon turned back to Buck, "I would like one on his forehead and the other just above his pubic area, this one can be larger. I assume a deposit has already been paid, but should you require more then let me know."

Buck chuckled again before moving his gear to start. The tattoo artist was quick and finished the tattoo on Edward's forehead in about 30 minutes. The one on Edward's lower body took longer and Evelyn had to pull up and down her soon to be ex-husbands clothing. This one took the artist 90 minutes to complete.

Darmon and everyone else were surprised that Edward stayed unconscious throughout the branding. Darmon paid the additional cost for his father's branding and they all returned home. Darmon directed Karl and Tony to take his father to his room and had both guards take turns outside his bedroom door and if his father left the room one or both were to accompany him.

Darmon then went to the living room and sat down, the exhaustion of the day finally catching up with him. Slowly, in a trickle his family came and sat with him in the living room. Lauren came in with June who were the final pair to enter. Everyone remained silent until Darmon broke it, "I'm tired and hope this day is finally coming to an end."

June was the one that asked concerned about things going to plan, "Darmon, sweetie. Did the branding go as planned?" June knew she needed to act as a grandmother instead of lover due to Lauren being present.

Mary and Amber giggled. "Yeah, mom it went off just fine. Remind me to never to piss off my nephew, I would hate to be on the receiving end of his punishment," Mary answered for her nephew.

"Well, it was something that Edward had coming. He should never have tried to rape Sandy here and fucked all of Darmon's other girlfriends," Amber added.

"So is it over, can we go back home tomorrow," Lauren asked.

Darmon looked over at Lauren, "Almost, auntie Lauren. Just a few loose ends and we can head back the day after tomorrow. I'm sorry, if I'm keeping you away from your family and your life back home."

Lauren smiled at Darmon, "No worries, this whole thing has me on edge and can wait a day or two."

Darmon looked over at all the women around him before remembering no one had had lunch and it was diner time now, "Mom, can you order something to be delivered as we've all missed lunch and it's now diner time. I suspect all of us are starving."

"Of course, Baby," Evelyn answered. Evelyn used her phone to order various Chinese dishes and pizzas.

Sandy was the only one who sat next to Darmon holding his hand while his mother sat the other side of him. Sandy was the least likely to draw attention to their special relationship if Lauren looked over since she was posing as Darmon's girlfriend. In reality, Sandy was actually very happy to be this close to Darmon and even holding his hand. Every time, Darmon would give her hand a little squeeze, she felt her pussy leak and her panties get soaked in her juices.

The food delivery was almost at the same time, just as the Chinese delivery driver was leaving the pizza delivery driver was arriving. The food was placed on the table, Marcy went to the cellar to bring back two bottles of expensive wine whilst Emily and Natasha went to the kitchen to get plates, cutlery and wine glasses. No one gave a damn if Darmon or his sisters were of age to drink and everyone were enjoying themselves. Karl and Tony took turns coming to get food and water only as they were on the job. Everyone relaxed as small groups formed to chat, giggle and laugh. Some food was left for Edward after he woke up.

Edward woke up groggy and stumbled to his bathroom to open the sink tap then lean down to drink some water. He didn't trust his legs to take him to the kitchen to get some ice-cold water. He was dressed in a t-shirt and shorts and couldn't recall when he got dressed. His forehead and lower stomach hurt a lot. Edward raised a hand to his forehead and saw it was covered in a large dressing and whilst still leaning over the sink felt his stomach area and felt a dressing there also.

Edward quickly stood up which made his head spin a little as he raised his t-shirt to expose the large bandage dressing on his stomach, he winced in pain as he pressed his fingers to his stomach. Edward's immediate thoughts was that someone had performed surgery on him to remove an organ then felt the pain on his forehead. Edward looked in the bathroom mirror to see the large dressing on his forehead, he winced in pain as he tried to peel the side of the dressing before giving up.

Edward made his way to his bedroom door and opened it. Karl looked as the door opened, "Good evening, sir. How can I help you this evening?"

Edward was stunned and looked at Karl as if the security team member had two heads. "WHO THE FUCK ARE YOU?" Edward screamed.

Karl moved to block the way out and replied calmly, "The name is Karl, sir. I've been asked to keep you confined to your room. If you're hungry I can have my colleague, bring you dinner. Chinese and pizza are on the menu today."

Edward tried to move past Karl who blocked all his attempts. "THIS IS MY FUCKING HOUSE. I CAN GO WHEREVER THE FUCK I LIKE," Edward continued to shout. Then he recalled how he was manhandled and secured to the armchair and took a step back. "YOU... YOU'RE THE FUCKING CUNT THAT TIED ME UP!" Edward stuttered as she continued to shout.

Karl took a step forward and Edward backed away before falling over his own foot and landed hard on his rump. "Be careful sir, if you would be so kind as to return to your bed or couch and I will

arrange for your dinner to arrive," Karl continued to calmly ask Edward. Karl left Edward sat on the floor as he closed the bedroom door and then tapped his earpiece, "Tony, can you please advise Mr. Darmon that his father is awake and can you please arrange for some food to be delivered." Karl heard Tony acknowledge his message and then went back to sitting on a chair just outside the bedroom door.

Tony went to look for Darmon and found him chatting to his mother and his sisters. "Sir, your father is awake and Karl has asked for some food to be taken to his room."

"Thank you, Tony!" Darmon nodded in acknowledgment as he voiced his thanks. Tony after delivering the message went back to the living room to relax.

"Mom, will you prepare a plate of food for dad and then come with me to his room," Darmon asked his mother. Evelyn nodded and went to add some food she knew Edward would like onto a plate and the half-finished bottle of wine with a fresh wine glass.

Mother and son went to Evelyn's former bedroom and Karl stood up as they approached. Karl opened the door to let Darmon and his mother in then closed the door behind them.

Edward watched as his wife and son entered, he was about to curse and shout but thought better of it and remained silent. Darmon chuckled, "Wow, dad can be quiet when he needs to. Have you now resigned yourself to how things are now?"

Edward was yet again about to shout and curse but one look at Evelyn's face made him close his mouth. "You must be hungry, Edward. I've brought some of your favourites and some wine to wash it all down with. I'm glad you're keeping your temper in check."

Edward looked at the plate of food in front of him and his stomach rumbled, but instead of going for the food he took the wine bottle and just tipped the end to his lips and drank a lot. "You might want to eat something also to recover and keep a level head," Evelyn advised.

Edward started to eat and after taking the edge of his hunger asked, "What have you done to me?"

Darmon looked over at his father whilst he sat next to his mother and put his hand up the front of her dress and into her panties. Edward watched this and decided to close his eyes but heard this wife

giggle and moan as her son put his fingers inside her. "You can take off the dressings tomorrow and you will see for yourself. If you think you could take me in a fight, then understand that Karl is just outside that door and one shout from me will have you cuffed to your bed for the rest of the night."

Edward realized this wasn't an idle threat and just continued to eat and take small sips of the wine directly from the bottle. Darmon then pulled his mother's face towards him and kissed her with a deep French kiss as he moved his fingers inside his mother's pussy. Evelyn whimpered trying to suppress the moans she wanted to let out as Karl was just behind the bedroom door. Darmon continued to French kiss and finger his mother until she had an orgasm and moaned loudly into her son's mouth.

Darmon broke the kiss with his mother and then chuckled as his mother slumped against him. "Do you see that, Edward? Our son, made me cum so effortlessly," Evelyn panted trying to catch her breath after her orgasm.

Darmon pulled his fingers out of his mother and made a show of licking and sucking on each digit that had been inside his mother, "Mom, you taste divine. I'll never get bored with our sex life." Evelyn swooned with pleasure at hearing her son's words.

Darmon then looked over at his father who looked back with pure hatred on his face, "Dad, I'm not doing this out of malice like you did to me and I won't openly call you a 'cuckold' as you that would imply you are still having sex with mom. I'm doing this to prove my dominance over you. Where once you controlled all aspects of my life, I now control everything you held dear, especially the money you held over mom, my sisters and me. For now, you're confined to this bedroom and if you have a valid reason to leave then either Karl, Tony or both will accompany you. I will not have you or your presence threaten my women, my family and those I care about which includes Sandy."

Darmon waited a few seconds to see if his father would say anything then looked over at his mother, "Mom, shall we leave dad until tomorrow as I expect another conversation is to be had." Darmon got up and held out his hand for his mother, who grabbed it and fell into her son's embrace.

Edward was witness to his complete utter defeat as his wife placed a hand on her son's face and said with total conviction, "Baby, I love you and commit myself to you in mind, body and soul. Call it a woman's intuition but I feel you got me pregnant today and I know it might feel like a cliché but it's what I truly feel."

Darmon chuckled, "If it's true then fuck it being cliché, I love you also and it would bring me great joy in having a child with you." Darmon heard his father gag and cough on some food he had in his mouth.

As mother and son were leaving, Edward asked, "How long will I be confined here?"

"I'd say until we leave to head to our new home. Probably until the day after tomorrow," Evelyn answered.

Edward turned his head to look at his wife, "Evelyn, come back to your senses. You're my wife. There's still time for you to come back and we can do things differently. I can forgive you for sleeping with Darmon and understood he did that because I fucked his girlfriends. I'll take you back and all you would have to do is abort the baby Darmon planted in you."

Evelyn broke out of her son's embrace and took a step to the table holding the empty wine bottle and picked it up to smash against Edward's head. Darmon barely managed to grab a hold of his mother and pull her back. "YOU WOULD ABORT A LIFE GROWING INSIDE ME? YOU'LL FORGIVE ME! WHAT ABOUT ALL THE FUCKING THINGS YOU MADE ME DO?"

Edward didn't get the chance to respond as the bedroom door quickly swung open and Karl was ready to go into action, depending on the situation, "Everything okay in her sir, ma'am!"

Evelyn took a few swipes back and forth with the wine bottle and then let go trying to hit Edward's head. The wine bottle hit the couch next to Edward's head and a few drops of wine splattered on him. Edward had never seen Evelyn this angry before and it not only scared him; it even had him aroused a little.

Darmon laughed, "Yes, Karl. It seems that dad said something that mom didn't like. We're leaving now."

Darmon lifted his mother off her feet and carried her outside the room and just before leaving he turned to look at his father, "We'll talk again tomorrow."

Once the door was closed, Darmon put his mother down on the floor. She looked at the door with Karl now standing guard and huffed before turning around and walking back to the living room. Once Evelyn entered the living room, her daughters immediately saw her mood, and each went to find out what had happened and to comfort their mother.

Darmon addressed the group, "Tony, you can use the couch here in the living room and alternate between you and Karl on who guards dad's bedroom. Everyone else go to their own room or find a guest room to sleep in. This has been a tiring day for everyone."

Sandy then piped in, "Oh, umm. Am I sleeping in your room tonight, Darmon." This prompted, all the females, except Lauren, in the room to look at Sandy.

Darmon smiled, "Of course, you're my girlfriend, so why wouldn't you be sleeping next to me."

June looked at her grandson, "Darmon, you know the rules."

Darmon looked at his grandmother, "Yes, I do and you have nothing to fear as nothing will happen." Then he looked over at Lauren who had a puzzled look on her face before adding, "Sandy and I will not touch or have sex for fear of keeping you all up with any loud noises."

Darmon fully knew the rules, and he wasn't about to break any and June already knew he wouldn't but had to remind her grandson to re-enforce them just in case.

Everyone then went off to sleep as they expect it would be yet another busy day ahead of them. True to his word, Sandy knew that until another negative result test she couldn't let her feeling get the better of her. Both Darmon and Sandy slept at least a foot apart with Sandy dreaming of being invited to 'family love' and Darmon had dreams of his mother's getting larger with their child growing inside her.

Edward cursed that he wasn't in his study as he could then spy on everyone but sighed when he recalled how angry Evelyn had gotten. 'Fuck had she always been this hot,' he thought. He continued to see how he could get out of this with the upper hand and asked himself, 'How can I get Evelyn and my daughters back.' No immediate plan came to mind, so he thought it best to see how things played out and wait for his chance.

Sleep did eventually come to Edward.

The next morning, he awoke later than he expected and the first thing he did was go to the bathroom to relieve himself and then wash up before examining the dressing on his forehead. He carefully peeled the dressing away and then bent down to wash his face before straightening and looking in the mirror. What Edward saw nearly made him faint, he quickly raised his t-shirt, took it off

and threw it to the floor. He undid the bandage and when he saw the larger version of the same tattoo on his forehead, he let out a scream and did pass out.

Tony opened the door and found Edward collapsed to the floor. Tony lifted him up and dragged him to the bed before ensuring he was lying flat on his back. Tony tapped the earpiece and let Karl know what was happening, "Karl, can you please inform Mr Darmon that his father is awake but has fainted after exposing the tattoo's."

Karl acknowledged the message and Tony went back to guarding the room. Karl did inform Darmon who then asked his grandmother and mother to accompany him to Edward's bedroom.

Tony opened the door for them to let them in then closed it again. Evelyn saw Edward flat in his back and was tempted to go over and slap him awake, but then that would mean she had to get close to him. Instead, Darmon led both his grandmother and mother to the couch and sat between them waiting for Edward to come around.

June opened the conversation, "Darling, you didn't do anything with Sandy right?"

Darmon sighed, "Grandma, I know the rules and will never break them. What I have with you and everyone else is too important to me. I love you and wouldn't do anything to jeopardize that." Darmon saw the relief on his grandmother's face.

"I only suggested that to keep auntie Lauren clueless and not thinking something weird was going on as Sandy is supposed to be my girlfriend," Darmon continued.

Darmon then turned towards his grandmother and brought his lips to hers and gave her a very passionate kiss, "I love you, grandma. You were my first and that holds a very dear place in my heart."

June's emotions got the better of her and clung to her grandson as she went back to French kissing her grandson. Once the kiss ended, June was panting hard and Evelyn was moaning at the sheer amount of love she saw between Darmon and his grandmother. Evelyn looked at June and then leaned over to kiss her mother-in-law also with their tongues dancing in and out of each other's mouths. It was at this same time that Edward came to and when he looked over, he saw his wife in a deep kiss with his mother.

Edward had to blink a few times to make sure he wasn't dreaming before almost shouting, "Fucking stop, will you. It's bad enough seeing Darmon fuck you both, I now must see my wife and mother making out also?"

June broke the kiss with her daughter-in-law and turned to Edward, "Edward, Darmon didn't fuck us, he made love to us. As for what you just saw that is a new rule that Darmon added to 'family love'. I won't tell you those rules as they aren't relevant to you. You know all the money you had access to was only allowed because of me, right? I am the matriarch of this family. I see you've seen the branding on your forehead and the one on your lower stomach. Let me tell you that Sandy is infected with HIV and she passed it on to you when she mixed her blood with your yesterday. You thought Sandy was horny and wanted some rough sex when she bit your lip."

June paused a few seconds to let Edward take in what she just said before continuing, "Sandy had bit the side of her own mouth to draw blood and allowed her blood to mix with yours. It's in your system now."

Edward's emotions got the better of him and he shouted, "WHY? WHY THE FUCK WOULD YOU AGREE TO DO THIS TO YOUR OWN SON?"

Tony opened the door and poked his head in, "Everything okay in here, sir?"

Darmon answered, "Yes, Tony if either myself, grandma or mother shouts your name then rush in immediately and detain dad. Otherwise, please ignore any shouting that you may hear."

Tony nodded and then closed the door again. June looked over at her son, "Why you ask because you're a very bad son. Would you have changed if I asked you to? I doubt that very much as each time Evelyn or your daughters asked you ignored them. You needed to learn a painful lesson and one that will curtail your fetishes. At first, I was against any harsh punishment, but Darmon and the others convinced me it had to happen. The only thing I asked Darmon was not to kill you and anything else could be done."

June then decided to expand and tell Edward some truth mixed in with some lies, "Would you believe me when I tell you that it was your own daughters that wanted their brother to kill you and end their suffering forever. Your sisters wanted Darmon to cut off your cock and balls and make you into a sissy as the only sex you could ever get afterwards would have been to lick and suck a cock or pussy. They wanted you to never have sex ever again. I think what Darmon has done is the least of what could have been done to you. With you now being infected with HIV you could still have sex with a condom on. Mind you it will never be with your soon to be ex-wife, me, your sisters or your daughters." June told her son all this in a calm voice.

"The money you had access to is now being restricted, I will allow just enough for household maintenance, food and drink and enough to get checkups and treatment for your infection. You're free to use that money however you see fit but know this house is still in my name and if I find out you let it fall apart due to lack of maintenance then I will take it back and kick you to the curb; just as you kept promising to do you Darmon. I can't force you to go for checkup's or get treatment for your infection but know that I will mourn your death and move on."

Edward finally understood how much he had fucked up when his own mother didn't care if he lived or died. Edward had lost his wife, his daughters and possibly his own life if he didn't manage things going forward.

Darmon then spoke up, "You know dad, never once had I thought bad of you as I was growing up. I knew you were a busy man and thought one day we can have a proper father son bond until I learned of your betrayal and even thought of ending my own life believing that no one loved me. You had turned mom and my sisters against me. It was mom that asked me to go to grandmas. There I found my purpose and found love with my grandma and aunts. When I engineered the rescue of my sisters, I had an uphill struggle to change their views of me but in the end, I managed it. My sisters love me and I them."

"I left mom alone with you with a promise I would come back to rescue her. Mom told me how aggressive you were with her and how you tried to force her to do things for your own benefit. Well, you already know that I managed to rescue mom, but I had to leave Sandy here, whilst I made mom mine. Dad, you thought mom was submissive, but she isn't, mom was just scared of you and what you would do to her or your daughters, as you had started to beat her. All mom needed was to make her own mind on how to progress in a relationship and didn't want to be forced into anything that would only please her partner. I gave her that freedom and mom willingly accepted my love and I hers," Darmon continued.

"We could have been a happy family. You would have been invited to become 'head of the family' and I would have been none the wiser. Your own actions sealed your doom. I'm willing to let you out of this room, if you will behave without making my family and my women upset in anyway. No trying to change their minds or leering at them. Tomorrow, me and my family will leave, and you would be free to use this house. I pray that none of us ever meet again or you cause further trouble for us."

Edward remained silent as he didn't know how to react to everything he had been told and got up after Darmon, his mother and wife left to go shower and get dressed to leave his bedroom.

June and Evelyn decided to go and see what the rest of the family were doing and prepare for lunch. Darmon went off to his father's study.

Darmon sat in his father's chair and tapped the keyboard on his father's laptop and was surprised to see it was unlocked. Darmon thought back on how his father would get angry with anyone else in his study and thought that maybe this was the reason that his father didn't worry about locking his laptop as no one would dare enter without him present or with his permission.

Darmon started to look around his father's laptop. He knew from the recording that his mother sent him that his father had made recordings of his perversions and decided to find and securely erase them.

Darmon slammed his fist down hard on his father's desk as he opened an application and found live stream of nearly all the rooms in the house.

Chapter 13

Darmon took out his phone and took screenshots of the various camera feeds, as he thought it would make it easier to find the hidden cameras. Darmon's anger was boiling over, and he made a note to search his father's laptop for videos and also to see if any might have been saved to the cloud.

Darmon stormed out of his father's study and his first stop was to return to his father's bedroom. Once he got there, he order the current security team member on duty, "Tony, please do not let my father out of his room until I return."

Tony just shrugged his shoulders and acknowledged with, "Of course, sir!"

Next Darmon went looking for his grandmother and mother. Darmon found both in the kitchen. When June and Evelyn both looked at Darmon, they could instantly see something was wrong. "Grandma, mom could you both please follow me to dad's study."

June could tell something was up in her grandson's voice and ordered her daughters and granddaughters, "Mary, Amber and my beautiful granddaughters can you please continue making lunch as it seems that Darmon needs to talk to his mother and I."

June's daughters and granddaughters acknowledged the request. June and Evelyn then followed Darmon to Edward's study.

Darmon went over and sat in his father's chair. "Mom, did you know dad has hidden cameras throughout the house?"

Evelyn's shocked face told Darmon everything he needed to know, "What?"

Darmon spun the laptop to face both his grandmother and mother. June and Evelyn looked at the screen and saw images of their girls in the kitchen cooking, and another showed Lauren in the shower with her hand clearly in her pussy, it wasn't clear if she was washing herself there or playing with herself. Another showed Edward in his bathroom jerking his cock.

"I wasn't accusing you of anything, mom. It's just that you sent me a video that proved what dad was doing," Darmon stated.

Evelyn looked at her son, "I know baby. Edward has videos like that on his phone and the one I sent to you was one that he shared with me in the hopes it would make me horny so he could take advantage of me."

June was shocked into silence until her anger pushed her forward, "Darling, can you see if your father has saved any of the feeds and see if he might have uploaded them someplace?"

Darmon turned the laptop back towards him then responded, "Sure!"

Darmon looked at the settings for the live stream cameras and found the location that the videos were being saved to. He navigated to that folder and saw hundreds of saved videos that varied in file size. Darmon opened a more recent one and the video played of Sandy in her room getting ready and naked. Darmon moved the laptop towards his grandmother and mother so they could also see. The shock on their faces was evident. Darmon clicked on the next video and witnessed Sandy this time in bed, with her clearly masturbating. Darmon stopped that recording and selected another from yesterday and it showed June and Lauren in the guest room together and having a conversation with the clear sounds of the women talking. It showed that secrets or information could then be used against others.

"Darling, enough," June asked her grandson. Darmon stopped the playback of the recording.

"I'm not sure how long this has been going on for, but I'm pretty sure that Dad has been recording all his interactions with you, Mom and my sisters. The fool thought he could, probably, use this later as blackmail material but has in the end documented his own crimes," Darmon said.

"Not sure that exposing this would benefit us as he could also claim knowledge of our own incestuous relationships; which the authorities would have to investigate," Evelyn pointed out.

Darmon sighed, "I can securely erase these and then go around removing all the hidden cameras and if we eventually do want to keep dad contained later, I could copy all these videos to a personal private encrypted cloud storage before securely erasing them and removing the cameras. We still need to confront dad about this though."

June also let out a deep breath, "Darling, I know. Make a copy of the files and erase them from his laptop. Then, find and disable all the hidden cameras whilst I think of a suitable punishment for my wayward son."

"Okay, Grandma. Mom, can you please go and let Mary, Amber, my sisters and Sandy know to be careful until I dismantle his spying network," Darmon asked.

June and Evelyn both left Darmon to start on his tasks. Darmon setup a personal private encrypted cloud storage and started the transfer and then used the photo's he took to go around to locate the cameras.

June and Evelyn returned to the kitchen just as lunch was nearly ready. The women in the kitchen instantly knew something was wrong and were each just about to ask 'What?' when June held up her hand. The women's voices went silent.

"Darmon just found out that Edward has been secretly recording everyone using hidden cameras in nearly every room in this house," June stated.

There was a hushed silence until a chorus of voices suddenly shouted, "What?" June held up her hand again for silence and it took a few moments before the women settled.

"Darmon is taking care of them and the existing recordings. He's going to go around and remove all the cameras and then Mom and I, along with Darmon, are going to have stern words with Edward," Evelyn told everyone.

"For now, assume that Edward has recordings of all of you. Sandy, the ones we saw were of you getting ready for your pretend date with Edward and later of you masturbating in bed," June flatly told the women.

Sandy gasped and remembered how she had masturbated thinking of Darmon and blushed at the memory.

Darmon made sure the transfer was proceeding and then went over to his own bedroom and found the hidden camera and pulled it out. He found and removed the one in his bathroom also. He only managed to find the ones in his bedroom before he was called to lunch.

Darmon sat at the head of the table with his grandmother at the other end. June asked, "Darmon, sweetie. How's the task going?"

Darmon looked over at Lauren before answering, "Fine, Grandma. My bedroom's clear now and will move over to the others soon."

Lauren looked at June and then towards Darmon, "What's going on?"

Darmon chuckled, "Nothing to worry about, Auntie Lauren. I've been tasked to make sure each bedroom is checked for any personal items that we want to take with us back home; as going forward we all intend to move there and make it our new home. Of course, we hope never to come back here and Dad will stay here."

"Oh, okay. So, we're still set to leave tomorrow, right?" Lauren asked.

"Yes, Auntie Lauren. That is still the plan," Darmon confirmed.

Everyone finished lunch and the contents of the plate that was going to go to Edward was promptly dumped into the waste bin as Mary muttered, "The bastard can starve for all I care." Darmon heard

this and scanned to make sure Lauren had left with June to the living room before he came up behind his aunt and moved to press himself against her with his arms wrapping around her waist.

"Auntie, don't let it stress you as I, Mom and Grandma plan to further punish Dad," Darmon whispered to Mary then sighed, "Dad, keeps on fucking up and who knows what else we may uncover. I promise this will not go unpunished."

Mary leaned back into her nephew and sighed, "Honey, I know. Our mothers aren't going to take this lightly."

Darmon moved his lips down to kiss her cheek and whisper into her ear, "I love you, Aunt Mary." Darmon then placed his hands over his aunts lower stomach area and gently rubbed there, "And, I love our unborn child growing inside you."

Mary was overcome with emotions and brought her lips to her nephews and kissed him, "Oh, honey. You have no idea how much that means to me."

Darmon let go of his aunt and took a step back, "Sorry, I would love to continue this, but I have a big task ahead of me. I need to remove all the cameras and then confront Dad. I plan to get you and Aunt Amber into our bed soon." Mary looked into his eyes with love and simply nodded. Mary knew her nephew didn't play favourites with any of them but understood that her nieces and sister-in-law were trying to get pregnant also; she and her sister were already pregnant and were willing to let his other women take priority, within reason.

Darmon went room by room to find and remove the cameras and when he had them all removed, he went back to his father's study to check all live feeds were now down. The task had taken Darmon nearly two hours to complete. Darmon checked on the progress of the transfer and found it had completed, so he downloaded a secure erasure application and started the process. He waited for an estimated completion time and saw that it was going to take 5 hours to complete as the process involved overwriting the file with different patterns before deleting the file.

Darmon, when satisfied that things were progressing well, went off to find his mother and grandmother, he found them in the living room and motioned for his grandmother and mother to follow him. June and Evelyn followed Darmon as he initially went over to his father's study to retrieve the cameras he removed, to take with him when confronting his father.

Karl was on duty and noticed Darmon with his grandmother and mother approaching. He got up and noticed what Darmon was carrying but kept silent. "Everything okay in there?" Darmon asked.

"Yes, Sir. Tony had it worse when he refused to let your father out. Tony informed me there were some loud crashing noises before I took over. It's been quiet now for about an hour," Karl reported.

"Thank you!" Darmon responded as Karl opened the door and let them in.

Darmon, June and Evelyn saw the room was trashed. The coffee table was on its side with one of its legs missing, the bedding on Edward's bed was thrown to the floor and his pillows were ripped open with feathers all around the room. Edward was sat at the foot of the bed on the floor with his back to the foot board.

June clearly wasn't pleased and Evelyn looked at the room and sighed. Darmon was furious and went to kick his father but was held back by his Grandmother. Edward looked up and laughed, "So, the trio have come back... You said I could leave and then made your hound dog out there make sure I couldn't... You've come to give me more false hope?"

"Edward, you would have indeed been allowed out if we hadn't learned of another transgression that you have committed," June responded with an edge to her voice. Edward looked over at his mother unsure what she meant until Darmon threw the hidden cameras at his father's feet. Edward paled and knew he should have locked his laptop and realized he had become complacent knowing no one would have entered his study without being on the other end of his wrath.

"Don't worry, Dad. I found all the camera's and removed them and securely erased all videos you made. If you've saved them to the cloud or uploaded them to the internet I will find out and you'll see how I fuck you up," Darmon told his father coldly.

Evelyn sighed, "Edward, I knew you recorded a lot of your interactions with me and our daughters. Darmon will need your phone to remove those videos. I had no idea you were recording anything else besides those videos on your phone. I am totally ashamed to ever have consented to you making them in the first place, I should have fought harder to save my daughters."

Edward wisely decided to keep quiet and it was June that sighed deeply before addressing her son. "I've of a mind to let Darmon do whatever he wants to you and that includes killing you, but strangely, as it seems you're still my son and his father, I couldn't let Darmon stain his hands with your murder. I've asked Darmon to make a copy of all your recordings with you raping Evelyn and your daughters and will pass these over to the police if you step out of line again."

"The money I was going to allow you before has now been forfeited. You will not get any further money from me and will be at the mercy of your son if he wants to offer his help. I will allow you to continue living here and any maintenance on the property will be carried out via myself or Darmon. You just need to send a text message with the problem, and it will get fixed. You will have to find a job to support yourself and for any checkups or treatment for your infection," June continued with Edward's punishment.

"I've never seen such a fuck-up ever. I'm not sure you would be able to hire a good divorce lawyer and I plan to leave you with nothing," Evelyn told her husband whilst shaking her head.

"Dad, you're confined to this room until we leave tomorrow. Trust me, I wanted to come in here and kick the shit out of you, but I think Grandma has given you the ultimate punishment and is going to leave you penniless," Darmon told his father with a voice edged with glee.

"YOU FUCKING CUNTS. I'M GLAD I FUCKED YOUR SISTERS AND YOUR GIRLFRIENDS AS I TOOK THEIR FIRST TIMES!" Edward shouted and laughed.

Darmon's anger flared and all he saw was his father laughing at him. Darmon rushed forward and kicked his father's side who fell to his side before Darmon was upon his father laying punches to his face and chest. It was Karl who rushed in and pulled Darmon off his father after he heard June and Evelyn scream. Darmon spun around to lash out at whoever pulled him off, but Karl easily avoided it and then caught his fist, "Easy there, tiger."

Darmon came to his senses and stormed off. Karl looked at June and Evelyn, "You both okay, right?"

Both June and Evelyn nodded before June addressed Karl, "Can you please check on Edward and make sure he is patched up? We need to go find Darmon."

Karl nodded and tapped his earpiece to call Tony, "We got a situation here, can you please bring the first aid box?" Tony acknowledged the message.

Edward lay on the bedroom floor bleeding and chuckling to himself.

June and Evelyn found Darmon in his father's study. Darmon was slumped in his father's chair weeping and looked up as the door opened before his grandmother and mother entered. Darmon

wiped his face and remained silent. Darmon's grandmother and mother each went over to Darmon and hugged either side of him.

Darmon continued to stare down towards the floor with his fists clenched, "I'm sorry!"

"For what, baby?" Darmon's mother asked.

Darmon looked up and towards his mother and answered quietly, "For showing a side of me that may make you afraid of me. I showed you an ugly side of me and understand if you push away from me."

June used her hand to turn her grandson's head towards her and gave her grandson a honest answer, "Darling, to me and your mother, this just showed us that you would do anything to protect us. We neither find you ugly nor are afraid of you. While Edward might have taken the firsts of your sisters and your former girlfriends, you have brought this family together again and have claimed each of us in far more reaching ways than just the physical act. You have our hearts, bodies and spirits. Our bonds are more than just physical and that is something that Edward can never gain or take away from you."

"I'm not going to say that what we witnessed didn't scare us or at least me a little, but I know you will never stoop so low as to be or do as Edward did," Darmon's mother added.

There was a small pause as mother-in-law and daughter-in-law looked at each other and some wordless look passed between them. Darmon was surprised when his grandmother put her hand down to unbuckle his shorts. Darmon uttered the question, "Grandma?"

It was Darmon's mother who spoke as she also joined her mother-in-law's hand at her son's lap, "Shush, baby. Your grandmother and I know exactly what you need right now!"

June and Evelyn quickly had Darmon's shorts down and his boxers quickly followed. June leaned down to remove her grandson's shorts and boxers off his feet with his semi-hard cock now visible. Evelyn lifted her son's cock and was amazed at the size of her son even when he wasn't fully hard yet.

"Mom, I'm a little stressed right now," Darmon confessed.

Evelyn looked up and meet her son's eyes, "I know, baby. This is going to help relieve you of your stress."

Evelyn wrapped her hand around her son's cock and moved her hand up and down on his shaft. Darmon regardless of how stressed he was was always going to get hard if one of his women was servicing him. As Evelyn was jerking her son's now hard cock, June used her hand to fondle her grandson's balls.

After a few minutes of the women fondling Darmon, Evelyn pointed her son's cock towards her mother-in-law. June instantly knew what her daughter-in-law wanted her to do and leaned down to take her grandson's hard cock into her mouth. June bobbed up and down on her grandson's cock for a few minutes and when she saw the longing look in Evelyn's eyes lifted herself off Darmon's cock and then pointed it towards his mother's face. Evelyn giggled before taking her son deep into her mouth.

Darmon's grandmother and mother alternated between themselves for a good 10 minutes before Darmon felt his balls start to tighten and started to moan which combined with how each of the women felt his cock twitch in their mouths was an indication of their man's pending orgasm. "Fuck! I'm Cumming," Darmon told them before he started to shot his load. Evelyn quickly moved her son's cock out of her mouth and pointed her son's cock at her mother-in-law's face. Darmon first shot hit his grandmother's face just above her nose. Evelyn quickly moved her son's cock towards her face and took another shot of her son's load to cover her forehead and right cheek.

Evelyn then quickly moved her mouth back over her son's cock and took the rest into her mouth. After Darmon finished, his mother pulled off with her mouth still filled with his cum. Evelyn didn't swallow and instead moved over to French kiss her mother-in-law and for the next few minutes the women who were mother-in-law and daughter-in-law snowballed Darmon's cum between them. Darmon watched in arousal as his grandmother and mother, after a few minutes of passing his cum between them made sure they each had about half of his cum and opened their mouths to show Darmon before closing their mouths and swallowing his cum.

June then licked the cum still on her daughter-in-law's face and Evelyn did the same to her mother-in-law. Both June and Evelyn looked over at Darmon, it was Evelyn that asked, "So, baby. I hope that helped with your stress."

"Darling, we are your women and know when you need our attention. If your aunts or sisters saw how stressed you were, they would have each jumped at the chance to help you," June informed her grandson.

"Thanks! I hope you never get tired of me telling you all that 'I love you'," Darmon confessed to his grandmother and mother. Instead of answering both kissed and licked his cock clean and then gave him tender kisses.

"Oh, umm... What about both of you? I could lick and eat each of your pussies in turn if you sit on Dad's desk," Darmon asked.

Both June and Evelyn chuckled and it was June that answered, "Darling, this wasn't about us. It was about you and what we could do to help. We both will never say 'no' if you wanted to eat our pussies, but this can wait until we get back home. We've been in here for a while now and fear your aunts or sisters might come looking for us. I don't think a family orgy in here is the right time or place for it. Let's all have some fun when we get back home. On a different note, how is the secure deletion going?"

Darmon pressed the space bar to wake up his father's laptop and looked at the screen as he retrieved his boxers and shorts to put them back on, "Still a few hours away from completion. I can leave this running and let's all head back to the living room to watch a movie or something."

Edward was in pain and had bruises over his face and chest. Edward chuckled, then winced in pain; he now knew how he could get under Darmon's skin. Edward sat on his bed in his ruined bedroom and thought of ways he could turn this around. Edward blamed Darmon for his downfall, instead of blaming himself for all his actions. Edward wanted to make Darmon pay for ruining his life and wanted to take back what Darmon has, temporarily, taken away from him.

Edward's stomach rumbled and looking for his phone, remembered it was taken away from him. He then looked at his watch and found it was late into the afternoon. He got up and went to the bedroom door and opened it. Tony was on duty at that time and stood up to block Edward leaving.

"Move," Edward ordered.

Tony sighed, "Sorry, sir, I can't do that. Firstly, I don't work for you to order me about and secondly, Mr. Darmon specifically asked not to let you leave as you're currently confined until we leave tomorrow."

Edward tried to make himself bigger and puffed out his chest, "I don't give a flying fuck about that or your orders. This is my fucking house and I will go wherever the fuck I like."

Tony took a deep breath, "Sir, I have my orders and was told that if you tried to force your way out then we will be forced to cuff you to the bed for the night." Tony then looked at Edward with a smirk, "Who knows we might even forget we cuffed you as we leave tomorrow."

Edward took a step back and felt some fear before he tried a different tact to get out, "Well, okay but I still need food and drink and haven't eaten anything since last night."

"I see, I can ask Mr. Darmon about that but still I can't let you leave the room," Tony responded. Tony made sure Edward was away from the door and then closed it. Tony didn't ask Darmon to attend or ask about Edward's request for well over an hour. Tony alongside Karl had come to hate Edward and his tantrums. Tony did eventually call Darmon as he and his family were watching a comedy movie.

The movie was paused whilst Darmon went off to see what his father wanted. Darmon entered his father's bedroom with Karl and Tony together. "What seems to be the problem, dad?" Darmon inquired.

Edward who had waited far longer than he expected as previously whenever he wanted or ordered it was done immediately. Edward turned on Darmon, "WHAT THE FUCK? I CALLED FOR YOU OVER 2 HOURS AGO."

Darmon chuckled and knew Tony had delayed the message and responded in a calm voice, "Really? Do you still think you're the patriarch of this family? Should we all continue to jump to attention just because you ordered it to happen? Tomorrow, we leave for good and then you can be king of an empty house."

Darmon then got right up into his father's face. Tony and Karl were ready to act at a moment's notice. Darmon spat out the next words to his father, "Neither I, Mom or my sisters will bend to your will ever again. When we leave it will be for good and you'll eventually die after a sad, lonely life devoid of the love you could have had. I'm just glad you got your balls snipped as I would feel sorry for any other offspring you may have had. So, care to tell me why you summoned me?"

Edward took a step back and felt for the first time the resentment of his son but still didn't make the connection that it had always been his fault. He still believed that Darmon had caused his downfall but under the onslaught of Darmon's words he tried to speak a few times and all that came out were 'umms...' until eventually he found his voice. Edward stammered in a low tone and made it sound like an order still, "I've not had any food or drink since last night. You have to provide me with them!"

Darmon looked directly at his father, "I don't have to provide anything. You couldn't even ask nicely for a change and made it a demand instead. One day without food isn't going to kill you. If you

couldn't even ask nicely then I'll tell you as you asked, 'Fuck you! You can starve for all I care just as I was starving for your love and acknowledgment throughout my whole life'."

Edward knew that he had pushed his son too far with his jabs at taking each of his sister's first times and those of his girlfriends and then making demands as he had been accustomed to his whole life and having everyone immediately do as he ordered. Edward thought about attacking Darmon as his son took a step back then he saw how the security team were ready and thought better of it.

After the door closed. Darmon took a moment to calm down with Tony and Karl both standing before the bedroom door. They heard the shouts and wails of Edward and then the crashing and breaking of a mirror. Darmon chuckled, "That's seven years bad luck, Dad!"

Darmon then returned to the living room. All of the women looked over at Darmon as he once again sat down in-between Sandy and this time his grandmother. It was Lauren that asked, "Everything okay, Darmon?"

"Yes, Auntie Lauren. Dad is having a tantrum whilst he is confined to his room," Darmon advised.

"Why? I mean why is your father confined," Lauren continued to ask.

Darmon sighed, "It's mainly to protect everyone and especially Sandy here. Since he was just about to rape her, he might feel she is a crucial element towards his punishment. I don't want him to hurt anyone here and that includes you, Auntie Lauren, as he might hold a grudge against you for knocking him out. I also don't want him to attack me for coming to the rescue of Sandy. It's just safer for everyone until we all leave tomorrow."

Lauren looked around the others in the room and saw their concerns and worries, "Oh, I see."

With that Darmon asked, "Okay, shall we finish this movie and then think about getting dinner prepared."

The movie ended with a discussion on the good and bad things about the movie as the women all went off for comfort breaks and then prepare for dinner. Darmon did ask, "If you need my help in the kitchen then please let me know."

It was Amber that responded, "Oh, you silly boy. You just relax after facing your father and let the women do their things. You'll probably only get in the way anyway."

Darmon chuckled and then sat back down on the couch. All that were left in the living room were Darmon, Sandy and Lauren.

Lauren watched as Sandy put her hand into Darmon's and then rest her head against his shoulder. Lauren giggled and then looked towards the couple, "Oh, what a sweet and lovely couple you make."

Sandy gushed with joy and looked over at Lauren before telling her in a joyful voice, "I love him." Darmon looked down at Sandy to try and figure out what she could be playing at and the look she gave, confused him. 'Could Sandy really be falling in love with him,' Darmon thought. Darmon didn't understand what he might have done to cause this reaction and once again filed it away for later.

"Sandy, sweetie. Be true to him and let him have enough of you but always keep a little something back. The mystique will keep him hooked. As for you, young man and you, young lady, don't betray each other's trust. God, my daughters and I have suffered from wayward husbands," Lauren advised the young couple.

Darmon laughed, "Auntie Lauren, I think you meant to give that advice to Sandy when I wasn't around and now, I've learned the secret."

Lauren also chuckled, "But now you know she will always hold something back and would keep you hooked to try and learn what." It was Sandy who laughed this time and squeezed Darmon's hand.

Lauren then took on a serious expression, "Darmon, Sandy, whose idea was it to lay this trap for Edward?"

Darmon sighed and then looked towards Lauren, "Auntie Lauren, it was my idea. I'm not sure if you're aware but Dad has been betraying me with every girlfriend I've had. I won't go into too many details but it's safe to say that dad fucked them all. Pardon me being blunt but it's the truth. When I learned of his betrayal, I came up with a plan to catch Dad in the act and have my family present to witness this. I'm just glad I got back in time to rescue Sandy."

Lauren continued, "What if you had been delayed? You could have lost your girlfriend. Sandy, did Edward do anything to hurt you?"

Sandy looked towards Lauren, "It was a risk, I know but I had faith in Darmon getting back. We had liaised with each other via text. Edward forced a kiss on me and pushed me to the bed before ripping off my underwear and was ready to rape me."

Lauren looked at Darmon, "You took a big gamble and your father even managed to see her naked and force a kiss from her."

"Yes, I know and this is why I have confined dad to his room. I can't do anything about him seeing my girlfriend naked or forcing a kiss from her. To help myself with that, I have allowed myself to think it was no different from a kiss you see actors do in a movie," Darmon concluded.

"I'm more interested in your family life, Auntie Lauren. You've helped me big time doing this and I would like to help you also. If you need an ear to listen or for me to lend a hand in anyway then you have but to ask," Darmon told Lauren.

"Thank you, Darmon. I'm not ready to talk about my family right now but maybe I will take you up on that offer someday," Lauren replied as she smiled at Darmon.

Any further discussion on the topic of Lauren's family or Edward was shelved and some general banter as well as when they were expecting to return was had.

A short time later, the call for dinner was made. Everyone sat at the dining room table to eat and drink with talks about what everyone was going to do when they got back.

Soon, everyone went off to bed. Sandy returned to their bedroom alone as Darmon had to return to his father's study to continue his task. Darmon confirmed the deletion of the videos and then downloaded a key logger and screen grabber that would record and send Darmon full details of what Edward used his laptop for then retired for the night.

The next morning, everyone was in a good mood as they were all heading back home and making sure they had everything they required. Darmon's sisters made sure they packed most of their clothing and personal items since they doubted they would ever return. It was a good thing they had 3 cars as just a single car wouldn't have been enough.

Before they set off, Darmon caught the attention of his grandmother and mother and motioned for them to follow him. They returned to Edward's bedroom with Karl on duty. "Karl, we'll leave within the next 30 minutes. I just needed to have a final chat with my father," Darmon mentioned to Karl.

Karl opened the door to let them in and then closed the door. Edward was sat with his back to the headboard of the bed, and his knees tucked under his chin. June addressed her son, "Edward, we're about to leave."

Edward didn't even bother to look up and just said loudly, "Well, fuck off then. I don't give a flying fuck about my whore of a mother, my slut of a wife and my harlot daughters, not forgetting my dyke slut sisters who'd rather eat pussy than have a real man inside them."

Darmon's anger flared again and he moved forward. When Edward saw this, he tried to move back but had nowhere to go. It was Darmon's mother that stopped her son, "Baby, he isn't worth it." Darmon stopped moving forward and willed himself to calm down before moving back to his grandmother and mother.

June looked around the room, "I'll have a crew here tomorrow to sort out this bedroom. If you continue to wreck the house, then I will kick you out. Remember, I will no longer give you any money, and you will now have to find a job to sustain yourself."

Edward groaned, which nearly made Darmon laugh. Darmon did take pity on his father, "I'll tell you what, Dad. You probably saved some of Grandma's money for a rainy day but in-case you didn't I will allow you 2 months of the stipend that we originally granted you as you can use the money towards finding that job you need."

Darmon waited to see if this would cause Edward to react in anyway and was disappointed it didn't. "While you rot away here all alone, I will be back home making love to Grandma, my aunts, my mom and my sisters. Yes, your sisters take my cock and only my cock. Take this time to reflect on your actions. This is goodbye dad and I hope we never have to see you ever again."

June looked at her son, "Sorry, it had to come to this Edward. It's as your son told you, you can only blame yourself for all of this."

Evelyn turned towards Edward, "Edward, this is goodbye. I'll have my lawyer call you to start the divorce proceedings. I told you that you needed to stop what you were doing and create a bond with your son, but you never listened. It's a pity, really, that it's come to this but then again I also feel blessed that you did do what you did as I could finally find the one man that would make my happy."

After that Edward watched as his mother, wife and his son whom he had so wronged leave his bedroom for the last time ever.

On the return journey the 3 cars left. The lead car had Darmon, his mother and sisters. The second car had Darmon's grandmother, aunts, Lauren and Sandy. The third car had the security team and had the back seats and trunk filled with luggage.

In the security team car, Tony and Karl were having a conversation.

"Of all the jobs we've taken on before, this has got to be the weirdest, right?" Tony stated.

Karl who was driving looked briefly at Tony then back to the road before responding, "Yeah, I've seen shit before but this sort of tops that by a long shot."

Tony chuckled, "Remind me to never piss Darmon off. On a different note, we've been doing this type of work for a long time now and you get a feel for things left unsaid. Did you get a weird vibe between Darmon and his family?"

Karl knew exactly what Tony meant but asked to get clarity anyway, "What do you mean?"

Tony sighed, "Really, you're telling me you didn't feel it? The sexual tension between him and his family."

"Listen here, Tony. If you want to keep this job and get paid well then make sure you follow orders and keep thoughts like those under wraps. It's quite frankly none of our business," Karl gave Tony some sage advice.

"Yeah, I know, I know. Still if he's fucking his family then kudos to the kid. Our job was muscle for him and now it's to protect him and his family," Tony replied before both went silent and each thinking to themselves on how the fuck did Darmon get so lucky having a harem of women.

The second car's conversation was more subdued as Mary was driving back. "Why are you in here with us Sandy and not in the car with your boyfriend?" Lauren asked.

Sandy chuckled, "Aunt Amber asked me to join this car and I didn't see a reason not to. Yes, I could be sitting next to Darmon but it's only about a 4-hour drive back and I don't need to crowd Darmon constantly. Besides, I'm sure that soon I will be spending a lot more time with him."

Lauren reflected on what Sandy said but couldn't quite get rid of some feelings that have plagued her for a while, but for now she remained silent on these feelings. Lauren did just reply with, "Oh, I suppose!"

In the lead car, Darmon was driving and had Emily sat next to him in the passenger seat. Evelyn was sat in the rear seats, in the middle between her eldest daughter, Marcy and her youngest daughter, Natasha.

The first hour was spent in just general banter until the subject of what happened to Edward became the topic. "Little Bro, did you really beat up, dad?" Marcy asked.

"Yeah, although I think the element of surprise helped in that. Dad taunted me and made me do it when he labelled you all with derogatory names," Darmon gave justification for his actions.

"What did he call us and what did dad say to you?" Natasha asked.

Before Darmon could respond it was their mother that responded first, "Your father called us all 'cunts' and then gloated that he fucked you all and his girlfriend's first before your brother got there and took each of yours and their first times."

Emily who was sat in front turned her head to look at her brother and saw some rage boiling beneath the surface, she placed her hand on his arm and said quietly, "Darmon, he may have taken that from us but it's you that we are with and it is only you that will ever enter us, going forward!"

Darmon glanced at his sister briefly and saw she was sincere and some of his rage dissipated. "In fact, I think I should re-enforce that," Emily stated and then moved in her seat to kneel towards her brother. Emily reached down to her brother's lap and pulled the zipper down then put her hand into the opening to fish his cock out of his boxers.

Darmon without taking his eyes off the road raised a question, "Sis?"

Emily giggled, "Shush! I'm just proving to you that I'm willing to do things for you anywhere and anyplace."

Evelyn in the back between her daughters laughed, "Baby, just accept your sister's advances but please don't kill us on the drive back."

Marcy and Natasha giggled before it was Marcy who spoke up, "You're so fucking lucky."

Darmon moaned in pleasure as his sister started to stroke his now rock-hard cock. "I know I am," Emily chuckled as she wet her lips and briefly glanced towards her eldest sister.

"I was talking to our brother, Sis. Although, it could apply to you also as you get to taste and swallow his cum," Marcy corrected her sister.

Evelyn added, "Baby, enjoy your sister's mouth, but please don't crash and kill us."

Darmon moaned as Emily leaned down to run her wet tongue around her brother's glans, "I'll try not to mom. Maybe, I should pull over, and we can all have some fun."

Natasha giggled, "Yeah, that's a good idea Little Brother."

Evelyn said, "Baby, this will be a test for you as well as bringing you great pleasure; so, keep driving. Emily 'edge' your brother for as long as you can both handle it. Darmon, can I make a request please?"

Darmon and Emily both responded in sync, "Okay."

"Baby, while you are getting serviced by your loving sister will you allow me and your other sisters to also make love. As much as you would like to turn back or look at us in the rear view mirror, please keep your eyes on the road. You'll be able to hear us, baby!" Evelyn asked.

Darmon moaned as Emily took him deep into her mouth before responding, "Sure, Mom. I don't mind although I would've loved to see it and even take part in it."

"Darmon, this doesn't change how we all feel about you and besides this is the first time Mom is going to do this to us without being forced to by Dad," Marcy said to make her point to her little brother.

"Besides, I'm sure there will be other times that you'll get to watch and participate," Natasha added.

Darmon moaned as Emily popped her brother's cock from her mouth and put the tip of her tongue against his glans slit before trying to push her tongue in. Darmon did managed to croak out, "Okay, I love you all so fucking hard."

Evelyn giggled, "We know, baby."

Evelyn unbuckled her seat belt and turned around to sit on the rear seat floor looking up at her eldest and youngest daughters. Evelyn used each hand to raise up the dresses of her daughters before raising up to kiss her eldest daughter. Marcy swooned in pleasure when her mother's lips touched hers in a sensual gentle kiss before she opened her mouth to accept her mother's tongue inside. Marcy and Natasha were both moaning as their mother used the hands that raised her daughter's dresses to rub her daughter's pantie clad pussies.

After a few minutes of kissing her eldest daughter Evelyn broke the kiss with a panting eldest daughter and moved over to her youngest daughter and repeated the same kiss she had given to her sibling, only it was Natasha that pushed her tongue out to invade her mother's mouth. After breaking the kiss with her youngest daughter, Evelyn kissed and licked down Natasha's neck getting closer to her cleavage. Natasha knew her mother couldn't get access to her breasts unless she helped lower her dress to release them; Natasha used one hand to rest gently on her mother's head and used the other to lower the dress giving her mother access to her nipples using her mouth. Marcy was looking over at her mother and sister and decided to make sure she was already ready for her mother.

In the front seats, Emily was bobbing her head up and down on her brother's cock with Darmon gently holding his sister's head. Darmon was close to cumming and Emily saw the signs and decided to pop her head off her brother and look up into the eyes of her brother with absolute love. Darmon groaned at the sudden loss of his sister's mouth; he groaned as he was denied his orgasm and moaned as he was witness to the love that was shining in her eyes and her expression. Darmon wanted very much to kiss his sister hard and make sweet gentle love to her.

Darmon and Emily heard the moans of their sisters in the back seat. Emily decided to give her brother a small rest to take the edge off his pending orgasm. Emily felt sorry for her brother and really did want him to have his release but also felt a little powerful in knowing she had the power to deny or allow his orgasm. Emily looked back into the back seat and saw her mother kissing and

licking Marcy's nipples and looking down could see the gussets of each of her sister's panties pushed to the side and their mother had two fingers in each of their pussies.

"Wow, Mom that looks so fucking hot," Emily moaned as her hand went to her own pussy to rub and push her own fingers inside her. Evelyn looked over at her middle daughter and stopped kissing and licking her eldest daughter's nipples to push up and turn her head towards Emily who in turn leaned over the seat to capture her mother's mouth with her. Marcy and Natasha were already close to an orgasm and lost it seeing their sister and mother kissing. Both screamed as their orgasms hit them hard. Darmon in the front seat could only hear his family make love and moaned at the sounds of his sisters getting their release. Darmon was frustrated and he so much wanted to see his mother and sisters make love.

What followed for the next hour was absolute torture for Darmon as Emily kept on edging him and he was subjected to the moans, groans and shrieks of his family having orgasms including Emily who had been fingering herself constantly. Evelyn had brought Marcy and Natasha to several orgasms using her fingers, lips and tongue on almost every inch of her daughter's bodies. Darmon had heard the unbuckling of seat belts and heard their mother scream in orgasm from the combined assault of her daughters.

Darmon couldn't take it any longer and found a lay-by to quickly pull over into and pulled his sister's head off his cock and pulled her over to his lap. Darmon reached down and pulled the gusset of her panties to the side and pushed his hard cock into his sister. Evelyn, Marcy and Natasha were all enjoying the afterglow of satisfying sex and only realized that they were parked when Emily let out a shriek when she felt her brother's cock deeply embedded bump up hard against her cervix. Evelyn and her daughters all sat back up and noticed what was going on.

Darmon lasted 7 deep thrusts into his sister before he released his torrent of cum deep inside her. Emily felt her brother's cum inside her and let out another louder scream and squirted all over her brother's crotch as a more powerful orgasm made her shudder and twitch on her brother's cock.

Evelyn was so overcome with emotions that she cried and sobbingly said aloud, "Oh babies, it makes me so happy to see the love my babies have for each other." Evelyn leaned forward to gently caress her daughter's head and cheek. Emily laid her head down onto her brother's shoulder and nestled with her lips against her brother's neck.

"I love you, Little Brother. I'm sorry I kept denying you your release. It must have been torture for you," Emily panted.

Darmon chuckled, "I love you too, Big Sis. What would have been torture and might even had me resent you is if you had left me with blue balls."

Evelyn suddenly realized the mistake she could have made in telling her daughter to keep edging her son, especially when she also recalled leaving her son blue balled on the day he rescued her. "Baby, it wasn't my intention to deny you your orgasm whilst you kept hearing each of us having orgasm after orgasm. I never meant to act like your father and only take our own pleasure and deny you yours," Evelyn openly started to cry and was comforted by Marcy and Natasha, who now realized how badly this could have gone.

"Hey! Hey, Mom. You know I love you and love each of you. I wouldn't have allowed this if I thought for even a second you were torturing me on purpose. I admit the load of cum I just left inside Emily was by far the strongest and also biggest by volume ever," Darmon then chuckled, "I'm pretty sure that we just made our baby, Big Sis."

This statement caused Emily to burst into tears and started the waterworks for each of the women in the car. Emily was about to dismount from her brother, but he held her down gently and moved his face to look directly into her eyes, "Emily, you were the first of our sisters to accept our love and didn't ask for anything from me other than my love. It is only right that if I have made you pregnant then you be the first to carry our child inside her." Darmon then moved his lips to his sister's and they had a soul binding kiss.

After the kiss broke, Darmon addressed his family in the back, "I'm pretty sure I got Mom pregnant when showing Dad that I've claimed Mom for myself. Mom totally believes I knocked her up. Marcy and Natasha, I've already impregnated our aunts so you both are next. I will not cum anywhere other than inside you and soak your wombs with my cum until you are both pregnant, if you both still wish that, that is."

The shrieks from the back nearly burst Darmon's eardrums and each would have thrown themselves at their brother if they could. Darmon chuckled, "I'll accept that as a yes, then!"

Both Marcy and Natasha both shouted even louder, "YES!"

Evelyn laughed and then asked quietly, "Darmon, baby. Shouldn't we get going now. I'm pretty sure, your grandmother and aunts would be worried if we take too long to get back home."

Darmon and Emily stayed locked together for another 10 minutes with Emily's vaginal muscles clenching and releasing her brother's cock to keep him from totally going flaccid and falling out of her. In the interim, Evelyn, Marcy and Natasha quietly talked.

"I so fucking love our family and being a part of 'family love'," Natasha uttered.

"Yeah, I know what you mean, Little Sis. Until Darmon claimed us, all we have known is Dad forcing us. I now know the feeling of love without constraints and how much better love is when it is freely given and received," Marcy added.

"Babies, this is what I've always wanted for each of you. I admit, I never considered Darmon being the 'head of the family' and we each being an equal member of 'family love', but I wanted each of you to find true love with your soulmates, but Edward fucked that up for everyone," Evelyn confessed.

From the front seat whilst still impaled on her brother, Emily lifted her head and said loudly, "I've found my soulmate and I will forever bind my everything to him. In a way, Dad doing what he did has pushed this to happen. Maybe, it would have happened regardless or maybe not."

Darmon laughed and his laughing made his cock twitch inside his sister and caused her to have a mini orgasm. Darmon held his sister close as Emily gasped for air and moaned loudly. "What's so funny, little brother?" Natasha asked.

Darmon got his laughter under control before answering, "My gorgeous mom and sexy sisters, I've always loved you and dreamed of each of you for many, many years being with me, sexually. I thought I had lost you all when you turned away from me and now, we have an unbreakable bond linking us after I learned of the family secrets both at home and at grandma's. Know that I will never let any of you go. If you have a problem with me or anyone else come see me and I will move heaven and earth to find a solution. I will not betray you and hope you never betray me. It would destroy me to lose any of you."

Darmon's heartfelt plea was received by his family and each vowed to never betray their man and it was Evelyn that answered. "Baby, we are yours now and forever more. Trust us when I say for all of us that we love our man and would die before betraying that love."

Darmon sighed and gently pulled his sister off his cock and when he finally popped out of his sister there was not a lot of cum that seeped out. Emily was shocked when she expected her brother's cum to flood out of her pussy and looked up at her mother, "Mom, I felt Darmon flood my pussy with so much cum and only a trickle is leaking out of me..."

Evelyn laughed, "Darling, your body knew it wanted to get pregnant and whilst you stayed locked together has sucked up nearly all of his cum into your womb. Darmon's swimmers are already in search for your egg. Just as I know he has impregnated me I feel he has just done the same to you."

Marcy and Natasha let out annoyed sounds, "Darmon, you promised Emily an exclusive night. Delay that if you have gotten her pregnant and I invoke rule one, alongside my sister and will keep requesting us to be serviced until you get us pregnant," Marcy told her brother with some frustration. Marcy then got out her phone and dialled her grandmother; the call was answered after the second ring, Marcy put the phone on speaker phone.

"Marcy, sweetie. Is everything okay?" June asked after answering the call.

"Yes, Grandma. Grandma, if you've put me on speaker please switch it off and we need to talk." Marcy asked.

"Sweetie, whenever someone opens with 'We need to talk' it's never going to be a good thing. Has something happened to Darmon, your mother or sisters?" June concern was heard over the phone.

"Grandma, Mom believes she is pregnant after Darmon took her in front of dad. Emily now also believes Darmon has just impregnated her. Grandma, how do Natasha and I invoke rule one until he gets us pregnant also," Marcy asked.

Everyone heard June laugh so loud over the phone and this brought about a wave of anger and frustration from Marcy, "Is that all sweetie? When we get home, we can have a family discussion about this and what you are asking is all possible but certain concessions will need to be made which are not open to debate."

"Okay, Grandma. We will be home shortly. See you at home for the family meeting," Marcy answered before ending the call.

Everyone was looking at Marcy in astonishment and when Marcy saw the looks, "What? Natasha and I don't want to be the only ones not carrying our man's babies."

This brought about a fresh round of chuckles. When Emily looked down at her brother's crotch she saw it was wet following her squirting on his shorts, "Oh, umm, sorry Darmon I made a mess on you."

Darmon chuckled and brought his lips to his sister's and whispered, "Don't worry about it, I will wear your mark on me with pride and hope for a strong baby soon to start in your belly." Emily blushed

before straightening her clothes as Darmon tucked himself back into his shorts to continue the drive back home.

After Mary dropped off Lauren and Sandy the silence on the drive back home was broken by Amber, "Mom, you going to tell us what that phone call was all about?"

June sighed, "Marcy is trying to invoke rule one exclusively for her and Natasha."

Mary let out a scream, "WHAT?"

"Darling, she isn't trying to muscle any of us out. She told me Evelyn believes Darmon impregnated her when he claimed her before Edward and Emily believes he impregnated her during the drive back here. You both are already pregnant by him, and she wants to ensure both she and her sister are impregnated by their brother," June answered to placate her daughter's growing anger.

"What did you tell her mom?" Amber asked.

"Well, you heard what I told her. I said it was possible but needed to be discussed during a family meeting and concessions will have to be made. When it was your father as the head then this wasn't ever a problem. The fact Darmon is virile and each one of his women want it to start a child with him is the issue at hand here. I suspect that had he got everyone else pregnant and not either of you then you would also be making the same demands regardless of the rules governing our way of life," June answered, "Listen, I don't think it best to discuss this here and our man needs to be present as his voice holds a lot of sway in this pending discussion."

After that the car returned to silence as each family member tried to process what could be a difficult talk. Soon, they returned home and prepared drinks for the dining room table and sat at the table in silence awaiting the arrival of the others.

It was probably 20 minutes later that Darmon arrived with his mother and sisters, who were all talking loudly as they entered the house and when they came into the dining room the talking stopped as they witnessed a sombre June, Mary and Amber.

"Darlings, please come take a seat at the table and we can get this meeting started," June asked and made it sound more of an order than a request.

Darmon sat at the head of the table which was his by right and opposite him sat June the matriarch of the family. Everyone else sat in an empty seat to await the first serious family discussion.

Chapter 14

June let the silence within the room speak louder than anything that could have been said. In the end, June sighed and then directed her attention to Marcy and Natasha who happened to sit on the same side of the dining room table. Both Marcy and Natasha visibly flinched under the stare of their grandmother.

Marcy reached out a trembling hand towards the pitcher of water on the table and was unable to pour water into her glass without some spilling onto the table. June saw Amber lean over and take the pitcher from her niece's hand and poured some into a glass. Marcy looked at her aunt with pleading eyes with a tight-lipped expression. Marcy tried to take the glass and drink but had to put the glass on the table and then put both hands in her lap to try to stop them trembling. Marcy looked over at her sister Natasha for support and found her in the exact same position and even had tears starting to fall from her eyes.

"Grandma, enough of this please. I think you've scared my poor sisters enough," Darmon spoke to break the silence after he had been watching his grandmother closely.

June laughed and this broke the tension in the room, "Darling, how did you know what I was doing wasn't serious?"

Marcy and Amber couldn't keep a straight face after this and were trying to hide their giggling behind their hands. Darmon chuckled and got up to put an arm around the shoulders of Marcy and Natasha and gently kissed their cheeks before returning to his seat. "If you were truly angry at Marcy or any of us then I'm pretty sure you wouldn't have been able to keep silent," Darmon answered his grandmother.

June still chuckling got up and went to hug her granddaughters and she gave each a tender kiss on the lips before addressing them, "Let this first family meeting commence and let it be known my granddaughters Marcy and Natasha have put forth a motion. Sorry, sweeties, this was just a little bit of fun."

After ensuring her granddaughters were fine, June went back to her seat. "Before we start it should be noted that any of us can raise a family meeting to discuss any matter. We are all members of 'family love' and the rules govern us to protect and lead us. In the car, I mentioned concessions, but these are more consequences and I said that word on account of Lauren present. If it had only been Sandy in the car with us then I would have used consequences, everyone who isn't blind can see the poor girl is smitten with Darmon; she knows of 'family love' and isn't repulsed by it," June stated for the start of the meeting.

"Marcy, sweetie. Can you formally make your request and then each member will have a say in the matter? Our man is here to stop any deadlocks, and his words have twice as much sway than ours. I will then sum up the discussion and lay out the consequences and overall resolution to this family discussion," June added.

Marcy lifted the glass to her lips and drank some water to calm her nerves and settle her thoughts after the near panic thinking she had fucked up big time and was going to be kicked out of 'family love'. "Uhhh, I'm not sure of the protocols for this type of meeting," Marcy asked looking towards her grandmother and aunts for support.

"Honey, there isn't one. All the females and mates of Darmon are equals during any family meeting. You just make your request, and this will open up a discussion and will continue until a resolution is agreed upon," Mary said as she leaned over the table to lay her hands on both of her nieces' hands.

"Grandma, Aunt Mary and Aunt Amber, my sister and I want to get pregnant and want to know how to invoke rule one so that it can happen," Marcy asked in a quiet voice.

Darmon remained silent and chose to listen. June looked up at her granddaughters and smiled at them, "What you ask is possible, but before I go into that and the consequences for what you are proposing we should hear from each other member so that you both can understand what you are asking for."

Marcy cleared her throat and opened, "Honey, I love our man and he made me a promise that he would be sharing a bed with my sister and I. I know that I am pregnant with his child, but what you are proposing would deny our union with our 'husband'. Darmon, when we were at the other house had already invoked rule two and asked for my sister and I." Mary then looked over at her sister Amber.

"Marcy, Natasha, I wasn't aware that our 'husband' had invoked rule two. Rule one is the absolute rule here and what you are asking would deny any of us the right to be with Darmon and that would include your mother and sister, Emily," Amber added.

The mention of 'husband' from both Mary and Amber wasn't lost on any of them, especially Evelyn and her daughters. June just had a smile on her face and was glad that her daughters were totally head-over-heels in love with their nephew and it was mirrored in her own feelings.

"Mom, I don't know the rules enough to understand the issue here but if it means that my son will only show his love to Marcy and Natasha then I don't think I could handle that. I love my son and if I could have him inside me every day, it would make me the happiest mother and woman to our man," Evelyn commented.

"You know I love you both, right? Please don't deny me access to my Little Brother. While I believe he has gotten me pregnant, there is still a chance I'm not and wouldn't it be better if things stay the same? Both of you can request Darmon to service you until it can be proven one way or another as we wait for confirmation that Mom and I are pregnant," Emily asked with some tears forming in her eyes.

June then spoke up, "Marcy, Natasha you've now heard from your aunts, mother and sister. Let me tell you that what you have requested can be done but it will have consequences. You can invoke rule one here for exclusive access to our man and for each day he is kept away from his other wives until the task has been completed will mean that you will be denied any intimate contact with him double the time, he is away from us."

"So, if you keep him to yourselves for two weeks then you will lose intimate access to him for a month later. This is not to say he cannot show you any affection as that would be too cruel; only any sexual acts would be denied. Of course, this is based on a single person who invokes this rule and since it's two of you then that time is doubled again. So that one month would turn into two," June continued to outline the consequences.

"So, before you make this decision, I will outline the choices you have. One, you invoke rule one for exclusive use of our man and understand the consequences of this act, or two, you both request his time as and when he is available and schedule a time with Darmon as per the rules and take your chances in getting pregnant that way; Option two has worked for everyone else so far. If you do wish to go for option one then I suggest that you wait until it is confirmed your mother and sister are pregnant," June outlined the options for her granddaughters.

June then looked over at her grandson and the love of her life, "Darling, what are your views on this?"

Darmon sat quietly for a while before answering, "I understand you both want to get pregnant and I would gladly do what I can to help towards that but denying the others intimacy feels somehow wrong to me. It might take longer for you both to get pregnant but that shouldn't be at the expense of the others now and then both of you later. I love you all equally and how do you think it would make me feel knowing I can't show that love to you all equally?"

Marcy and Natasha knew that what they were asking could well splinter their family and resentment could enter where there is currently only true love between everyone. Marcy looked at her sister, and each took the other's hand into their own. "Grandma, Mom, Aunties and Sis, we would like to revoke our request to invoke rule one for exclusive access to our brother. I think Marcy and I would just like to make it clear that we will take our chances and want it noted that our brother's cum remain inside us until we are pregnant. I know some of us, with permission from Darmon, like to eat his cum from another of his women and I ask that you not take away our chances."

Marcy actually laughed, "It's true I love to eat his cum from any of you but will promise that until you are pregnant and it's confirmed your mother and sister are pregnant then I will not be requesting that for any of you that still need to confirm or are trying to get pregnant." This was chorused by all of Darmon's harem.

June then started to conclude the family meeting, "It should be noted that Marcy and Natasha have rescinded their request and that our first family meeting is concluded."

June and everyone, except Darmon, were about to get up and get started on a late lunch. Darmon cleared his throat, "Grandma, before we all disperse from this meeting, I would like to raise something also."

June was shocked as she and everyone didn't expect this and was worried about what their man wanted to discuss. Darmon waited for everyone to be seated again, and all eyes turned towards him, waiting.

"Grandma, you have told me and everyone here knows of the rules, but what hasn't been discussed is how to invite someone to 'family love'," Darmon asked.

"That is a complex question and is usually raised in a family meeting like this. It depends on who wants to invite whom. You know the rules on invites, we each have a vote and anybody that votes to exclude them will result in them not get invited," June told her grandson and everyone at the table in a serious tone.

"If anyone wants to invite another male into this then they need to understand that he cannot lay claim to anyone that belongs to the current 'head of the family' and in every case to date no other males have been invited. This is probably due to the current 'head of the family' being jealous and also that his women don't want to see or interact with another male. They only have eyes for their man," June continued in a tone that told everyone that she would veto any invites of that nature.

"If a female is invited then they must be presented in front of the others and it depends on who made the request to invite. If one of his women make the request then the invitee must acknowledge that our man takes priority over any attachment they may have with the person making the request and any interaction between the requester and invitee must be granted permission from our man," June looked over at each member around the table to make it clear.

"If our man makes the request then each member of his harem get a vote on inclusion or not," June said looking at Darmon directly this time.

"Honey, if you are asking then can I assume you have someone in mind?" Mary asked.

"Yes, Auntie. I do but it's a little bit more complicated than that," Darmon responded.

"Baby, how so?" Evelyn asked.

"Grandma, Mom and everyone else. I want to invite Sandy," Darmon made his request.

"WHAT? WHY? DO YOU WISH TO INFECT US ALL?" Amber exploded.

June put her hand over her daughter's and said in a soothing voice, "Darling, let Darmon speak. I also would be interested in his justification."

"This totally isn't mine to tell you all and it is pending something that is still to happen. During our time at Dad's and after I had taken you Grandma, Mom and my Aunts. I returned to my bedroom with Sandy to allow her to shower and get some rest. She received voicemails and text messages to inform her that the last test results were negative and to book in for another test and if this is also negative then she is to be given the 'all clear'. Sandy knows of 'family love' and witnessed me making love to all except my sisters. I'm not saying I want to invite her right away and only if the next tests are also negative," Darmon relayed his justifications for the inclusion of Sandy.

Darmon looked around the room and saw a mix of shocked and thoughtful faces, "This might be a moot point for now and was more so to understand the process of how to invite someone."

June then looked around the room, "I agree this is a moot point right now until she has been given the 'all clear'. After it can be proven she is infection free, she will still need to be presented to everyone here and a vote will be conducted on her joining our 'family love'."

Darmon nodded, "Okay, but the motion is out there now and if she is given the 'all clear' then act surprised when I make the formal request. Oh, on another note, it is way too early for this but I'm giving everyone clear advance warning that I aim to add Auntie Lauren and her daughters to 'family love'."

It was June that exploded this time, "WHAT? Seriously, darling. What even makes you think she will accept an invite like that, let alone her daughters?"

Darmon sighed, "It was something she hinted at during our last evening at Dad's. She confessed that she and her daughters have issues with their husbands and I aim to help them and not because I want to get them into our family but it's the right thing to do. If they fall in love with me then I think I would like to claim them."

"Fuck me! Darmon, don't you already have enough women in our 'family love'?" Marcy said in a disbelieving tone.

"Sis, it isn't my intention to invite them but if something does happen then I want everyone to know beforehand," Darmon responded to his sister's outburst.

June sighed and it was Evelyn that finally informed her son of something else that had been put off with all the chaos happening recently, "Darmon, you remember the jewelry clerk, Susan, right? Well, she also expressed that she wants to join the harem."

Darmon was the one surprised this time, "Really?"

Mary laughed to break any tension, "My nephew is a very popular man. We should invite Susan over soon and make it clear what it means to join the harem and who are its members."

"Grandma, I can't take any more of this today. Can we end this for now and put into motion for Sandy, Susan and maybe Auntie Lauren and her daughters later? I don't think my brain can process

anymore today," Natasha asked in a voice loud enough to be heard by all but equally quiet enough to show she couldn't take any more information right now.

June spoke up then to conclude this family meeting, "Yes, sweetie! This meeting is now concluded, at least for now. Let's prepare for a late lunch."

As everyone got up from the dining room table, Darmon spoke up again, "Grandma, do you need Marcy and Natasha to help you in the kitchen?"

June looked over at her grandson and had a twinkle in her eye and understood the reason her grandson was asking, "No, darling. They're all yours but please don't delay too long as lunch will be ready in about 40 minutes."

Darmon chuckled, "Don't worry, grandma. I just need to talk to them and have a shower before lunch."

Marcy and Natasha stopped after they stood up from the table and blushed when their brother came up to them and pulled them both to his sides with his arms wrapped around each of his sisters' waists. Darmon then led them towards his bedroom. Evelyn watched from the side, before commenting, "Remember, lunch would be ready in 40 minutes and make sure they don't spoil their appetites before lunch, my sweet handsome baby."

Darmon turned to look at his mother and smirked, "Mom, they won't lose their appetite as that's not the lips and mouths I will be feeding." Marcy and Natasha both gasped and then giggled and it was Amber that let out the biggest laugh as she led her sister-in-law away.

"Oh, before I forget, tonight I will be joining my aunts in their bedroom and unless anyone has any objections then I want to spend more time with my sisters tomorrow during the day and would like to invite Grandma and Mom to join me tomorrow night." Darmon asked his women by invoking rule two. Darmon never heard the responses as he left the dining room towards his bedroom.

Meanwhile, after Edward heard everyone drive away, he ventured out of his room to the kitchen to see if there was anything to eat.

Edward was surprised to see a covered plate of food in the fridge which he attacked ravenously and washed it all down with a bottle of beer he also found in the fridge. He wasn't sure who he had to thank for that and thought it was most likely his wife. He reasoned that if she thought of him like this then there was a chance that she could be won back before he managed to get his daughters also. Edward believed that they just needed a firm hand and let him control them again. He was daydreaming of how he was going to fuck the shit out of each of them, literally. Edward got semi-hard at the thought.

After eating, he went to his study to assess the damage done. He sat at his desk in his chair and awoke his laptop. He noticed that Darmon hadn't locked it. He opened various folders that he had used to store videos and found they had all been erased and cursed Darmon as he had lost thousands of hours of footage, especially the ones where he cucked his idiot son's girlfriends, unless he managed to find the cloud storage location.

Edward opened Chrome and proceeded to login to his cloud service and sighed in relief as Darmon hadn't found these but was annoyed that the recordings from the last few days were missing. He then went into his internet banking to check his account and sighed in relief again as he was relieved to see his bank balance. He was grateful now for putting some of the money he got from his mother as a safety net for things like this.

Edward chuckled to himself as he knew he had enough money to hire a good divorce lawyer and openly laughed at the threat his slut of a wife gave him telling him she would take everything away from him.

Edward then checked online for a divorce lawyer to see if he had the grounds for mental and physical abuse for removing his funding to diminish his quality of life.

Darmon and his sisters entered his bedroom and as soon as the door closed Darmon turned and pinned Natasha to his closed bedroom door. Natasha let out a squeal but moaned in pleasure when her brother kissed her hard with such passion that it left her legs feeling as if they were made of jelly. Marcy giggled as she told her sister, "I love it when our brother takes what he wants without forcing us. He already did that to me and I loved it."

Natasha turned her eyes to look at her sister and then they rolled up as her brother's tongue invaded her mouth. Natasha shook and trembled as Darmon put his hand up her dress and into her panties to gently rub her vulva and labia. Darmon broke the kiss and turned towards his eldest sister and ordered her, "Strip!"

Darmon then turned his attention back to Natasha and looked into her eyes as his fingers felt how wet she was and inserted two wet fingers into her pussy before telling her, "I'm sorry, Sis. I didn't mean to force this upon you but you, Mom and Marcy did torture me on the return journey. If I've hurt you then know I will do anything you want of me, but as punishment for torturing me in the car you will not be granted permission to be intimate with Marcy, Mom or any other female until I decide otherwise."

Darmon then looked over at his eldest sister and saw she was naked. Darmon grinned at his sister and told her, "That applies to you also. I'm going to make love to both of you in the shower and will be leaving my seed to soak into your wombs."

Marcy and Natasha both exclaimed in shock, "What?"

Marcy then added, "It was Mom's fault for that and the love making that followed. It so unfair, Little Brother."

Darmon looked sternly at his sisters in turn, "Don't worry, mom and Emily aren't going to be spared this punishment either. That is not to say you would not be permitted to show affection like our morning greeting but until I decide otherwise, you will not be allowed to be intimate with another member of our 'family love'. You both know I love you with all my heart, but do you know how it made me feel when I couldn't participate or even witness the women I love make love."

Natasha replied with tears in her eyes, "We're sorry, Darmon."

Darmon sighed and kissed each of his sisters tenderly before responding, "I know you are, but get into the shower now so I can seed you both."

Marcy had a look of divine bliss knowing her brother's seed was going to be inside her where it belonged, and the look was mirrored in their sister's face. Darmon stepped back from Natasha who let out a groan of frustration as her brother's fingers left her pussy before he told her, "You strip also!"

Darmon watched as Natasha pushed herself off the door and the siblings watched as each got naked. When they were all naked, Darmon turned towards Marcy and grabbed her by the waist to pull her to him and gave her a deep French kiss. The kiss lasted for a few minutes. Whilst still having Marcy pressed to his side grabbed Natasha and drew her into his embrace also, "My beautiful sisters. You should know that I love you both so much and hope that I can grant you both a child growing inside you both."

Natasha lifted her hand to her brother's cheek and told him, "It will be our child growing inside us. I hope you can knock us both up soon. I feel so jealous of the others that are pregnant or believe they are."

Marcy laughed, "Sis, with the amount of cum our brother shoots inside us it's only a matter of time before he knocks us up. Maybe, today he could be knocking up all of his sisters."

Darmon slapped each of his sister's ass cheek to get them moving towards his bathroom and shower. Both Marcy and Natasha squealed and then giggled rubbing the place their brother slapped them before slipping away to the bathroom. Darmon watched the naked asses of his sisters and once again thought to himself, 'how the heck did he get so lucky?'

Natasha got there first and turned on the shower and waited for the temperature to get to the right level before grabbing her brother's cock and led him into the shower. Marcy was only a step behind and decided to give her brother a slight slap on his butt as her dominant side threatened to surface. Darmon laughed and spun around to grab his sister before pushing her against the shower wall. Marcy giggled as her brother took control and looked up into his eyes as he brought his lips down to lick and kiss his sister.

Darmon left his sister panting from the kiss as he trailed his lips and tongue down her neck, leaving his mark, before kissing her rapidly moving chest just above her breasts. Darmon toyed with his sister's breasts by kissing and licking around each globe before sucking hard on a nipple. Marcy opened her legs slightly wider as she felt her brother's hand run up her inner thigh knowing he wanted easier access to her pussy.

Darmon felt how wet his sister was and it wasn't due to being under the shower. Darmon played with his sister's vulva, labia and rubbed either side of her clit before he pushed two fingers deep inside her. Marcy's nipples got harder under the assault of her brother's mouth. Darmon moved his fingers into the come-hither motion to find the rough patch inside his sister. Darmon quickly found the location and a couple of rubs of that area had Marcy scream as an orgasm rocked her body hard.

Darmon chuckled as he removed his fingers and gently lay Marcy down on the shower floor as she was shuddering and unable to support herself. Darmon left his eldest sister gasping for breath and turn towards Natasha with a smirk on his face as he told her, "You're next, Sis!"

While Natasha was overjoyed in knowing her brother was going to do what he just did with Marcy. She was a bit frightened with the intensity of Marcy's orgasm and even took a step back which

wasn't lost on Darmon who hesitated. "Sis, if this is too much for you then I will back off. You know I will never want to do something you are against," Darmon told his sister.

Natasha looked into her brother's eyes and saw the concern there before she found her voice, "No, Darmon... I mean I want it but am scared a little..."

Darmon held up his hands and moved closer to his sister and gently took her into his arms then whispered into her ear, "Sis, I will never hurt you and will take this slowly. All you will feel is the pleasure of being with your soulmate as I know I will be with my soulmate. I'm never going to let you go and after I put my baby into you then you will know the love I have for you and everyone else that is part of our 'family love'."

Natasha swooned at her brother's words and kissed Darmon hard, forcing her tongue into his mouth. Darmon caressed his sister's breasts and tweaked her nipples before running his fingers down her belly as Natasha moaned into her brother's mouth with their lips locked in a deep French kiss. Darmon felt that his sister was very wet and pushed one then two fingers into her pussy before locating her g-spot. Natasha screamed into her brother's mouth as a strong orgasm made her lose the strength in her legs and shuddered as if she was having a fit. Darmon gently supported Natasha until she was seated on the shower floor.

Darmon pulled his fingers out of his sister and popped them into his mouth, sucking and coating his tongue in the sweet nectar of his sister's cum. Darmon tilted his head back as he let her cum flow down his throat. Darmon was rock hard and need to make love to one of his sisters now and turned back to Marcy who was looking up at her brother with adoration. Darmon chuckled as he looked at Marcy and told her, "Big Sis, I think it's time I put my seed into you. I want you to stand up, put your hands against the shower wall, lean down so I have access to your pussy. I hope to bless you with my child."

Marcy shot up quicker than Darmon expected and got into position in less than 15 seconds. Darmon laughed as he moved up and rubbed his glans around in his sister's wet vagina, as lube for penetration. Marcy let out another scream as her brother lined up his cock and entered her in a single fluid motion until his balls slapped against her clit.

Darmon made love to his sister and made her orgasm a further 3 times as he varied his strokes and changed his rhythm before he pushed in hard and held his sister close to him, then filled her with a large amount of his cum. Marcy let out a banshee scream which had the females preparing lunch, almost jealous of whichever of his sisters Darmon just nailed. Marcy was like a rag doll and the only thing keeping her up with her brother's hard cock still deeply embedded inside her and the hands of her soulmate around her waist.

Darmon and Marcy stayed locked together for a good 5 minutes with Marcy's vagina twitching and sucking his cum into her womb. Darmon remained hard and gently pulled out of his sister and positioned her on all fours with her ass raised up and her face resting on her crossed arms. He thought this might give his cum more of a chance getting inside her womb to find her egg.

Darmon then turned towards Natasha and asked in a husky voice, "Sis, please stand up and lean back against the shower screen. I'm going to make love to you standing up, raise either leg and wrap it around my waist as we make love." Natasha immediately got up and leaned with her back against the shower screen.

Darmon moved into his sister's embrace and leaned down to kiss Natasha tenderly as he positioned himself between her legs. Instead of Darmon holding his cock to lubricate the glans it was his sister that held her brother's cock and moved it around to get it wet. Natasha then positioned her brother's cock at her entrance waiting for her brother to make love to her. Darmon looked into his sister's eyes and silently mouthed the words 'I love you!' then moved his head down to leave his mark before pushing up with his hips to enter his sister in a deep thrust.

Natasha let out a shriek as her brother bottomed out inside her with his glans pushing hard against her cervix and climaxed. Darmon waited a few minutes for his sister to come down from her orgasm before starting the rocking motion with his cock nearly exiting her vagina before pushing in hard to batter at the entrance to her womb. Natasha dug her nails into her brother's back and left welts when her nails scratched his back as each orgasm shock her body.

Darmon and Natasha made love for nearly 15 minutes which caused Natasha to have several more orgasms than her sister. Marcy wasn't jealous and knew Darmon wasn't ready to cum again so quickly after making love to her. Marcy witnessed the moment her brother lost the battle as his head raised up towards the ceiling and pushed himself deep into their sister. This time it was both Natasha and Darmon that let out banshee screams as Darmon fired volley after volley of his cum against her womb. This, of course, set off Natasha and Darmon feared he had killed his sister when she flooded his cock with her own cum and then she went limp. Darmon's concern overrode his enjoyment of cumming deep inside his sister and was relieved to see she was still breathing.

Marcy who witnessed this laughed, "Little Brother, is it your mission to make us all pass out from you making love to us? So far that's both our aunts and now our sister. Who's next?"

Darmon also laughed which caused his cock that was still inside his sister to twitch, and this caused Natasha to shudder as her body continued to feel the effects of her orgasm, "I don't know, Sis. It wasn't on my mind, but I could certainly make it a mission."

Marcy continued to chuckle, "I'm looking forward to that experience to see if my Little Brother can do that to all of us."

Darmon also chuckled, "Challenge, accepted!"

Darmon didn't leave his sister's body until she came around after a good 10 minutes. Natasha vagina continued to milk her brother's cum throughout her black out. Darmon made sure Natasha could support herself on her own feet before he pulled out.

Darmon couldn't be sure how long they had been away and knew it had to be more than 40 minutes, "Grandma's going to be pissed that we're late for lunch." This caused both of his sisters to giggle, and they washed off the sweat from their bodies before getting out and drying themselves before getting dressed again.

Darmon, Marcy and Natasha arrived at the dining room with the food already laid out on the table and everyone else seated around the table with flushed faces.

"Grandma, it was my fault that we were late. I take full responsibility," Darmon stated when he saw everyone was waiting for them to arrive.

June smiled at her grandson, "While I like to keep a neat, tidy and punctual household I sometimes also know that some things can take priority over that. This incident being one of those. For the future of this family and what you did to both of your sisters means that sometimes I can overlook things."

Darmon looked over at his grandmother and went up to her lifted her head up and leaned down to give her a tender kiss, "You know I love you, grandma and would have loved to put a child inside you and if it had been you that I took to my room then you would be the cause of the delay." Darmon let out a laugh, "Although, I could always just take you anytime and practice making a baby with you."

June blushed and to hide her red face pointed towards the head of the table seat, "Begone, darling. It won't be tonight as you've already requested your aunts."

Darmon sat in his seat, and they all had a pleasant lunch. After everyone had eaten, June asked Darmon, "Darling, the girls and I have a gift for you. Can you please go to the living room and wait whilst standing in the center of the room?"

Darmon had no idea what his women were up to and thought they might have all brought something sexy to wear for me to show their man how much he means to them. Darmon left the dining room and headed towards the living room. It was only 1 minute later that Darmon heard his women coming towards the living room and was sort of disappointed knowing they couldn't have dressed into their sexy outfits to surprise him.

Darmon watched as each of his women came to surround him in a circle with him in the middle. It was June that stepped forward, "Darling, when you proposed to us you each gave us an engagement ring and all of us thought it would be nice to return the gesture. Don't worry, we haven't all got you a ring each. We all decided on a gift that had been delayed in giving it to you due to the chaos with your father. With that now behind us, at least I hope so, we have decided to present it now."

June then presented a box to her grandson. Darmon opened the box and found a book shaped locket. Darmon took out the locket and found it on a chain; he opened the locket and saw names engraved within and the first name was that of his grandmother, June. Darmon had tears in his eyes as his fingers traced the name 'June'.

"Grandma, the first name is yours," Darmon quietly said as a tear fell from his eye.

"Yes, darling. As the matriarch of the family and the first of your women; it was I that appointed you as 'head of the family' and right that I also put that chain holding the locket around your neck. Read each name in turn and they will come forward to greet their man and kiss you to seal the pact for we are yours and you are ours," June advised her grandson.

Darmon started with the first name, "June." June stepped forward and locked her lips with her grandson into a deep wet French kiss.

After the kiss ended, Darmon uttered the next name, "Mary." Mary stepped forward and drew her nephew into her embrace and stuck his head into her cleavage before kissing her nephew with as much passion as her mother did.

What followed, was Darmon spoke each name out loud and each of his women in turn gave him a kiss and some of them even left their own mark on him, especially, Darmon's mother and sister Emily. After finishing reciting every name, June stepped forward again and took the locket with the chain from her grandson's hands and then fastened it around his neck.

Darmon looked up at each of them and spoke from the heart, "You have no idea what this means to me. When those that I loved turned away from me and those that I felt I could make a go of it with left me. I started to question my worth and was ready to end my life knowing nobody loved me. It was Grandma that opened my eyes to what love is and it was given to me without conditions attached." Darmon paused then chuckled, "Yes, there were conditions; the rules that govern us, but it was due to some painful actions that I learned of what Dad was doing and then the secret behind 'family love'."

Darmon paused again as turned slowly to look at each member of his harem and noted that there wasn't a dry eye in the room, his included, "You should know that I would lay down my life for any of you. I love each of you equally and without constraints or conditions."

Darmon then chuckled again, "My aunts, Mary and Amber have a complicated history and accepted me as I accepted them. They keep telling me that they love me even more than their relationship between themselves and their mother. I didn't want to rock the boat and told them I could accept that but didn't want it done behind my back as I couldn't handle any more betrayal. They agreed instantly with an agreement raised and compromises made. Honestly, I don't know if it's because I'm going to make them mothers that they love me more or something else."

Mary spoke up at this point, "Honey, you making us mothers didn't have any bearings on how we feel about you. You were appointed 'head of the family' and initially we were skeptical about how you would take our existing relationships into account. You showed what a true head should be and didn't force us but was willing to meet us halfway. That was when we fell in love with you."

Darmon laughed, "So it wasn't the sex or me making love to you?"

Amber laughed this time, "Yes, I suppose it was, but I tell you now that I would be willing to give up my sister and mother for you, but I know you wouldn't want that or force me to do that. All I will say is I love you, honey, with every fiber of my body."

Darmon continued, "Thank you. My sisters were a mystery to me, and I feared they hated me even as Grandma and my aunts pushed me to claim them into 'family love'. I was hesitant but I gave them a chance to see me for who I am and had a proper heart to heart with them. It was a struggle, as they feared I was just like Dad and made it difficult to break through their defenses. I have to say, eventually, I alongside Grandma and our aunts convinced them. The rest is history as they say. The bond we have now is way beyond siblings and is one based on shared experiences and the struggle for acceptance from both sides."

"As for mom, I suppose she has always loved me even when I thought she turned away from me. I believe we all convinced her to let me be the one true man in her life," Darmon continued then looked over at his mother, "I love you mom and I hope that I have gotten you pregnant alongside Emily. I might even have gotten Marcy and Natasha pregnant and if not, then I will shortly."

Darmon paused again before concluding, "What I mean to say is that without you all in my life then I don't know where I would be, but I'm glad that I never had to find out, so from the bottom of my heart I love you all."

Darmon's harem couldn't take anymore, and all rushed to him to touch and grab him wherever they could and all kissed parts of his body they could get to.

The emotions were high that evening and everyone took turns sitting beside their husband-to-be, touching him and allowing him whatever access that he wanted to their own bodies. Other than gentle fondling and mild intimacy, things didn't escalate to a full-blown orgy as some might have wished to happen but somehow it wasn't needed to strengthen the bonds between them.

"Pool time," Darmon heard mid-afternoon but wasn't sure who voiced it.

"Yes, that is a great idea. Let's all go get changed," Marcy said loudly.

"What? Why? I mean, let's just all get naked and have fun in and around the pool. It's not like none of us haven't seen each other naked or doing lewd things," Amber replied before starting to take her clothes off and dumping them on the couch in the living room. This started a domino effect with everyone shrugging their shoulders and stripping until they were naked.

Darmon noticed nipples get hard and flushed expressions which only caused him to get rock hard in seconds, "Before we all leave and knowing this could lead to an orgy of some sort outside around the pool, I need to make a statement. Marcy and Natasha already know this but until I decide otherwise, my mother and sisters are refrained from being intimate with anyone else bar me. This is punishment for what they did to me in the car on the drive back."

"Darling, what did they do?" June asked her grandson.

"They all denied me an orgasm whilst they all had fun themselves, especially, Mom, Marcy and Natasha who made love to each other when I wanted to be an activate participant. I was tortured

with only being able to hear them have orgasm after orgasm. Emily at least was sucking my cock but denied me an orgasm until I pulled over and made love to her. I wanted to watch my mother and sisters and was denied that," Darmon told his harem about the torture he had to endure.

"WHAT?" Mary almost shouted at the top of her voice, "It is Darmon's right as 'head of the family' and should never be denied if he wanted to watch or participate. It is the compromise we make to ensure he will never deny us when we ask him to service us."

"I'm sorry..." Marcy started but was cut off by her mother.

"It is my fault. I told Emily to 'edge' her brother and thought that as he was getting serviced by his sister, we could also have some fun in the back seat. I honestly didn't consider the torture I was inflicting upon my son by denying his orgasm," Evelyn responded with downcast eyes.

Darmon went over to his mother and held her, "Mom, I told you in the car that if I thought you did this on purpose then this would have been a much more serious situation. The fact that I might have gotten Emily pregnant is the one thing that makes this less of a problem."

Darmon then looked over at his grandmother, "Grandma, correct me if I'm wrong but I'm allowed to put forward this punishment, right?"

June looked over at grandson and then at her daughter-in-law, "Evelyn, darling. Did you do as Darmon stated?"

Evelyn's words wouldn't come out and she simply nodded. June sighed, "Normally, any disputes of this nature would be resolved at a family meeting, but Evelyn has confirmed she denied our man his basic rights and therefore, the punishment stands until Darmon deems otherwise."

June looked over at her grandson again, "Darling, can you please outline the details for this punishment?"

Darmon took a breath, "Any and all sexual intimacy with another, other than me, is prohibited. I will still allow them to show their affections with each other as per the morning greeting but will deny any request from them wanting to be with any other."

June then turned to look at Evelyn and her granddaughters, "Do you accept the punishment given by the 'head of the family'?" After getting nods from each, June concluded, "The punishment is now in

effect and will stay in place until such time as Darmon decides otherwise. You do know the consequences for going against this punishment, right? If any of you break the terms of this punishment, then it amounts to you wanting to leave the harem and will be expelled."

Darmon's mother and sisters gasped at the consequences and finally understood the rules don't only protect themselves but also Darmon and understood that all Darmon asked was to watch as he was serviced by his sister and while he agreed it was something he asked but was denied as they in turn nearly left him with blue balls.

June continued, "I know it may seem harsh and could be seen as a method of control to keep everyone in line, but that is far from what this actually is. The rules governing this family are there to ensure that everyone's needs are met and that no single person is denied that basic need. Rules one and two are the most important for everyone here. In this case Darmon asked or wanted to watch and participate as per rule two but was denied that. Please be mindful of the rules and think before you do something stupid."

Any further discussion was paused as Darmon's phone pinged with a few notifications of pending messages. Darmon scanned his phone and smirked at what he read, "I think mom and my sisters now understand. On another note, Grandma, Aunt Mary and Mom, meet me at the dining room table as I fetch my laptop. Everyone else go have some fun and we'll meet you there shortly."

June, Mary and Evelyn had confused expressions but did as Darmon asked but giggled as they watched him depart with his erect cock bobbing up and down.

Darmon entered the dining room and sat down next his family, "Grandma, Aunt Mary and Mom, Dad's showed us where he uploaded the videos and also given us access to the money he stashed away."

Evelyn looked at her son, "How?"

"Mom, I installed a key logger onto Dad's PC and had it sent me alerts when Dad used his laptop," Darmon told his mother.

Mary laughed, "Our man is a smart cookie. What are you planning, honey?"

"Well, I will start with the cloud storage he setup to upload the videos. I will login, change the password and block his access before I copy those videos to my own encrypted cloud storage and then delete his account. After that I will setup an Escrow account and login to Dad's banking apps to transfer all but a single dollar," Darmon told his aunt as he logged into his dad's cloud storage.

Darmon changed the password and initiated the transfer then left that running in the background as he went about creating an Escrow account then logged into his father's account to transfer everything, leaving only a dollar.

June put her hand on her grandson's back and asked, "Darling, what do you intend to do with that money?"

Darmon looked towards his grandmother, "It's your money, Grandma. I'm just recovering it for you, if you want it back that is. If you don't have a need for the money, then will you listen to an idea of mine?"

June was genuinely interested in what her grandson had to say, "Darling, this money doesn't just belong to me. It is our family money and if you have some plan for it then I'm all ears."

Darmon looked at his grandmother, aunt and mother in turn before answering, "Grandma, I would like to setup a trust for orphan kids that grew out of care that never got adopted. I want the money to help pay for accommodation, food and through our company find them a job. Dad was going to kick me out of the house and even though I had a family I would have been homeless and penniless with little to no hope of finding a place to stay or even have the resources to find a job. While I never experienced that I can only imagine how I would have had to struggle."

Mary had tears falling from her eyes, "Mom, Sis, now you know why I love him. He could have easily used that money for selfish purposes, and we would have let him. The money belongs to him as much as it belongs to us, yet he doesn't care for that and instead wants to leave a lasting legacy."

Darmon shoulders slumped in relief, "Thank goodness for that. Is this something our company can do and support? I don't need any stipend and any money that would have gone to me as personal expenses, pay into the trust. I have everything I need here with my loving family. Besides, Grandma, you already gave me a credit card and unrestricted access to your money."

June had tears in her eyes now, "Darling, it's not my money, it's our money. Yes, it is something we can setup and I will take you shortly to our offices and introduce you to someone that can help set this up. Darling, you make me so proud and have to thank Edward for being such a fuck up and your mother for sending you to us."

Evelyn looked at her son with a look that said, 'I love you, baby. You are more than I expected and I'm glad I became your woman,' instead she looked her son deep in the eyes and kissed him hard, "Thank you for being the man, I never expected but the one that I knew I needed."

Darmon looked at his laptop again, "It's done, Dad's money is gone and his spy videos are being moved to my encrypted cloud service. It's going to take a few hours to complete. Once done, I'm just going to initiate a deletion of his cloud services. After this dad is finished. Mom, if you're expecting anything in the divorce then keep your expectations down please."

Evelyn laughed, "Baby, I already have everything that I need with me here. From my failed marriage, all I need are my son and daughters."

"Well, that's done now. Sorry, Grandma, I expect dad will call you soon to shout and scream. Tell him the truth that I did it; he hates me already. Anyway, I think we've kept the others waiting long enough. Let's all go have some fun!" Darmon said in a cheerful voice. Darmon left the laptop moving the videos on the dining room table and led his grandmother, aunt and mother to the pool.

As they entered the backyard to the pool, everyone paused the fun they were having to look towards their remaining family arrive. Amber, got out the pool dripping wet and didn't bother with a towel before facing the arrivals, "Everything okay, mom?"

June smiled at her daughter, "Oh, yes. Darmon has located the videos that Edward moved to the cloud and initiated the moving of them as well as the deletion of Edward's cloud account. Darmon also found the money that Edward had stashed away and has transferred that also. Edward's going to be pissed when he finds out he has lost access to the videos and his money."

Mary laughed, "You won't believe me when I tell you what our nephew has planned for that money."

Amber looked puzzled and asked, "What?"

Evelyn spoke up then, "Sis, my son has put the money into an Escrow account and wants to setup a trust fund to help orphans that grew out of care without being adopted. If Edward had managed to follow through with his threat, then Darmon would have been homeless and penniless, so wants to give back to those the care system can no longer support."

June then added, "It's true, darling. Darmon even wants to send directly any personal money that he is fully entitled to towards the trust. He claims that he has everything he needs under this roof and he would be correct in that assumption."

Mary giggled, "Amber, I love you and have always loved you. I also love our family, but what Darmon is trying to do makes me love him even more. I've not seen anybody that has access to our family wealth be selfless with it. Not to flaunt his wealth and spending it on meaningless things but instead he wants to be selfish for those less fortunate."

Amber heard all this and threw herself at her nephew. Darmon had a split second to react and lay his hands on his aunt's ass as she jumped up to wrap her legs around his waist trapping his hard-on between them. Amber kissed her nephew hard and with such passion it left both breathless. After the kiss ended and Darmon helped support his aunt until she got her legs under her. Amber looked into her nephew's eyes, "I'm glad that I'm yours and you're the 'head of the family'. I love you, honey!"

Darmon answered his aunt with a tender kiss and marked her as his before giving her his response, "I love you too, Auntie."

For the next few hours, everyone had fun in the pool and then relaxed on the loungers to sunbathe. Darmon was never alone on his lounge and would spend 15 minutes with a different harem member, just cuddling and being near each other.

Soon, the older harem members all left to prepare dinner and that left Darmon with his sisters. None needed any sexual contact and was just happy being in each other's company.

Edward was pissed that his wife and daughters had gone with his fucking son and had lost the outlet he wanted which was the degrading of his wife and daughters. He was feeling antsy and decided to try and watch one of the recorded videos to jack off too. He tried to login to the cloud service and kept getting password incorrect. He tried to reset the password and was asked a security question, 'What are you?' he tried a few different words but couldn't remember setting up a security question, so tried, 'God', 'Alpha Male' and then got a message that he had one final attempt before this computer would be locked from accessing the cloud service.

Edward tried to use the forgotten password link and got the message unable to change password more than once in any 24 hours period. This confused Edward so went back to the security question

and thought very hard about what he might have setup for this. He tried 'Big Dick' and got the message this computer has been locked out from accessing the cloud service.

Edward panicked thinking that he got hacked somehow and tried his banking app which allowed him access and when he saw the balance of one dollar, screamed and swiped the laptop off his desk to smash against the wall with the screen and casing cracking.

Edward spent the rest of the day trying to figure out what the fuck happened and didn't get any sleep that night.

Darmon got notification that his father had tried to access the cloud service and got locked out; he also accessed his banking app. Darmon chuckled to himself knowing this was going to make his father pissed, but he didn't care.

Darmon got another message but this time it was from Sandy, "Hi Darmon, I know you just got back today with your family and are probably spending time with them, but could you please call me?"

Darmon dialed Sandy's number and she answer immediately and he put the phone into speaker mode but motioned his sisters with a finger against his lips to remain silent, "Hi Sandy, just got your text message. What's up?"

"Thanks for calling me back so quickly. How are you and your family?" Sandy asked.

"Great, I think we're all glad to get back and away from Dad. You, okay? I hope you got some rest after all that happened," Darmon replied.

"Yeah, I managed to get in a nap. I got to say, I love your family. They were all so nice to me. Darmon, can I make a request please?" Sandy asked in a subdued voice that wasn't lost on Darmon and his sisters.

"Sandy, you sure you're, okay? I know that I put you in a stressful situation and if you just need to talk then you can call me whenever," Darmon said with some concern that he couldn't hide in his voice.

"Thanks Darmon, that means the world to me but it's not that, that I asked for you to call me about. It's about booking the next test. Can I ask if you would accompany me for moral support?" Sandy made known the real reason for asking Darmon to call her.

"Of course, I can and will. Have you scheduled an appointment?" Darmon reassured Sandy.

"Yes, I know it's short notice, but I need to get this done quickly and delaying is nearly killing me. It's scheduled for tomorrow at 11 AM. Darmon, if it's negative this time then I'm in the clear," Sandy said with some excitement and dread in her voice.

"Sure, I can make it. Not sure, I will be able to get to you in the morning. Can you get an Uber to ours and I will pay the charge? After that we can take my car, and I will be your support pillar. I'll see you tomorrow unless you just want to chat or if it takes your mind off things we have can have telephone sex?" Darmon chuckled.

"Behave! While the offer is tempting, I don't want to keep you away from your family. Bye Darmon, I'll see you tomorrow morning around 10 AM," Sandy giggled.

"Bye, Sandy!" Darmon said before the call was ended.

Darmon looked at his sisters and saw smirks on each of the faces. It was Marcy that commented, "Little Brother, she's got it bad for you. Don't know what you did but she's in love with you."

Darmon was shocked, "What? How? You got that from the conversation we just had?"

Emily laughed and Natasha giggled, it was Emily that responded to her brother's confused and shocked face, "Darmon, she wouldn't have asked you to accompany her if she didn't trust you and the fact that she asked you says more about her feelings than you realize."

Darmon was still confused, "How the fuck do you come to that conclusion just from that conversation?"

Darmon sisters laughed before Natasha replied, "Men! So clueless when it comes to a women's nature and feelings."

Darmon sighed and muttered, "Women and their secret language just to confuse us men. I give up even trying to understand women."

That set the sibling sisters to laughing hysterically until they had to clutch their sides. They were still chuckling as the call to dinner was made.

After dinner, Darmon made a call to Karl and Tony to have them arrive at 10am so that one of them can accompany Darmon and Sandy to the clinic and the other can stay at home to protect his family.

After the call ended, everyone watched a movie and it was Darmon's aunts that sat either side of him as they knew Darmon had requested them this evening. The movie lasted 1 hour and 40 minutes and was okay. The consensus was that it was predictable and dialog was average at best.

After the movie, Darmon's aunts pulled their nephew up from the couch and said aloud, "Goodnight, everyone."

There was a chorus of 'Goodnight' from everyone as they each went to their own rooms as Darmon's aunts led their nephew to their own bedroom.

After the door was closed behind them, Mary and Amber turned towards their nephew as they embrace and kiss each other with a lot of passion that soon looked like they were trying to eat each other's face. Darmon was already hard and this display made him even harder, "God, I love you so fucking much, Aunties. Do you want to have some fun between yourselves before I make love to you both?"

Amber giggled as she paused the kissing of her sister and look over at her nephew, "Honey, we would love to but only if you're okay with it."

Darmon smirked at his aunts before telling them, "Need I remind you that I've already told you that I will not get in the way of what you already had but only ask that you ask me and include me. I would love to see what my sexy and gorgeous aunts used to do before I became the 'head of the family'."

Mary smiled at her nephew and chuckled, "For that we would need to use our toys but feel they are a poor substitute for the real thing. Let's say with the exception of the doubled headed dildo you are a lot bigger than everything else we have and that dildo has nothing on your girth."

Darmon laughed, "Really? Maybe you can use that dildo now just to show me how you used to have sex before."

Amber then quietly said, "Honey, we spent 2 years mourning the passing of Dad who was the only other cock we ever had. For at least a year and a half of that mourning we had to use toys to scratch that itch inside our pussies. We no longer need our toys with you around now to service our needy pussies with that wonderful cock of yours."

"So, are the toys going to be retired going forward?" Darmon inquired.

Mary answered that question, "Yes, honey. After today the only cock shaped tool to enter us will be yours. We will put these into a box and store them away in the garage cupboard. Honey, we have a request when you do decide to participate, if you will hear it?"

"Sure, if I can grant it then it's yours; although, I can't make you anymore pregnant than you already are," Darmon chuckled.

"Honey, we want you to fuck us this time. We want to experience the raw passion of sex with you instead of the gentle love making that we usually want," Mary made her request.

Darmon paused to consider the request before answering, "Aunt Mary, Aunt Amber, I like to make love to you both and am worried that if I get too rough with you then it could hurt our babies."

Amber looked towards her nephew then back at her sister, "See, sis! I told you he would care for our health and that of our babies." Amber then broke away from her sister's embrace and went over to her nephew, "Honey, we are not asking you to be rough or pound us hard. There is no danger to our babies when you fuck us with a little more passion and nothing wrong if you playfully slap our asses as you fuck us."

Darmon still looked very worried, "Okay, but you will tell me if I'm too rough, right? You and our babies mean more to me than whatever pleasure we may both get from this."

Mary laughed, "Oh honey, that is why we love you so much and you aren't just seeking your own pleasure."

Darmon sighed, "Fine, I'm going to go sit on the dressing table stool and face the bed. Both of you were going to give me a show, I believe."

Mary and Amber both giggled before getting on the bed to face each other. They started with gentle kisses that soon turned to more passionate kisses as they both moaned into each other's mouths and then their tongues soon came out to play with each other's into deep French kissing as they both looked towards their nephew to see his reactions. Darmon's cock was hard and he tried not to touch it for fear he might cum too quickly watching his aunts perform as before he came into their lives.

Darmon was witness to his aunts make love to each other as they kissed, licked and sucked on each other's nipples. Darmon was witness to the loving kisses to excite their partner as he was taught to do before they each took turns licking each other's pussies. Darmon also witnessed his aunts rubbing their hard clits against each other as they scissored. After both of his aunts had climaxed several times, they broke apart. Panting, they looked over at their nephew. "Honey, thank you for being patient with us as we showed you how we made love to each other and mom before you graced our lives. It's time to show you how we used this double headed dildo between us, sisters and Mom," Mary told her nephew.

Darmon was leaking precum from the tip of his cock and it was trailing down his shaft. He maintained his will power to not take his cock in hand and wank himself off to orgasm. Darmon watched as Amber picked up the dildo and each woman took one end into their mouth to coat the head and shaft in their saliva before getting on their knees with each facing away from the other so that their butts were turned towards their sister. Darmon watched as the double ended dildo was then turn around so that the end that was in each of their mouths was pushed against the vagina of her sister.

Darmon moaned as both of his aunts pushed back so that the dildo entered each of them until their butts collided together in the sharp slap of flesh on flesh. Mary and Amber moaned in delight as they waited 30 seconds to adjust to the size of the dildo and to remember the times this dildo serviced them and their mother. Soon both of the women started to pull and push their butts together. Each time they pulled apart Darmon could see the slick coated dildo gleam in each of his Aunts pussy juices. Darmon was groaning and moaning as he watched them fuck each other with the dildo.

Darmon was witness to both of his Aunts climax together two times before they pulled apart as Mary held the dildo as each of them let the dildo leave their pussies. Mary then turned the dildo around so that the side that was in her was pointing towards her sister and her side towards her before both opened their mouths to suck clean the dildo of her sister's cum.

Darmon had enough of watching and got up and threw himself towards the bed and took his Aunt Mary by the waist to spin her towards him. Mary squealed in surprise and giggled in delight as her man decided to participate and did wonder why it took him so long to join them. She loved her nephew as she thought it was to give them time to enjoy each other as they did before he became the central point of their family lives.

Darmon in lust drove his cock deep and hard into his Aunt's pussy until his thighs slapped against her butt. Darmon started to fuck her hard and deep as he commented, "My sexy beautiful Aunts, that was so fucking hot. Thank you for showing me this side of you both and know that I've loved watching you both and love you both."

Darmon, as he pounded his aunt ordered his other Aunt, "Aunt Amber, please could you lay before your sister, so that I can see her eat your pussy whilst I pound and cum deep into your sister but be prepared as you're next." Amber didn't need to be told twice and soon had her sisters head in-between her spread legs as she watched her nephew fuck her sister and shouted, "YEAH, FUCKING POUND THE SHIT OUT OF MY SISTER, YOUR AUNT."

Darmon spotted the discarded double headed dildo and picked it up before lifting one end up to his nose and smelt the faint smell of one of his aunt's pussies. Darmon continued to fuck his aunt as he spat on the end of the dildo and coated the head and shaft with his saliva before pushing the end against his aunt's rosebud.

Mary screamed and had an orgasm as the head of the dildo penetrated her bowels. "FUCK ME! I'VE NEVER BEEN DP'ED BEFORE. FUCK ME, HONEY. I FUCKING LOVE YOU! " Mary shouted as this was the closest, she was ever going to get to a real DP as the only cock she will ever allow near her was her nephew's. Amber chuckled as her sister was literally getting the shit pounding her sister needed.

"OH TRUST ME, IF SHE WANTS TO BE TREATED THIS TIME AS A SLUT THEN I WILL FUCK HER HARD," Darmon shouted as he slapped his aunts right butt cheek as he pushed the dildo in deep, which caused his aunt to squeeze his cock with her cunt. Darmon liked the feeling and proceeded to slap each of this aunts butt cheeks until both were red his aunt had one of the most powerful orgasms she had ever experienced. This caused her cunt to clamp down hard on her nephew's cock which at that time decided to explode flooding her with his hot cum. Amber who was getting eaten by her sister also climaxed hard after she saw the pained look in her nephew's face and felt the vibration of her sister's scream against her pussy.

Amber let out a scream of joy that was joined into by her sister as she pulled away from her sister's pussy. Darmon lay locked with his aunt for several minutes as everyone tried to catch their breath. Darmon slowly pulled himself and the dildo out of Mary and as soon as he did this Amber quickly moved behind her sister and locked her lips around her sister's vagina to lick and suck their combined cum into her mouth. Mary pulled Darmon by the hand to move so that his cock was before her face as she licked and sucked his cock clean. Darmon didn't go soft as he knew he had to service his other aunt also.

Darmon fucked his Aunt Amber almost the same way as he had fucked Aunt Mary, only this time Mary was beneath the pair fucking and had a clear view of the action. Darmon would slap Amber's

ass as he had done with Mary but this time he also leaned over and squeezed both of his aunts' breasts hard and pulling hard on their nipples. Both of his aunts would then lean up or down to lick and suck on her sister's clit. Mary and Amber's wail and scream weren't muffled by a pussy this time as they climaxed almost in sync.

June and Evelyn smiled as they knew Darmon was going to be service them tomorrow night as they heard the screams of Mary and Amber whilst fingering their pussies. Darmon's sisters were panting and had pillows over their faces to muffle their own screams as they climaxed listening to their brother and aunts.

Darmon slowly pulled himself and the dildo out of Amber with Mary ready to stop her nephew's cum from leaking out of her sister's pussy. Amber also moved her nephew towards her front so that she could clean his cock. Then, they all lay back on the bed with Darmon in between his aunts. It was Mary that spoke up first, "Thanks, Honey, for doing that although you could have been a little bit more forceful. We could've taken a lot more."

Darmon looked towards his Aunt Mary and put his hand on her cheek before tenderly kissing her, "Sorry, Aunt Mary. I just didn't want to hurt you and our baby. Truth be told, I don't mind doing this with you every-so-often but it's not my thing. I don't like to inflict pain or be too rough on those that I love."

Amber giggled, "We know, honey. You doing this for us and not taking it too far was just another way for us to see the man you are. We love you and hope that you can indulge us sometimes. We loved making love to you and sometimes want to get fucked as Dad would sometimes do with us."

Mary then added, "We know you're not Dad and we know that you have your own way of making every one of us happy. We understand why you don't want to use any force against us as you would think that you were no better than your father. We just hope that you know that we would never think you are anything like Edward."

Darmon sighed, "I'll try to do that every-so-often for both of you as it's something that you would like, but please don't demand it every time we have sex as I don't think my heart or mind could take it if I started to enjoy it too much and I only then took my own pleasure from it."

Amber then pulled her nephew's head towards her and looked at him and in a serious tone of voice answered her nephew, "Honey, we know you well enough to know you will never turn into your father. Do you think our mother's will allow that to happen?!" The last part was more of a statement than a question. Amber rolled onto her nephew and molded her naked body against his before they kissed in a deep French kiss.

Soon Darmon and his aunts fell into a deep sleep with his aunts either side of him resting their heads on one of his shoulders.

The next morning, Darmon and his aunts made love in bed and he seeded both of them and then made love to them again in the shower. After returning to his room, he got changed and ready for Sandy to arrive.

Just before 10am, Darmon stepped out to get his car out and ready. He pulled out of the garage and was out of his car as he noticed that Karl and Tony had arrived and were waiting on Darmon to let them know of the plan. Before Darmon could make his way to the security team, an Uber turned up to let out Sandy as she rushed towards him to melt into his arms. Darmon had to wonder again what he did to make Sandy act this way but once again put that to the back of his mind as he embraced Sandy. "Hey Sandy. How are you this morning?" Darmon asked as he lead her towards his car, so that she could be seated before he gave orders to Karl and Tony.

Just as Darmon opened the door to let Sandy into his car another car came screeching to a halt outside his house and a man exited pointing a gun towards Sandy and Darmon. Darmon saw the gunman and moved to put himself between Sandy and the gunman. Two shots shattered the silence with Darmon collapsing to the floor.

To be continued...

This concluded chapter 14 of this series. I know you all hate endings like this to chapters but how else am I to keep you all hooked on the story otherwise?

In chapter 15, the shooter will be revealed (no prizes for guessing tho) and the aftermath of the shooting.